



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

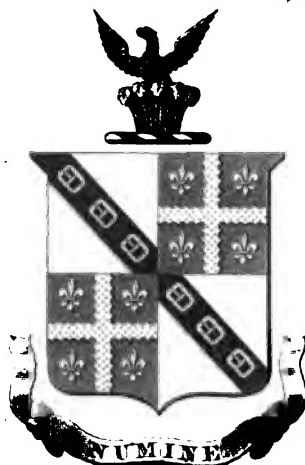
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Ms. 235.19.3



*Richd. M. Bayard*

Ms. 235.19.3



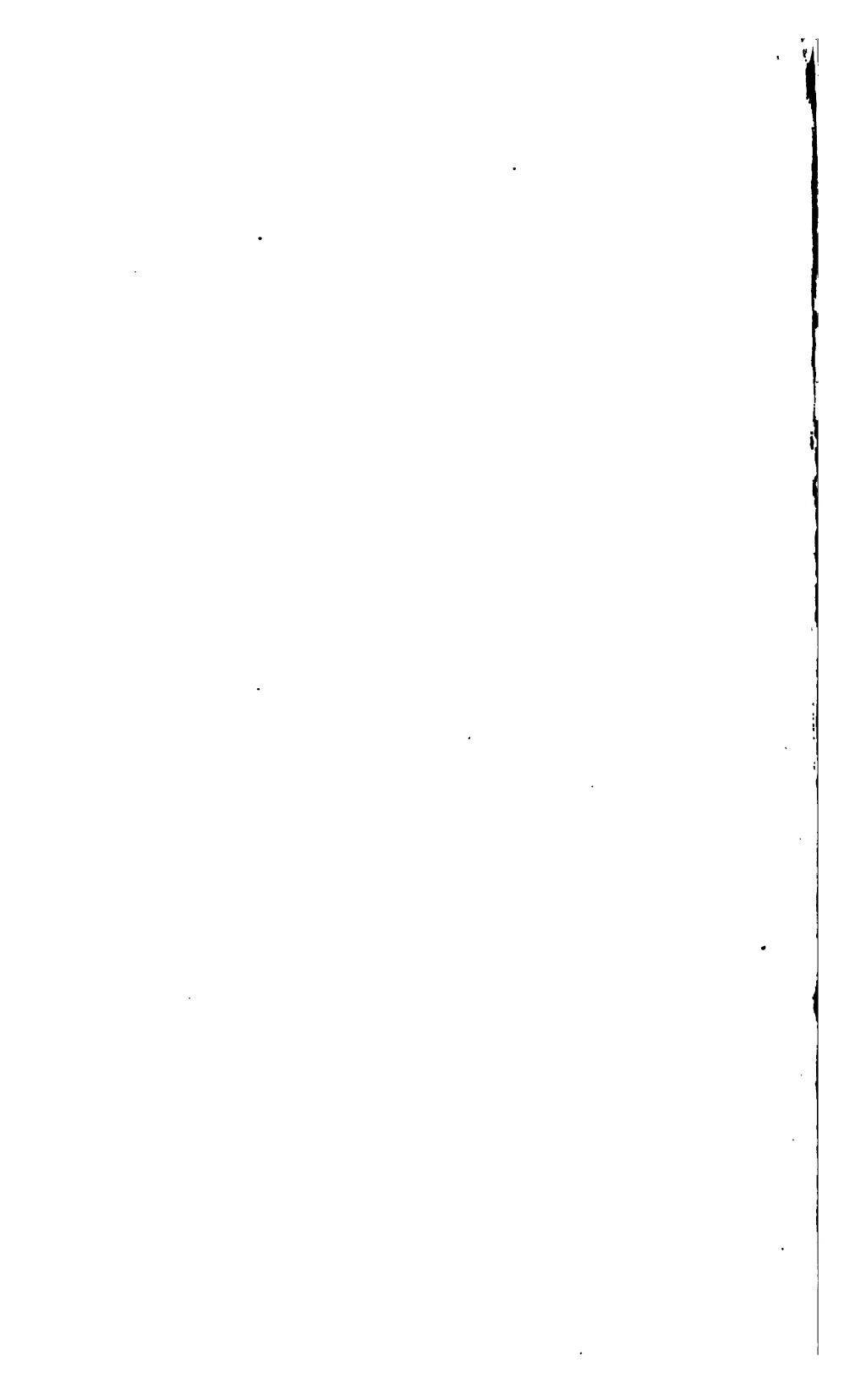
*Richard*















I



*Hamilton Delin.*

*Pige Sculp.*

**NEPTUNE resigning the REINS of his CHARIOT to BRITANNIA.**

*Lond. Jan. 1<sup>st</sup> 1779. Published as the Act directs. by A. DODDING St. Pauls Churchyard.*

*Robafett*  
**L I V E S**  
OF THE  
**BRITISH ADMIRALS:**  
CONTAINING A NEW AND ACCURATE  
**NAVAL HISTORY,**

FROM THE EARLIEST PERIODS.

BY DR. *John* CAMPBELL.

WITH A CONTINUATION DOWN TO THE YEAR 1779,

INCLUDING THE

NAVAL TRANSACTIONS OF THE LATE WAR, AND AN  
ACCOUNT OF THE RECENT DISCOVERIES IN THE  
SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE.

WRITTEN UNDER THE INSPECTION OF

*John*  
DOCTOR BERKENHOUT.

THE WHOLE ILLUSTRATED WITH CORRECT MAPS; AND  
FRONTISPIECES ENGRAVED FROM ORIGINAL DESIGNS.

---

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

---

V O L. IV.

---

L O N D O N:

PRINTED FOR G. G. J. AND J. ROBINSON,  
PATERNOSTER ROW.

M.DCC.LXXXIV.

Bv 235, 19.3

135  
4-4

Harvard College Library  
Bowie Collection  
Gift of  
Mrs. E. D. Brandegee  
Nov. 9, 1908.

BOUND DEC 9 1910



---

---

T H E  
L I F E  
O F

D R. C A M P B E L L \*.

**D**R. JOHN CAMPBELL, an eminent historical, biographical, and political writer of the present century, was a native of that part of Great Britain called Scotland, and born in the city of Edinburgh, on the 8th of March, 1707-8. His father was Robert Campbell of Glenlyon, Esq; and captain of horse in a regiment commanded by the then earl of Hyndford; and his mother, Elizabeth, was the daughter of ——— Smith, Esq; of Windsor, in Berkshire†. Our author was their fourth son; and, at the age of five years, he was brought by Mrs. Campbell to Windsor, from Scotland, which

\* This life is extracted from the new edition of the BIOGRAPHIA BRITANICA, written by DR. KIPPIS, DR. TOWERS, &c.

† The Campbells of Glenlyon are a branch of the noble house of Breadalbane, of which a distinct account may be seen in Nisbet's and Douglas's Peerages. For information concerning the respectable family of the Smiths of Windsor, recourse may be had to Ashmole's Antiquities of Berkshire, and to N<sup>o</sup>. 5800, a book of Heraldry, in folio, in the British Museum. Mrs. Campbell likewise, and consequently our author, had the honour of claiming a descent from the famous poet, Weller.

country he never saw afterwards. It was at Windfor that he is supposed to have received the first principles of his education, under the direction and patronage of his uncle, ——— Smith, Esq; of that place. At a proper age, he was placed out as a clerk to an attorney, being intended for the law; but whether it was that his genius could not be confined to that dry study, or to whatever causes besides it might be owing, it is certain that he did not pursue the line of his original designation: neither did he engage in any other particular profession, unless that of an author should be considered in this light. One thing we are sure of, that he did not spend his time in idleness and dissipation, but in such a close application to the acquisition of knowledge of various kinds, as soon enabled him to appear with great advantage in the literary world. What smaller pieces might be written by Mr. Campbell, in the early part of his life, we are not capable of ascertaining; but we know that, in 1736, before he had completed his thirtieth year, he gave to the public, in two volumes folio, “The Military History of Prince Eugene and the Duke of Marlborough; comprehending the History of both those illustrious persons, to the time of their decease.” This performance was enriched with maps, plans, and cuts, by the best hands, and particularly by the ingenious Claude du Bosc. The reputation hence acquired by our author, occasioned him soon after to be solicited to take a part in the “Ancient Universal History,” a work of great merit, as well as magnitude, though drawn up with something of that inequality which is almost unavoidable, when a number of persons are engaged in carrying on the same undertaking. This history was published at first, we believe, periodically; and five volumes of it, in folio, were completed in 1740. The sixth volume was finished in 1742, and the seventh in 1744. A second edition of it, in octavo, began to be published in 1747, and was carried on monthly, with uncommon success, till the whole was concluded in twenty volumes. For what parts of it the Republic of Letters was more immediately indebted to Mr. Campbell, it is not in our power to determine, excepting that he is understood to have been the writer of the Cosmogony, which affords a distinguished proof of his extensive acquaintance with the systems of the ancient philosophers. Whilst our author was employed

employed in this capital work, he found leisure to entertain the world with other productions. In 1739, he published "The Travels and Adventures of Edward Brown, Esq;" a book that was so well received as to call for another edition. In the same year appeared his "Memoirs of the Bashaw Duke de Riporda," which were reprinted with improvements, in 1740. These Memoirs were followed, in 1741, by the "Concise History of Spanish America," a second edition of which, if we recollect aright, came out in 1756. In 1742, he was the author of "A Letter to a Friend in the country, on the publication of Thurloe's State Papers;" giving an account of their discovery, importance, and utility. The same year was distinguished by the appearance of the first and second volumes of his "Lives of the English Admirals, and other eminent British Seamen." The two remaining volumes were completed in 1744; and the whole, not long after, was translated into German. This, we believe, was the first of Mr. Campbell's works to which he prefixed his name; and, indeed, he had no reason to be ashamed of so doing, for it is a performance of great and acknowledged merit. The good reception it met with, was evidenced in its passing through three editions in his own life-time; and two more, besides the present one, have lately been given to the public, under the inspection of Dr. Berkenhout. When our author had finished the third edition, which is more correct and complete than the former ones, he thus wrote to his ingenious and worthy friend, the Rev. Mr. Hall: "I am certain the Lives of the Admirals cost me a great deal of trouble; and I can with great veracity affirm, that they contain nothing but my real sentiments, arising from as strict an inquiry into the matters which they relate, as was in my power." In 1743, he published a very curious and entertaining pamphlet, called "Hermippus Revived;" a second edition of which, much improved and enlarged, came out in 1749, under the following title: "Hermippus Redivivus: or, the Sage's Triumph over Old Age and the Grave. Wherein a method is laid down for prolonging the life and vigour of man. Including a commentary upon an ancient inscription, in which this great secret is revealed; supported by numerous authorities. The whole interspersed with a great variety of remarkable and well-attested

relations." This extraordinary tract had its origin in a foreign publication\*; but it was wrought up to perfection by the additional ingenuity and learning of Mr. Campbell, and was founded on the following inscription, said to be preserved in Reinesius's Supplement to Gruter:

ÆSCULAPIO ET SANITATI  
L. CLODIUS HERMIPPUS  
QUI VIXIT ANNOS CXV. DIES V.  
PUELLARUM ANHELITU,  
QUOD ETIAM POST MORTEM  
EJUS

NON PARUM MIRANTUR PHYSICI.  
JAM POSTERI SIC VITAM DUCITE.

From the circumstance here mentioned, which is represented as having been the means of prolonging the life of Hermippus to so great an age, the author raises an hypothesis, and supports it in an admirable strain of grave irony, concerning the salutary nature of the breath of young persons, especially girls and young women. Besides this, he digresses largely concerning the hermetic philosophers and their universal medicine; and relates a variety of stories concerning them, which are excellently calculated, not only to amuse his readers, but almost to deceive those who are not sufficiently aware of his intention, and whose judgments are not matured. The writer of this article well remembers, that, having read the "*Hermippus Redivivus*," in his youth, such an impression was made by it upon his imagination, that, though his understanding was not convinced, or his belief engaged, by the reasonings and facts contained in it, he seemed for two or three days to be in a kind of Fairy-land. Dr. Mackenzie, a physician at Worcester, and

\* This publication appeared at Coblenz, in the beginning of the year 1743, and was entitled *HERMIPPUS REDIVIVUS, sive exercitatio physico medica curiosa, de metodo rara ad CXV. annos propaganda, senectutis per anhelitum puellarum, ex veteri monumento Romano, de prompta, nunc artis medicae fundamentis stabilita, & rationibus atque exemplis, necnon singulari chymia philosophica paradoxo illustrata & confirmata. Autore Jo. Hen. Cohausen, M. D. I. c.* *HERMIPPUS REVIVED, or a curious Physico-medical Dissertation on an uncommon method of prolonging human life to one hundred and fifteen years, by means of the breath of young women, copied from an ancient Roman monument, now established on a physical basis, by arguments and examples, and illustrated and confirmed by a very singular paradox in chymical philosophy.* By Dr. Cohausen of Coblenz.

author of a Treatise on Health, is said to have viewed Mr. Campbell's book in a serious light; and to have been so far influenced by it, that he went and lived some time at a female boarding-school, for the benefit of receiving the salutary effects arising from the breath of the young ladies. Mr. Thicknesse, in a late performance, hath gravely adopted the system of the "*Hermippus Redivivus*." It had been asserted, that Mons. Bayle alone possessed the faculty of treating at large upon a difficult subject, without discovering to which side his own sentiments leaned, and that his acquaintance with uncommon books extended farther than that of any other man. The *Hermippus* was an essay to shew, that such a mode of writing, and such a species of literature were not confined to Mons. Bayle. This, as our author himself long afterwards informed Mr. Hall, was the true key to the book. In 1756, a translation of it into Italian was published at Leghorn: in the introductory preface to which, high commendations are bestowed upon the *Hermippus Redivivus*.

The smaller pieces written by Mr. Campbell were only an occasional amusement to him, and never interrupted the course of the great works in which he was engaged. In 1744, he gave to the public, in two volumes, folio, his *Voyages and Travels*, on Dr. Harris's plan, being a very distinguished improvement of that gentleman's collection, which had appeared in 1705. So well was this publication of our author received, that a new edition was soon called for, which came out in numbers, and was finished in 1749. The work contains all the circumnavigators from the time of Columbus to Lord Anson; a complete history of the East Indies; historical details of the several attempts made for the discovery of the north-east and north-west passages; the Commercial History of Corea and Japan; the Russian discoveries by land and sea; a distinct account of the Spanish, Portuguese, British, French, Dutch, and Danish settlements in America; with other pieces not to be found in any former collection. The whole was conducted with eminent skill and judgment, and the preface is acknowledged to be a master-piece of composition and information. The time and care employed by Mr. Campbell in this important undertaking, did not prevent his engaging in another great work, with regard

to which we have reason to record his learned labours with particular pleasure. The work we mean is the "Biographia Britannica," which began to be published in weekly numbers in 1745, and the first volume of which was completed in 1746, as was the second in 1748. By one of those revolutions to which the best designs are subject, the public attention to the *Biographia* seemed to flag, when about two volumes had been printed; but this attention was soon revived by the very high encomium that was passed upon it by Mr. Gilbert West, at the close of his poem on Education; from which time the undertaking was carried on with increasing reputation and success. We need not say, that its reputation and success were greatly owing to our author. It is no disparagement to the abilities and learning of his coadjutors to assert, that his articles constitute the prime merit of the four volumes through which they extend. He was not satisfied with giving a cold narration of the personal circumstances relative to the eminent men whose lives he drew up, but was ambitious of entering into such a copious and critical discussion of their actions or writings, as should render the *Biographia Britannica* a most valuable repository of historical and literary knowledge. This end he has admirably accomplished, and herein hath left an excellent example to his successors. We have formerly mentioned, that he received the thanks of John, the fifth Earl of Orrery, "in the name of all the Boyles, for the honour he had done to them, and to his own judgment, by placing the family in such a light as to give a spirit of emulation to those who were hereafter to inherit the title." The ingenious Mr. Walpole, speaking of the Campbells, Earls of Argyle, adds, "It is totally unnecessary for me to enter into their characters, that task having been so fully performed by one who wears the honour of their name, and who, it is no compliment to say, is one of the ablest and most beautiful writers of this country." The like encomium might be extended to many other articles, several of which are so uniformly complete, and so highly finished, that it is difficult to ascertain where the preference ought to be given. Were we, however, to select any single life from the rest, we should say, that the account of Roger Bacon alone would be sufficient to procure for our author no small degree of reputation. One thing

thing by which he is peculiarly distinguished, is the candour displayed by him with respect to those persons from whom he most differed in religious and political opinions. After he had written the *Lives of the Calamys*, he was waited upon by the Reverend Mr. Edmund Calamy, to thank him for those articles, and especially for the justice done to his great-grandfather, the first divine of that family. Mr. Calamy was even surprised to find that Mr. Campbell was a member of the church of England; and still more so, when he learned that our biographer had undertaken the articles of Mr. Baxter and Dr. Conant, on purpose to prevent their falling into hands that might not equally be disposed to pay the testimony due to their respective merits. Indeed, our author has been charged with an excess of candour, in some of the accounts given in the *Biographia*. But if, in a few instances, there should appear to be any ground for this charge, it ought to be remembered, that his error never proceeded from any intention to flatter or deceive, but from the amiable benevolence of his heart, and from his readiness to discern, and to acknowledge, the talents and the worthiness of men who were of the most opposite principles and parties. It ought, also, to be remembered, that his candour was not unfrequently the result of superior knowledge; and that it led him into disquisitions, which tended to throw new light on characters and actions.

When the late Mr. Robert Doddsley formed the design of that useful book, "*The Preceptor*," which appeared in 1748, Mr. Campbell was one of the ingenious gentlemen applied to, to assist in the undertaking; and the parts written by him were the introduction to chronology, and the discourse on trade and commerce, both of which displayed an extensive fund of knowledge upon these subjects. In 1750, he published the first separate edition of his "*Present State of Europe*;" a work which had been originally begun in 1746, in the "*Museum*," a very valuable periodical performance, printed for Mr. Doddsley. There is no production of our author's that hath met with a better reception. It has gone through six editions, and fully hath it deserved this encouragement; for it is not easy to find a book which, in such a moderate compass, contains so much historical and political information. The perspicuity, the good sense,  
and

and the sagacity with which it is written, will ever command attention and admiration, even though some of Mr. Campbell's conjectures and reasonings concerning the future views and interests of the European powers, should happen to be overturned by the late surprising revolutions in the politics of the world. In such high estimation was "The Present State of Europe" held abroad, that the Count de Gisors, one of the most amiable young noblemen of his time, and only son to the Marshal Duke de Belleisle, learned English, when at Copenhagen, in order to be able to read it. The next great undertaking which called for the exertion of our author's abilities and learning, was "The Modern Universal History." This extensive work was published, from time to time, in detached parts, till it amounted to sixteen volumes folio; and a second edition of it, in octavo, began to make its appearance in 1759. The parts of it written by Mr. Campbell, were the histories of the Portuguese, Dutch, Spanish, French, Swedish, Danish, and Ostend settlements in the East Indies; and the histories of the kingdoms of Spain, Portugal, Algarve, Navarre, and that of France from Clovis to the year 1656. It may, without controversy, be asserted, that these parts of "The Modern Universal History," must be reckoned among some of its brightest ornaments. As our author had thus distinguished himself in the literary world, the degree of LL. D. was very properly and honourably conferred upon him, on the 18th of June, 1754, by the University of Glasgow. With regard to his smaller publications, there are several, we apprehend, that have eluded our most diligent inquiry. The following is an account of all that have come to our knowledge:

In early life, he wrote a little piece, intitled, "A Discourse on Providence," 8vo. the third edition of which was printed in 1748. He published in 1746, "The Sentiments of a Dutch Patriot. Being the speech of Mr. V. H\*\*\*n, in an august ASSEMBLY on the present state of affairs, and the resolution necessary at this juncture to be taken for the safety of the Republic." The history of this tract, the design of which was to expose the temporizing policy of the States of Holland, is somewhat amusing. His amanuensis, when he was going to write the pamphlet, having disappointed him, he requested, after tea  
in



in the afternoon, that Mrs. Campbell, when she had ordered a good fire to be made, would retire to bed as soon as possible, with the servants; and, at the same time, leave him four ounces of coffee. This was done, and he wrote till twelve o'clock at night, when finding his spirits flag, he took two ounces. With this assistance, he went on till six in the morning, when again beginning to grow weary, he drank the remainder of the coffee. Hence he was enabled to proceed with fresh vigour, till nine or ten o'clock in the morning, when he finished the pamphlet, which had a great run, and was productive of considerable profit. Mr. Campbell having succeeded so well in a performance hastily written, expected much greater success from another work, about which he had taken extraordinary pains, and which had cost him a long time in composing. But when it came to be published, it scarcely paid the expence of advertising. Some years afterwards, a book in French was brought to him, that had been translated from the German; and he was asked, whether a translation of it into English would not be likely to be acceptable. Upon examining it, he found that it was his own neglected work, which had made its way into Germany, and had there been translated and published, without any acknowledgment of the obligation due to the original writer.

In 1749, he printed, in octavo, "Occasional Thoughts on moral, serious, and religious Subjects." In 1754, he was the author of a work, intitled, "The Rational Amusement, comprehending a collection of letters on a great variety of subjects, interspersed with essays, and some little pieces of humour." "The Shepherd of Banbury's Rules," a favourite pamphlet with the common people, and "The history of the war in the East Indies," which appeared in 1758 or 1759, under the name of Mr. Watts, are supposed to have been of Mr. Campbell's composition. Upon the conclusion of the peace at Paris, our author was requested by Lord Bute, to take some share in the vindication of that peace. Accordingly, he wrote a "Description and History of the new Sugar Islands in the West Indies;" the design of which was to shew the value and importance of the neutral islands that had been ceded to us by the French. As his book was to be presented to the King, he was

desired to write a dedication to his Majesty; which he wished to decline, because he had hitherto avoided all political disputes, and because his earlier attachments and sentiments had not led him to pay his devoirs to the Court of St. James's. However, it was at length determined, that he should present the dedication in manuscript. The following is a copy of it :

To the King's most sacred Majesty,

This little WORK,

Undertaken by his Royal Commands,  
and honoured by his gracious Approbation,  
is humbly inscribed by

His Majesty's most dutiful Subject,  
and obliged Servant.

THAT PEACE,

Which your Majesty's Goodness and Wisdom

have given to this Nation,

is here shewn to be adequate

to the restoring her exhausted Wealth,

to the extension of her Commerce,

through dominions she hath power to keep,

and is inadequate only

in the eye of

FACTION.

In 1772, he printed, in 4to, "A Treatise upon the Trade of Great Britain to America."

His last grand work was "A Political Survey of Britain; being a series of reflections on the situation, lands, inhabitants, revenues, colonies, and commerce of this island. Intended to shew, that they have not as yet approached near the summit of improvement, but that it will afford employment to many generations, before they push to their utmost extent the natural advantages of Great Britain." This work, which was published in 1774, in two volumes, royal quarto, cost Dr. Campbell many years of attention, study and labour. As it was his last, so it seems to have been his favourite production, upon which he intended to erect a durable monument of his sincere and ardent love to his country. A more truly patriotic publication never appeared in the English language. The variety of information it contains is prodigious; and there is no book that better de-  
serves

serves the close and constant study of the politician, the senator, the gentleman, the merchant, the manufacturer; in short, of every one who has it in any degree in his power to promote the interest and welfare of Great Britain. An assiduous pursuit of the numerous hints and plans of improvement suggested by our worthy author, would, perhaps, be the only effectual method of preserving and continuing the prosperity of this island, amidst that combination of enemies and misfortunes, with which she is at present surrounded. As the "Political Survey" is so excellent both in its design and execution, it is not surprising that Dr. Campbell should receive the highest testimonies in commendation of it, and that it should engage him in a very extensive correspondence. The correspondence occasioned by it was, indeed, so great, that in a letter to Mr. Hall, dated July 21, 1774, he informed his friend, that it had absorbed a ream of paper; and that he was about to begin upon another ream, which would probably share the same fate.

In the account which has been given of Dr. Campbell's writings, we have mentioned some of the encomiums that have been passed upon his literary merit. Several others might be added; but we shall content ourselves with producing one or two, that happen to be at hand. Dr. Smoller, when doing justice to the eminent writers who adorned the reign of King George the Second, says, "Nor let us forget the merit conspicuous in the works of Campbell, remarkable for candour, intelligence, and precision." The author of the "Account of the European Settlements in America," which common fame ascribes to a gentleman of the most distinguished abilities and character, concludes his preface with the following passage: "Having spoken perhaps a little too hardly of my materials, I must except the assistance I have had from the judicious collection called Harris's Voyages. There are not many finer pieces than the History of Brazil in that collection. The light in which the author sets the events in that history is fine and instructive; an uncommon spirit prevails through it; and his remarks are every where striking and deep. The little sketch I have given in the part of Portuguese America, if it has any merit, is entirely due to that original.—Where I differ from him in any respect, it is with deference to the judgment of a

writer, to whom this nation is much obliged, for endeavouring every where, with so much good sense and eloquence, to rouse that spirit of generous enterprize, that can alone make any nation powerful or glorious." Dr. Campbell's reputation was not confined to his own country, but extended to the remotest parts of Europe. As a striking instance of this, we may mention, that in the spring of the year 1774, the Empress of Russia was pleased to honour him with the present of her picture, drawn in the robes worn in that country in the days of John Basilowitz, Grand Duke of Muscovy, who was contemporary with Queen Elizabeth. To manifest the Doctor's sense of her Imperial Majesty's goodness, a set of the "Political Survey of Britain," bound in Morocco, highly ornamented and accompanied with a letter descriptive of the triumphs and felicities of her reign, was forwarded to St. Petersburg, and conveyed into the hands of that great Princess, by Prince Gregorio Orloff, who had resided some months in this kingdom. The Empress's picture, since the death of our author, hath been presented by his widow to Lord Macartney.

Let us now advert a little to Dr. Campbell's personal history. On the 23d of May, 1736, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin Vobe, of Leominster, in the county of Hereford, gentleman, with which Lady he lived near forty years in the greatest conjugal harmony and happiness. So wholly did he dedicate his time to books, that he seldom went abroad: but to relieve himself, as much as possible, from the inconveniencies incident to a sedentary life, it was his custom, when the weather would admit, to walk in his garden; or, otherwise, in some room of his house, by way of exercise. By this method, united with the strictest temperance in eating, and an equal abstemiousness in drinking, he enjoyed a good state of health, though his constitution was delicate. His domestic manner of living did not preclude him from a very extensive and honourable acquaintance. His house, especially on a Sunday evening, was the resort of the most distinguished persons of all ranks, and particularly of such as had rendered themselves eminent by their knowledge, or love of literature. He received foreigners, who were fond of learning, with an affability and kindness, which excited in them the highest respect and veneration; and his  
instructive

instructive and chearful conversation, made him the delight of his friends in general. On the 5th of March, 1765, Dr. Campbell was appointed his Majesty's agent for the province of Georgia, in North America, which employment he held till his decease. His last illness was a decline, the consequence of a life devoted to severe study, and which resisted every attempt for his relief that the most skilful in the medical science could devise. By this illness he was carried off, at his house in Queen-Square, Ormond-Street, on the 28th of December, 1775, when he had nearly completed the sixty-eighth year of his age. His end was tranquil and easy, and he preserved the full use of all his faculties to the latest moment of his life. On the 4th of January following his decease, he was interred in the New Burying Ground, behind the Foundling Hospital, belonging to the parish of St. George the Martyr, where a monument, with a plain and modest inscription, hath been erected to his memory. Dr. Campbell had by his Lady seven children, one of whom only survived him, Anne, who, on the 22d of August, 1763, married John Grant, Esq; of Lovat, near Inverness, in North Britain, then Captain in the fifty-eighth regiment of foot, and lately his Majesty's Commissary and Paymaster of the Royal artillery at New York. Mrs. Grant, who was a woman of excellent understanding and taste, which had been cultivated under her father's eye, and who was possessed of the most amiable virtues, died at New York, on the 2d of July, 1778, in the thirty-seventh year of her age. Mr. Grant returning some time after to England, departed this life at Kensington, in the month of November 1780. Three children, left by Mr. and Mrs. Grant, are now under the care of their worthy grandmother, the Doctor's widow, and are her only remaining consolation.

Dr. Campbell's literary knowledge, was by no means confined to the subjects on which he more particularly treated as an author. He was well acquainted with the mathematics, and had read much in medicine. It hath been with great reason believed, that if he had dedicated his studies to the last science, he would have made a very conspicuous figure in the physical profession. He was eminently versed in the different parts of sacred literature; and his acquaintance with the languages extended not only to the Hebrew, Greek, and Latin among the ancient, and

to the French, Italian, Spanish, Portuguese, and Dutch, among the modern; but, likewise, to the Oriental tongues. He was particularly fond of the Greek language. His attainment of such a variety of knowledge, was exceedingly assisted by a memory surprisingly retentive, and which, indeed, astonished every person with whom he was conversant. A striking instance of this hath been given by the honourable Mr. Daines Barrington, in his tract, intitled, "The Probability of reaching the North Pole discussed\*." In communicating his ideas, our author had an uncommon readiness and facility; and the style of his works, which had been formed upon the model of that of the celebrated Bishop Sprat, was perspicuous, easy, flowing, and harmonious. Should it be thought that it is sometimes rather too diffusive, it will, notwithstanding, indubitably be allowed, that it is, in general, very elegant and beautiful.

To all these accomplishments of the understanding, Dr. Campbell joined the more important virtues of a moral and pious character. His disposition was gentle and humane, and his manners kind and obliging. He was the tenderest of husbands, a most indulgent parent, a kind master, a firm and sincere friend. To his great Creator he paid the constant and ardent tribute of devotion, duty, and reverence; and in his correspondences he shewed, that a sense of piety was always nearest his heart. "We cannot," said he, in a letter to Mr. Hall, "too much insist on the necessity of religion, not only as securing our happiness hereafter, but as the only safe and certain rule of life, and ten thousand times preferable to the modern notions of philosophy, and ties of honour. I may with great truth say, that the Church Catechism is a much better system of morals than Tully's Offices. There are many fine things in these, and in the works of Seneca; but, in my judgment, none that equal, either in spirit or composition, some of the Collects in our Liturgy." On another occasion, he wrote to

\* The instance mentioned by Mr. Barrington, regards the accuracy wherewith Dr. Campbell, at the distance of thirty years, remembered the facts related to him by a Dr. Daillie, concerning a voyage towards the North Pole; in which the navigators, among whom was Dr. Daillie himself, went so far as to the 88th degree of north latitude; and might easily have proceeded farther, had not the captain thought himself obliged, by his duty in other respects, to return.

the same friend, that he thought there was more good sense, and far better precepts for the conduct of life, in the Wisdom of Solomon, and the son of Sirach, than in all the Heathen Sages put together ; or than could be met with in Lord Bolingbroke, Mr. Hume, or Voltaire, It was our author's custom every day, to read one or more portions of Scripture, in the original, with the ancient versions, and the best commentators before him ; and in this way, as appears from his own occasional notes and remarks, he went through the Sacred Writings a number of times, with great thankfulness and advantage.

Such was Dr. Campbell as a writer and as a man. By his works he has secured not only a lasting reputation, but rendered himself highly beneficial to the public ; and by his virtues, he became prepared for that happy immortality, which awaits all the genuine followers of goodness.

## CONTENTS.





# C O N T E N T S

OF

## VOLUME FOURTH.

### C H A P XXIII.

*THE Naval History of Great Britain from the accession of King George II. to the end of the war in 1763.*

<i>Capitulation of Porto-Bello,</i>	Page 9
<i>Unfortunate expedition against Carthage,</i>	17
<i>Engagement between the British fleet commanded by Mathews and Lestock, and the French and Spanish fleets,</i>	47
<i>Reflections on the conduct of Mathews and Lestock,</i>	49
<i>Taking of Louisburg,</i>	54
<i>Capture of Jonquierre's fleet,</i>	63
<i>Defeat of the Brest fleet by Admiral Hawke,</i>	66
<i>Engagement between the British fleet under Knowles and the Spanish fleet in the West Indies,</i>	69
<i>The French make encroachments on the British settlements in America,</i>	73
<i>Engagement between the British fleet under Byng, and the French off Minorca,</i>	79
<i>Conduct and fate of Admiral Byng,</i>	84
<i>Hostile conduct of Spain,</i>	89
<i>Expedition against Rochfort,</i>	92
<i>Engagement between Sir Edward Hawke and M. de la Clue,</i>	109
<i>Expedition against the French coast,</i>	114
<i>Taking of Louisburg and Cape Breton,</i>	117
<i>Descents upon the French coast; the unfortunate affair of St. Car, &amp;c.</i>	121

<i>Gallant behaviour of the Squadron under Commodore Forrest,</i>	Page 129
<i>Engagement between Pocock and D'Aché in the East Indies,</i>	131
<i>Taking of Guadaloupe,</i>	135
<i>Surrender of Quebec to General Wolfe and Admiral Saunders,</i>	138
<i>Second engagement between Pocock and D'Aché,</i>	143
<i>Action between Boscawen and De la Clue,</i>	146
<i>Engagement between Hawke and Conflans,</i>	148
<i>Action between Elliot and Thurot,</i>	160
<i>Pondicherry taken,</i>	176
<i>Dominica, Grenada, &amp;c. taken,</i>	178
<i>Belleisle surrendered,</i>	181
<i>Hostilities with Spain,</i>	193
<i>The Family Compact between France and Spain,</i>	197
<i>Surrender of Martinico,</i>	201
<i>The Havannah taken,</i>	211
<i>Manilla taken and ransomed,</i>	223
<i>Surrender of the island of St. John to the French</i>	235
<i>Retaken by the English,</i>	236
<i>Unsuccessful attempt on Nova Colonia,</i>	245
<i>Conclusion of the war with France and Spain,</i>	246

## C H A P. XXIV.

*The Naval History of Great Britain from the end of the war in 1763 to the year 1779.*

<i>Commodore Byron's voyage round the world, on discovery, in 1764,</i>	254
<i>Difference between Great Britain and her colonies in North America, on account of the Stamp act,</i>	266
<i>Repeal of the Stamp act,</i>	270
<i>Captain Wallis and Captain Carteret's voyages round the world in 1766,</i>	272
<i>Captain Cook's voyage round the world in 1768,</i>	288
<i>Dispute between Great Britain and Spain relative to Falkland's Islands,</i>	326
<i>Voyage of the Honourable Constantine Phipps (now Lord Mulgrave), towards the North Pole,</i>	343
<i>Voyage</i>	

# C O N T E N T S

xix

<i>Voyage of Captain Cook and Captain Fourneau round the world,</i>	Page 347
<i>Rebellion breaks out in America,</i>	365
<i>Battle of Bunker's Hill,</i>	373
<i>Surrender of St. John's and Montreal to the Americans,</i>	378
<i>Repulse of the rebels at Quebec,</i>	380
<i>Repulse of Sir Peter Parker at Charlestown, South Carolina,</i>	384
<i>Defeat of the Americans at Long Island,</i>	388
<i>New York taken,</i>	390
<i>Defeat of the Provincials on Lake Champlain,</i>	391
<i>State of the West Indies,</i>	394
<i>Defeat of the British in the Jerseys,</i>	396
<i>Philadelphia taken, and naval operations in the Delaware,</i>	398
<i>Burgoyne's surrender,</i>	404
<i>Operations of General Clinton on the North river,</i>	405
<i>Treaty between France and America,</i>	407
<i>Rescript given in by the French ambassador from the court of France,</i>	409
<i>Seizure of British ships in the ports of France,</i>	410
<i>Evacuation of Philadelphia, and the arrival of D'Eslaign on the coast of America with a French squadron,</i>	413
<i>Lord Howe acts on the defensive against the attacks of the French,</i>	414
<i>The two fleets separated by a storm,</i>	420
<i>Hostilities commenced in Europe against the French by Admiral Keppel,</i>	423
<i>Engagement of the English and French fleets,</i>	426
<i>Commissioners from Britain arrive in America with terms of reconciliation, and their reception,</i>	429
<i>Reflections on the conduct of the war,</i>	433
<i>Trial of Admiral Keppel,</i>	436

## A P P E N D I X.

No.

I. <i>Sailing and fighting instructions to Admiral Vernon's fleet,</i>	447
II. <i>Ships in commission in 1741,</i>	450
III. <i>British and combined fleets in 1743,</i>	454, 455
IV. <i>Admiral Byng's instructions from the Admiralty,</i>	456
V. <i>Royal</i>	

No.	Page
V. <i>Royal Navy of Great Britain in 1756,</i>	458
VI. <i>Royal Navy of France in 1756,</i>	461
VII. <i>Secret instructions to Sir John Mordaunt,</i>	462
VIII. <i>Intercepted letter from General Lally,</i>	465
IX. <i>Capitulation of Belleisle,</i>	466
X. <i>List of the Spanish navy in 1762,</i>	470
XI. <i>Capitulation of Martinico,</i>	472
XII. <i>Capitulation of the Havannah,</i>	475
XIII. <i>Articles of peace betwixt Britain, France, and Spain,</i>	478
XIV. <i>Declaration of his Catholic majesty relative to Falkland's islands,</i>	481
XV. <i>Protest in the House of Lords relative to Falkland's islands,</i>	482
XVI. <i>Naval review at Portsmouth,</i>	484
XVII. <i>Fleet of France, 1778,</i>	486
XVIII. <i>Memorial of the admirals to the King, in favour of Admiral Keppel,</i>	488
XIX. <i>Defence of Admiral Keppel,</i>	491
XX. <i>Admiral Keppel's letter to the Admiralty,</i>	512
XXI. <i>List of the British and French fleets under Keppel and D'Orvilliers,</i>	514
XXII. <i>Admiral Barrington's account of the capture of St. Lucia, and the naval engagement off that island,</i>	516

S:

the  
war

Great A. D.  
in year 1727.  
now at  
al with  
e, that  
ngaged  
ence of  
on with  
The  
l Sicily

xx

No,

v

v

vi

vii

ii

2

x

xi

xii

xiii

xiv

xv

xvi

xvii

xviii

xix

xx

xx

---

L I V E S  
OF THE  
A D M I R A L S:  
INCLUDING A NEW AND ACCURATE  
N A V A L H I S T O R Y.

---

C H A P. XXIII.

The Naval History of GREAT BRITAIN from the  
accession of king George II. to the end of the war  
in the year 1763.

**K**ING GEORGE II. ascended the throne of Great A. D.  
Britain in the year 1727, and in the forty-fourth year 1727.  
of his age. All the European powers were now at  
peace; nevertheless, some of them were so little satisfied with  
the terms to which necessity had compelled them to accede, that  
a future war was easily foreseen. The late king had engaged  
in an unnatural alliance with France, and, under a pretence of  
adjusting the balance of power, had burdened the nation with  
subsidies to Sweden and the landgrave of Hesse-Cassel. The  
emperor Charles VI. for whom we had so lately wrested Sicily  
from the Spaniards, was now leagued with the court of Ma-  
drid, and the political scheme of our ministry, some time before  
the death of George I. was to humble this very emperor, in  
Vol. IV. A whole

A. D. whose cause we had so lately expended such sums of British  
1727. treasure.

Before I proceed to the occurrences which are the immediate objects of a naval history, it seems necessary to bring the reader acquainted with the men in power at the beginning of this reign. Lord Townsend and the duke of Newcastle were generally supposed to conduct the important concern of foreign negotiations. The first of these is allowed to have possessed knowledge and talents equal to the task. As to the latter, he was certainly not a man of great abilities; but he had distinguished himself as a steady and indefatigable friend to the house of Hanover, and his parliamentary interest was very considerable. Lord Carteret, though not ostensibly in the administration, was frequently consulted, and his advice generally followed. He was a man of some genius and learning, and, having been much abroad, was supposed to be well acquainted with the general system of Europe. The interior government of the kingdom was principally conducted by Sir Robert Walpole, who was at the head of the treasury, and leader of the Whigs in the house of commons. He was well versed in the mystery of financing, funding, and in the effectual application of money, as a powerful engine of government. He spoke in parliament, though not elegantly, yet with ease, fluency, and persuasion. He knew mankind, and on that knowledge he is said to have laid the foundation of that uniform plan of influence, so very agreeable to subsequent parliaments, and so indispensibly useful to future ministers. The principal speakers in the opposition were Sir William Wyndham, Mr. Shippen, Mr. Hungerford, and Mr. Pultney.

The reader has seen, in the last page of the preceding volume, that the navy of England was, at this period, exceedingly formidable. Our chief naval commanders who were at this time employed, were Sir Charles Wager, Sir John Norris, and admiral Hosier: the first commanded a fleet in the Mediterranean, the second in the Baltic, and the third in the West Indies, where he died, about two months after the king's accession. Sir Charles Wager had been sent to secure Gibraltar, then besieged by the Spaniards. He afterwards continued upon the coast of Spain, in order to persuade that nation, by the *ultima ratio regum*,



*regum*, if necessary, to acquiesce in the general plan of peace A. D. to which the other considerable powers had already acceded. 1727. Sir John Norris had been sent with a fleet into the Baltic, with a design to protect Sweden from the Czarina, who threatened that country with an invasion. And admiral Hosier had sailed in April 1726, to the West Indies, in order to block up the Spanish galleons, and thereby prevent that treasure from being brought to Europe, without which, it was imagined, the courts of Vienna and Madrid could not prosecute the war.

Such was the situation of the British navy at the accession of George II. who, as I have before observed, found his kingdom at peace with all the world. No immediate change was made, either of ministers or measures; but, before the expiration of the year, lord Torrington was placed at the head of the admiralty, and the earl of Westmoreland made first lord of trade\*.

A new parliament was called. The two houses met on the 1728. twenty-third day of January. The commons unanimously chose for their speaker Arthur Onslow, Esq; member for the county of Surrey; a man whose abilities and integrity rendered him singularly qualified for that important office. The king, in his speech from the throne, informed his parliament, that the difficulties, which had hitherto prevented the execution of the preliminaries to the establishment of a general peace, were now removed; and that a congress would soon be opened for that purpose, in which he hoped the peace of Europe would be effectually secured; but that nevertheless, in order to prevent the possibility of an open rupture, it was necessary to continue the preparations for war. He wished that some scheme might be formed for the increase and security of seamen, that they might rather be invited than compelled into the service. He promised economy as soon as the public safety would permit, and concluded his speech, as usual, with recommending unanimity and dispatch. The two houses presented most dutiful addresses on the occasion. They voted 22,955 men for guards and garrisons, and 15,000 seamen, for the service of the year. They granted 231,000 l. for the maintenance of 12,000 Hessians; a subsidy

\* Smollet's hist. 3d edition, vol. vii. p. 172.

A. D. of 50,000 l. to the king of Sweden, and 25,000 l. to the duke  
1728. of Brunfwick <sup>b</sup>.

The congress, which met at Soissons to establish peace, having yet determined nothing, the fate of Europe remained suspended. Spain had secretly shook hands with France, and was now allied to Portugal by means of a double marriage; she therefore grew indifferent as to peace with England. She continued her depredations on our commerce in the West Indies, where our fleet remained inactive and rotting, and our sailors perished miserably, insulted and unrevenged.

The parliament of England met, according to their proroga-  
1729. tion, on the 21st of January. They voted 15,000 seamen for the service of the year; the number of land-forces was also continued, as were likewise the subsidies to foreign princes. The merchants of London, Bristol, and Liverpool presented petitions to the house of commons, complaining of the repeated injuries they had sustained by the depredations of the Spaniards in the West Indies; upon which the house ordered the lords of the admiralty to produce every similar memorial which they had received; and they addressed the king, praying, that the instructions and letters sent to admiral Hosier and his successors in command, might be laid before them. A committee of the whole house took this important affair into consideration, and after examining evidence, and amply debating the matter, resolved, that the Spaniards had violated the treaties subsisting between the two crowns; that they had treated the crews of several English ships with inhumanity; that the instructions given to admiral Hosier, to seize and detain the Spanish galleons, were just and necessary. The house of commons then addressed the king, requesting his majesty to require satisfaction of Spain; and he answered them by a promise to comply with their request <sup>c</sup>.

Meanwhile the house of lords deliberated on the positive demand made by the Catholic king, of the restitution of Gibraltar, founded on the contents of a letter written by king George I. to the king of Spain. From an authentic copy of this letter, it appeared, that his late majesty had actually consented to this re-

<sup>b</sup> Smollet, vol. vii. p. 173.

<sup>c</sup> Smollet, p. 180.

stitution. Their lordships then resolved, that the house did A. D. firmly rely, that his majesty would, in support of the honour 1729- and trade of this kingdom, take effectual care to preserve his undoubted right to Gibraltar and Minorca.

The year 1730 produced nothing worthy the attention of a 1730- naval historian. The king, in his speech to parliament, which met on the 13th of January, informed them, that the peace of Europe was now established by a treaty concluded at Seville; that the uninterrupted commerce of Great Britain was restored; and that the nation was to be amply indemnified for the Spanish depredations in the West Indies. Nevertheless, I find, that on the 2d of March, 1731<sup>d</sup>, several masters and sailors of merchant-ships, who had been taken by the Spanish Guarda Costas, came to London to give an account to parliament of the cruel treatment they had received from the Spaniards. In 1733 the house of commons addressed the king, to know what satisfaction had been made by Spain for the depredations above-mentioned<sup>c</sup>: and by his majesty's answer it appeared, that the commissioners had not yet made their report. In the speech from the throne, which put an end to the preceding session of parliament, the nation was told, that all disputes with foreign powers were settled, and the public tranquillity established. However, twelve ships of the line were put into commission, and press-warrants were issued for manning the fleet. Meanwhile rear-admiral Stewart demanded of the governors of Campeachy and the Havannah, restitution for three ships plundered by Spanish Guarda Costas. In consequence of this peremptory demand, one of the Guarda Costas was sold at St. Jago de Cuba, and the money paid to the South-Sea factors. One of the Spanish governors was sent home, and another confined in the castle of Cuba.

That we may in some degree preserve the chain of such pub- 1733- lic events as are connected, though indirectly, with our naval history, it is necessary to inform the reader, that, in the year 1733, the king of France concluded a treaty with Spain and Sardinia, by which they mutually agreed to declare war against

<sup>d</sup> Gent. Mag. March, 1731.

<sup>c</sup> Smollet's hist. vol. vii. p. 207.

A. D. the emperor. Accordingly a war in Germany and in Italy immediately commenced.

In 1734 the navy of England consisted of ninety-two men of war, sixty of which were of the line. In the following year a misunderstanding, on a frivolous occasion, happening between the courts of Spain and Portugal, the latter applied to Great Britain for protection; in consequence of which, Sir John Norris sailed with a powerful fleet, and arrived at Lisbon on the ninth of June, where he was joyfully received as their deliverer.

Regardless of the frequent complaints and remonstrances delivered to the court of Spain by the British ambassador at Madrid, the Spaniards in America continued audaciously to insult and molest our commerce. They pretended that we had no right either to cut logwood in the bay of Campeachy, or to gather salt on the island of Tortugas. Their *Guarda Costas* boarded and plundered every English ship they met, under a pretence of searching for contraband goods. They even seized several English vessels, confiscated their cargoes, and threw the sailors into prison. Fired by such reiterated provocation, the people of England began now to lose all patience. Petitions to the house of commons were transmitted from various parts of the kingdom. The house again addressed the king, and the king again returned a promissory answer. It is difficult, even at this distance of time, to reflect with patience on the pusillanimity of the British ministry at this period; nor is it possible to imagine the Spaniards would have carried their insolence so far; if they had not depended on the pacific disposition of Sir Robert Walpole<sup>f</sup>. That able minister dreaded the consequences of a war to himself and friends. He had other uses for the treasure which fleets and armies would consume; and therefore he left nothing unattempted to avert, or, at least, to procrastinate the

<sup>f</sup> One of the most shocking instances of Spanish insolent barbarity, appeared in the case of one Jenkins, master of a Scots merchant ship, who at the bar of the house of commons held his ear in his hand; which had been torn from his head by the crew of a *Guarda Costas*, who declared they would do the same by his master. They tortured him in the most wanton humanity, and threatened him with instant death. Being asked by a member, what were his thoughts when he was in the hands of these barbarians? he answered, "I recommended my soul to God, and my cause to my country." This evidence made a strong impression on the house.

storm. For this purpose, he patched up a convention with the A. D. court of Spain, importing, that the disputes between the two crowns should be settled by two plenipotentiaries. This convention was severely censured by the opposition in both houses of parliament. The city of London, the West India merchants, and the merchants of Bristol, presented petitions, justly complaining, that their indisputable right to pass unmolested to and from the British colonies, was, in this convention, left, as a dubitable privilege, to be determined by plenipotentiaries.

The convention above-mentioned stipulated, that 95,000 l. being a balance due from Spain to the crown and subjects of Great Britain, should be paid in London before the expiration of four months after the ratification. The time was now expired, and the money not yet paid. The house of lords appointed a day for taking the state of the nation into consideration, and when the day arrived, Lord Carteret moved for a resolution, that this failure of payment was a high indignity to the king, and an injustice to the nation<sup>c</sup>. The previous question was put, and the motion lost. But though the minister yet retained a sufficient majority in both houses, the nation in general was too much exasperated to afford any hopes of preventing a war with Spain<sup>d</sup>. Letters of marque and reprisal were granted; the army was augmented; an embargo was laid on all outward-bound vessels; a fleet was assembled at Spithead, and a reinforcement was sent to admiral Haddock, who at this time commanded a fleet in the Mediterranean. Our whole fleet in commission consisted of eighty-four men of war, besides thirty-two ready to be put into commission<sup>e</sup>. The entire navy of Spain amounted to thirty-three ships of war, those of the flota, which are properly merchant ships, included.

<sup>c</sup> Smollet, vol. vii. p. 268.

<sup>d</sup> Gent. Mag. June, 1739.

<sup>e</sup> The ships in commission were,

1	of 90 guns,
5	— 80
12	— 70
20	— 60
19	— 50
9	— 44
18	— 20

Ships ready for commission.

2	of 100 guns,
2	— 90
6	— 80
4	— 70
10	— 50 and 60
3	— 44
5	— 20 and 22

Both

A. D. Both nations began to make vigorous preparations for war.  
 1739. The court of Spain at this juncture revived its alliance by a marriage between the Infant Don Philip and Madam de France, and the French ministry did not scruple to declare, that if Spain were oppressed by any power whatsoever, they should not remain idle spectators. The States-General, on the other hand, did not scruple to signify by their ministers at the courts of France and Spain, that they were under certain mutual engagements to England, which, if required, they thought themselves in honour obliged to fulfil.

Vice-admiral Vernon sailed on the 20th of July for the West Indies with nine men of war. This gentleman had rendered himself conspicuous in the house of commons by his blunt opposition to the ministry. In the debate concerning the Spanish depredations in the West Indies, he had affirmed, that he could take Porto-Bello with six men of war. He had formerly commanded a fleet on the Jamaica station, and was therefore supposed to be well acquainted with those seas. His offer was echoed by the members in the opposition, and the whole nation resounded his praise. The minister embraced this opportunity of acquiring some popularity, and, at the same time, of removing a troublesome opponent in the house of commons. Besides, it was generally imagined that he was not without hopes that the admiral might disgrace himself and his party by not succeeding in the adventure. Vernon sailed for the West Indies.

The English fleet cruising on the coast of Spain was particularly intended to intercept the Affogues ships from Vera Cruz\*. These ships, however, arrived safe at St. Andero. Having received information of the situation of affairs in Europe, instead of coming by the Madeiras for Calais, as usual, they sailed by the Bahamas, and went north about; then steering westward, and doubling the Lizard, they made Ushant, and thence creeping along shore, crossed the bay of Biscay, and so to St. Andero.

On the 23d day of October, Great Britain declared war against Spain, and in the same month intelligence was received that admiral Haddock had taken two rich ships from the Cara-

\* *Genl. Mag.* vol. ix. p. 443.

bras, having on board 2,000,000 pieces of eight. He was soon A. D. after joined by admiral Balchin, with six ships of the line. 1739.

Vice-admiral Vernon arrived at Jamaica the 23d of October, the day on which war was proclaimed in England. On his arrival off Port-Royal in that island, he had the satisfaction to see the Diamond man of war standing into the harbour with two Spanish vessels in tow, one of which was a register ship with 120,000 pieces of eight, and clothing for 6000 men, on board. The admiral sailed from Jamaica on the 5th of November, with six ships of war<sup>m</sup>. Having met with contrary winds, he did not come in sight of Porto-Bello till the 20th in the evening. He was apprehensive of driving to the eastward during the night; he therefore anchored about six leagues from shore. Porto-Bello is a town in the Spanish West Indies, so called from the beauty of its harbour. It is situated on the north coast of the isthmus of Darien, which divides the kingdom of Mexico from Terra Firma. The town stands at the bottom of a small bay, defended by a castle and two forts, one of which, called the Iron Fort, is situated on the north side of the mouth of the harbour, and the other, St. Jeronimo, near the town, with a battery facing the entrance into the bay. The castle, called Gloria, stands on the west side of the town.

On the 21st, in the morning, the admiral weighed and plied to windward in line of battle<sup>n</sup>. The ships entered the bay in the following order, viz. The Hampton-Court, Norwich, Worcester, Burford, Strafford, Louisa. Orders had been given for a general attack; but the wind coming to the eastward, the admiral was obliged to confine his attack to the Iron Fort, close to which the squadron was piloted by Captain Rentone. When the Hampton-Court came within about a cable's length of the fort, she was suddenly becalmed by the high land to windward, and, before she could bring her guns to bear, was

<sup>m</sup> Viz.	Burford	of	70	guns and 500 men.	
	Hampton-Court,	70	495		Capt. Watson.
	Worcester,	60	400		Main.
	Louisa,	60	400		Waterhouse.
	Strafford,	60	400		Trevor.
	Norwich,	50	300		Herbert.

<sup>n</sup> London Gazette, March 15, 1740.

A. D. exposed to a smart fire from the enemy. But as soon as the  
 1739- was in a situation to return the salute, after having dropped  
 her anchor, she seemed, in a moment, a cloud of perpetual  
 thunder. She appeared to the rest of the fleet to be all on fire.  
 In the space of twenty-five minutes she is said to have fired 400  
 balls. The Norwich and the Worcester were not long before  
 they came up, and fired upon the fort with vast alacrity. These  
 were followed by the Burford, on board of which was the ad-  
 miral, who perceiving that the Spaniards began to fly from se-  
 veral parts of the fort, made a signal for landing. Mean while  
 he luffed up as near the fort as possible, and, by means of his  
 small arms, drove the garrison from the lower battery. As the  
 boats full of sailors and marines passed the admiral, he called  
 to them to land immediately under the walls of the fort, though  
 there was no breach made. The sailors were no sooner on  
 shore than they scaled the wall, and, pulling up the soldiers af-  
 ter them, struck the Spanish colours in the lower battery, and  
 hoisted an English ensign. This was no sooner perceived by the  
 garrison in the upper part of the fort, than they hoisted a white  
 flag, a signal for capitulation, and surrendered at discretion.  
 The garrison of this fort consisted of 300 men, out of which,  
 at the time of surrender, there remained only thirty-five privates  
 and five officers.

The ships which failed in before the admiral, were now fallen  
 to leeward; but the Burford being exposed to the Gloria-castle,  
 it continued firing at her till night, without however doing her  
 any other damage than wounding her fore-top-mast a little above  
 the rigging. The admiral then pointed some of his lower deck  
 guns at this castle, and sent several shot over it into the town;  
 one of which went through the governor's house.

On the morning of the 22d the admiral called a council of war;  
 and, it being thought not advisable to attack the Gloria-castle by  
 day, orders were issued for warping the ships up the following  
 night. This circumspection proved unnecessary. The Spaniards  
 hoisted a white flag, and immediately sent a boat with a flag  
 of truce, with terms on which they wished to capitulate: in  
 answer to these the admiral returned other articles, and al-  
 lowed them a few hours for deliberation. They accepted his  
 terms,



terms°, and the British troops took immediate possession of the A. D. Gloria and St. Jeronimo forts. 1739.

There were in the harbour of Porto-Bello two Spanish guardacostas of twenty guns each, and an armed snow. The crews of these vessels, chusing to anticipate the British sailors, plundered the town in the night, and committed great outrages on the inhabitants. The English seamen and soldiers, on the contrary, behaved with great decency and humanity, after they became pos-

\* *Articles of capitulation granted by Edward Vernon, Esq; vice-admiral of the blue, and commander in chief of his majesty's ships and vessels in the West Indies, and commodore Brown, to Don Francisco Martinez de Retex, governor of Porto-Bello, and Don Francisco de Aburea, commandant of the guardacostas at the same place, the 22d of November, 1739, O. S.*

I. That the garrison be allowed to march out, as desired, upon condition the king of Great Britain's troops be put into possession of the Gloria-castle before four o'clock this evening, and the garrison to march out by ten o'clock to-morrow morning. That the inhabitants may either remove or remain, under a promise of security for themselves and their effects.

II. That the Spanish soldiers may have a guard, if they think it necessary.

III. That they may carry off two cannons mounted with ten charges of powder each, and their match lighted.

IV. The gates of the Gloria-castle must absolutely be in possession of the king our master's troops by four o'clock, and the Spanish garrison shall remain in all safety, for their persons and effects, till the appointed time for their marching out, and to carry with them the provisions and ammunition necessary for their safety.

V. That the ships, with their apparel and arms, be absolutely delivered up to the use of his Britannic majesty; but that all the officers, soldiers, and crews, shall have three days allowed them to retire with all their personal effects, only one officer being admitted on board each ship and vessel, to take possession for the king our master, and to see this article strictly complied with.

VI. That provided the articles above-mentioned are strictly complied with, and that possession is given of Castle St. Jeronimo, in the same manner as is stipulated for the Castle Gloria, then the clergy, the churches, and town, shall be protected and preserved in all their immunities and properties: and that all persons already taken shall be set at liberty before our leaving the port.

Given under our hands on board his majesty's ship *Burford*, in Porto-

Bello harbour, this 22d of November, 1739, O. S.

E. VERNON.

CHA. BROWN.

I presume it will not be thought inconsistent with the dignity of history to record a piece of genuine wit in a common sailor, who, when the officer who commanded at the scaling of the Iron-castle, ordered the troops to *halt*, cried—  
“Damn my eyes, captain, don't let's *halt* till we are *crippled*.”

A. D. seized of the town; and, as a reward for their moderation and gallantry, the admiral distributed among them 10,000 dollars, which were just arrived in order to pay the Spanish troops. The admiral, having taken on board his fleet all the brass cannon and ammunition found in the several forts, he proceeded to demolish the fortifications; which was completely effected in three weeks, at the expence of 122 barrels of Spanish gun-powder. On the 27th of November the Diamond, captain Knowles, and on the 29th the Windsor, captain Berkley, and the Angelsea, captain Reddish, arrived at Porto-Bello, in consequence of orders left by the admiral at the Leeward islands, for these ships to follow him. On the 13th of December the admiral, with his squadron, sailed for Jamaica, and on the 28th, being then off Carthagena, he dispatched captain Rentone, in the Spanish snow, with the news to England.

Admiral Vernon, and the fleet under his command, certainly deserved the honour they acquired by the success of this expedition; nevertheless, it must be confessed, that their easy conquest must be in part attributed to the cowardice of the Spaniards in surrendering the first fort before a breach was made, and the other two before they were attacked. The Gloria-castle was garrisoned by 400 men, and was so regularly fortified that it might have sustained a long siege. Its lower battery had two bastions, and a curtain which mounted 22 guns, besides a line of eight guns facing the mouth of the harbour. There were also several other batteries both in the Gloria and St. Jeronimo, in the same direction, which, if properly served, would have rendered the entrance into the harbour exceedingly dangerous, if not impracticable.

The taking of Porto-Bello, whilst it did honour to the British navy, reflected at the same time no inconsiderable degree of praise on the English ministry. There was an evident propriety in punishing the insolence of the Spaniards in the offending part. Porto-Bello was an asylum for the guarda-costas, two of which were found in the harbour, and carried off by the admiral. But this was not the only service he rendered to his country in the

\* The admiral took on board, from the several batteries, 40 pieces of brass cannon, 10 brass field-pieces, four brass mortars, 18 brass patteringoes, and 30 pieces of iron ordnance.

destruction of Porto-Bello. His success enabled him to extend A. D. his influence to Panama, where some of the factors and servants <sup>1739</sup> of the South-sea company were confined. He wrote to the president of that place in the language of a conqueror, and the factors and servants were immediately sent to Porto-Bello.

Captain Rentone, in the Triumph sloop, arrived in England on the 12th of March, 1740, with the news of this expedition<sup>a</sup>. The whole nation became frantic with joy. Congratulatory addresses were presented by parliament, by the cities of London, Bristol, &c. The commons granted every demand of the crown. They voted 28,000 land forces, besides 6000 marines; they provided for a powerful navy, and several men of war were added to those already in commission<sup>c</sup>.

There were at this time two considerable squadrons of English men of war in the Mediterranean; one at Gibraltar, commanded by Sir Chaloner Ogle, consisting of twelve sail, and the other on the Minorca station, commanded by rear-admiral Haddock. But these fleets were only employed in cruising on the coast of Spain and Italy, without any attempt to attack or annoy the enemy, except by now and then seizing a poor defenceless fly that happened unfortunately to fall into their web. The reader needs not be informed that I allude to the capture of unarmed trading vessels by ships of war. A contemplative mind, reflecting on these maritime depredations, is naturally led to inquire, by what law of nature, or of nations, or on what principle of justice, princes at war thus seize the private property of each others subjects, in ships trading to other king-

<sup>a</sup> The news was known in England before his arrival. On the 11th Mr. Baker, master of Lloyd's coffee house, waited on Sir R. Walpole with a letter, containing an account of Vernon's success. It was brought from Jamaica by a ship which sailed from thence, in company with captain Rentone; and arrived at Dover a day before him.

<sup>c</sup> Viz. Colchester, of 80 guns, and 600 men, Captain Garlington.  
 Torbay, — 80 ——— 600 ——— Parker.  
 Cambridge, — 80 ——— 600 ——— Whorwood.  
 Fr. Frederic, — 70 ——— 480 ——— Clinton.  
 Oxford, — 70 ——— 480 ——— Ld. Aug. Fitzroy.  
 Seven fire-ships.

A. D. doms? This procedure seems more extraordinary when we 1739. consider, that their land-forces generally observe a different conduct. A general, in marching through an enemy's country, so far from robbing and imprisoning every peasant he meets, gives positive orders, that the person and property of individuals, not in arms, shall not be molested. He makes war against the prince, and not against the people individually. An admiral, on the contrary, takes every trading vessel he meets, robs the owners of their property, and sends the crew home to be confined as prisoners of war. Here then is a heavy punishment inflicted on persons who had neither intention nor power to commit any offence, or in any wise to injure those by whom the punishment is inflicted. I do not obtrude these reflections with any hope of influencing the conduct of the rulers of the earth: reason, justice, and humanity are not the privy-counsellors of kings. But perhaps the reader may not totally disregard these counsellors, and will therefore pardon this short interruption of the thread of our history.

1740. We now return to admiral Vernon, the hero of this period. I have related above, that in the last month of the year 1739, he sailed with his Squadron from Porto-Bello to Jamaica. He continued at Port-Royal, in that island, till the 25th of February (1740) following, on which day he sailed for Carthagena, which he bombarded at intervals during three days, with no other effect than that of terrifying the inhabitants, and injuring some of their churches and convents\*. What was intended by this bombardment is not very evident. On the 10th of March the Squadron weighed anchor, and sailed in line of battle westward along the coast. In passing by Boca Chica, they were saluted with a few shot from three small forts near the mouth of the harbour; but they fell short of the ships. The admiral, having ordered the Windsor and the Greenwich to cruize off Carthagena, proceeded with the rest of his fleet to Porto-Bello, in order to repair the damages sustained by the small craft in the late bombardment. This business being completed, and the fleet watered in about eight days, he sailed on the 22d, and steering south-west along shore, entered the river

\* London Gazette, June 29.

Chegre, which is but a few leagues distant from Porto-Bello. A. D. 1740. At the mouth of this river there was a castle, or fort, called St. Lorenzo, under whose protection the guarda-costas used to ride secure. The only two of these Spanish pirates (for they were little better) which now remained on this coast, were at this time in the river. The admiral, in going in, had the misfortune to be retarded by an accident which happened to his fore-top-sail-yard. He was on board the *Strafford*. This accident obliged him to make a signal for the *Norwich* to sail in before him, with the bomb-ketches, fire-ships, and tenders. The *Norwich* was then commanded by captain Herbert, and the bomb-ketches, &c. were conducted by captain Knowles, who came to an anchor at three in the afternoon, and began to bombard the fort that evening. The admiral's ship did not come to an anchor till ten o'clock at night. Far be it from me to insinuate that there was any want of personal courage in admiral Vernon. But I beg leave to advise all future admirals, to whom such an accident in the fore-top-sail-yard may happen, immediately to hoist their flag on board the leading ship. This, however, does not appear to have been a service of much danger. The castle mounted only eleven brass cannon, and as many pattering-pieces. Nevertheless it sustained a furious bombardment, and a continued cannonade from three of the largest ships in the fleet, till the morning of the 24th, when the garrison surrendered, and the fort was immediately possessed by the British troops.

*Articles of capitulation between Edward Vernon, Esq; vice-admiral, &c. and Don Juan Carlos Zavellos, captain of foot, &c.*

I. That, upon his Britannic majesty's troops being put in possession of the fort St. Lorenzo, at the mouth of the river Chegre, the said captain, and all his garrison, be at free liberty to march out without any molestation, and may retire into the village of Chegre, or where else they please.

II. That the inhabitants of Chegre may remain in all safety in their own houses, under a promise of security to their persons and houses.

III. That the guarda-costa sloops be delivered up in the condition they are, and the custom-house.

IV. That the clergy and churches in Chegre shall be protected and preserved in all their immunities.

E. VERNON.

There

A. D. There were found in the custom-house, on the opposite side  
 1740. of the river, 4,300 bags of Peruvian bark, and other merchandize, which were shipped on board the fleet, together with the brass ordnance above-mentioned. The custom-house was then set on fire, the two guarda costas destroyed, and the fort entirely demolished; after which the admiral returned to Porto-Bello, where he arrived on the first of April.

Whilst Vernon was thus employed in the West Indies, our fleets in Europe were unemployed. I mean to say, that they achieved nothing against the enemy; for as to employment, they had enough of sailing and counter-sailing, and of fighting too, with adverse winds. On the 23d of July a fleet of 21 ships of the line, commanded by Sir John Norris, with two other admirals, viz. Sir Chaloner Ogle, and Philip Cavendish, sailed from St. Helen's with a fair wind, the duke of Cumberland serving on board as a volunteer. But the wind shifting, they were obliged, after being three days at sea, to put back into Torbay. On the 4th of August they sailed again, with the wind at north-east, and on the following day were within a few leagues of the Lizard; but on the 6th it blew so violently from the west, that they were obliged once more to return to Torbay. On the 22d they made a third attempt; and after five days obstinate contention with tempestuous contrary winds, were a third time obliged to return to the same place. What was the destination of this fleet remains a matter of doubt. Probably the Spanish Squadron, at that time at Ferrol, was the object. But, be the design whatsoever it might, it was now relinquished, and the admiral, with the duke of Cumberland, returned to London. Thus began, and thus ended the naval history of his royal highness, who probably concluded, from this inauspicious essay, that he had mistaken his element.

In this year the celebrated commodore Anson began his voyage to the South-Seas. He sailed from St. Helen's with five men of war on the 18th of September. About two months after, Sir Chaloner Ogle sailed for the West Indies with twenty-one ships of the line, and a considerable body of land forces, commanded by lord Cathcart. This formidable fleet, which consisted of a hundred and seventy sail<sup>u</sup>, had scarce taken its

<sup>u</sup> Smollet's hist. vol. vii. p. 185.

departure from the Land's-end, before it was scattered and dispersed by a violent tempest. The admiral nevertheless pursued<sup>1740</sup> his voyage, and came to an anchor in the neutral island of Dominica, in order to take in wood and water. In this island the expedition sustained an irreparable loss in the death of lord Cathcart, a brave and experienced officer, who died of a dysentery. The command of the land-forces now devolved upon general Wentworth, an officer of no experience, and of very moderate abilities. The admiral, in his voyage from Dominica to Jamaica, sailing near the island of Hispaniola, discovered four large ships of war. He made signal for an equal number of his squadron to give them chase. The chase refused to bring to, and lord Augustus Fitzroy, who commanded the English detachment, gave one of them a broadside, and an engagement ensued, which continued during part of the night. In the morning they hoisted French colours, and consequently the firing ceased, there being at this time no declaration of war between the two nations. The commanders apologized to each other for the mistake, and parted, but with loss of men on both sides.

Sir Chaloner Ogle arrived off Jamaica on the 9th of January 1741. 1741, where he joined admiral Vernon, who now commanded a fleet of thirty ships of the line, with a considerable number of frigates, bomb-ketches, fire-ships, &c.<sup>a</sup> The number of seamen was about 15,000, and that of the land-forces at least 12,000, including four battalions raised in America, and 500 negroes from Jamaica. This very formidable armament, doubtless the most tremendous that ever appeared in those seas, was certainly equal to any attempt against the Spanish settlements. Their treasure might have been intercepted, and their colonies easily reduced. But the complete humiliation of Spain was prevented by the concurrence of a variety of circumstances. The British ministry, for reasons best known to themselves, detained the fleet at Spithead much too long. For the credit of human nature, I am willing to believe, that the prime minister was not so exceedingly wicked as to endeavour, by retarding the fleet, to frustrate the expedition: and yet, to the disgrace

<sup>a</sup> Vide appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. I.

A. D. of human nature, I fear there have been instances of ministers  
 1741. so diabolical as to be influenced by very ignoble passions, in opposition to the interest and dignity of the nation, with whose weal they were intrusted. It seems however a safe maxim in politics, not to commit the management of a war to a minister who shall have repeatedly declared his disapprobation of the measure. But be the designs of the minister what they might, it is scarce possible to suppose that the admiral was not hearty in the cause; and yet it was near the end of January before he sailed from Jamaica, though he certainly was not ignorant that the season was already too far advanced, in a climate where the rains, which begin about the end of April, render it impossible for troops to keep the field.

I must here take occasion to observe, that the admiral's orders were discretionary: he might therefore have made his attack on any of the Spanish settlements. The Havannah, which was certainly an object of the greatest importance, lay to leeward, and might easily have been reached in less than three days. Nevertheless, Mr. Vernon thought fit to beat against the wind to Hispaniola, with an intention, as it was said, to observe the French fleet. On the 15th of February he learnt, that this fleet had sailed for Europe, having previously sent an advice-boat to Carthagená, to inform the Spaniards of Vernon's being in those seas. The admiral called a council of war, and it was determined to land on the continent of New Spain. Accordingly, after spending some days in taking in wood and water at Hispaniola, the fleet sailed, and, on the 4th of March, came to an anchor in a bay called Playa Granda, to windward of Carthagená. This fleet consisted of one hundred and twenty-four sail, the sight of which must have struck such terror into the Spaniards, that nothing but want of resolution and dispatch could have prevented its success. There cannot be a truer maxim in the art of war, than, That hesitation in the assailant inspires the defendant with courage, which augments progressively in proportion to the delay. But the commanders of this fleet and army, as if determined to give the enemy time to recover from their surprize, remained inactive in the bay till the 9th. On that day the first division of the fleet, commanded by Sir Chaloner Ogle, followed by admiral Vernon with all the transports, moved forward  
 towards



towards the entrance of the harbour called Boca Chica, which A. D. 1741. was defended by several formidable batteries. The third division, commanded by Mr. Lestock, remained at anchor. The Norfolk, the Ruffel, and the Shrewsbury anchored very near two forts called St. Jago and St. Philip, which being silenced in less than an hour, were immediately possessed by a detachment of British grenadiers.

On the 10th, the two regiments of Harrison and Wentworth, with six regiments of marines, landed on the island of Tierra Bomba, where, having pitched their tents, they began to erect a battery against the castle of Boca Chica. Five days more were employed in landing the artillery and necessary stores. But general Wentworth's want of knowledge in the art of war, soon discovered itself in the choice of his ground; for the tents were no sooner pitched; than the soldiers found themselves exposed to the fire of a fascine battery from the opposite side of the harbour, on the island of Varu. To remedy this evil, the admiral immediately detached a considerable number of sailors under the command of captain Boscawen, who landed about a mile to leeward of the battery, which mounted fifteen twenty-four pounders, under a raised battery of five guns. These intrepid sons of Neptune soon gained possession of both batteries; and, having spiked the cannon, returned to their ships.

On the 22d, general Wentworth opened a battery of twenty twenty-four pounders against the castle of Boca Chica, and the next day commodore Lestock with five ships was ordered to attack it by sea. He renewed his attack on the 24th, and on that day fell lord Aubrey Beauclerc, captain of the Prince Frederic, a very brave and experienced officer. Meanwhile the Spaniards had remounted their fascine battery, which was a second time destroyed by a detachment of sailors. A small breach being now made on the land-side of Boca Chica castle, the general acquainted the admiral with his resolution to storm it, who, in order to divert the attention of the enemy, manned his boats under the command of captain Knowles. The sailors landed near the castle, and there waited for the general assault. The grenadiers, on the other side, marched up in good order; but they no sooner began to mount the breach, than the garrison fled without firing a single musket. The garrison of another  
C 2 fort,

A. D. fort, called St. Joseph, followed their example, and our sailors 1741. took immediate possession of it. Emboldened by this success, and perceiving the enemy preparing to sink their ships, they boarded the Spanish admiral's ship, the *Galicia*, on board of which they found the captain and sixty men. There were in the harbour, when the attack of Boca Chica began, six Spanish men of war, two of which were now sunk, and one burnt by the Spaniards themselves. The sailors then proceeded to cut the boom, and thus opened a free passage for our ships into the lake. Next morning the fleet entered without molestation, but the wind blowing fresh and contrary, it was several days before they reached the narrow entrance into the harbour near the town. This entrance was defended by a considerable fortress, called *Castillo Grande*, mounting fifty-nine guns, which the enemy abandoned as soon as the ships approached.

Thus far all went well. The castles, forts, and batteries, which commanded the lake, were now in possession of the English. The entrance into this lake was doubtless an enterprize of no small danger and difficulty, the channel being commanded by two hundred cannon, those from the enemy's ships included. So far the admiral seems to have done every thing necessary on his part, by removing all obstacles in the way to conquest; and he was so confident of succeeding, that, on the *first of April*, he sent an express to the duke of Newcastle, with an account of his progress; on the receipt of which his grace, with the rest of the people of England, became frantic with joy and exultation. But with pain I proceed to record, that here our success ended. The next express brought a tale as humble as the former was triumphant. On this luckless *first of April*, the sailors having opened a channel through the sunken wrecks of the enemy, the bomb-ketches, covered by two frigates, entered the harbour, and were, on the succeeding day, followed by three fire-ships, which were so posted as to cover the intended landing of the troops. The Weymouth, captain Knowles, got into the harbour on the third, and on the fifth, early in the morning, the troops began to land at a place called *la Quinta*, from whence general Wentworth, at the head of 1500 men, pushed forward,

through a narrow defile, to an open ground about a mile from A. D. fort St. Lazar, which fort entirely commanded the town of 1741. Carthageua. He met with some interruption in his march from a body of six or seven hundred Spaniards, and lost a few of his men; but the enemy soon retired, and, in the evening of the sixth, the remainder of the English army were disembarked, and, having joined their general, the whole encamped on the plain above-mentioned.

Fort St. Lazar, the only remaining fortress, was well fortified, and defended by a numerous garrison. The general was of opinion, that any attempt to take it without regular approaches would be attended with much danger and difficulty. The admiral, on the contrary, was positive that it was practicable by escalade. From this time the demon of discord presided in their councils, and they began to entertain a sovereign contempt for each other's opinions. The general upbraided the admiral for not cannonading the town, and the latter reproached the former for not storming the fort. It was at length resolved in a council of war to attack St. Lazar by storm, the season being now too far advanced to allow time for erecting a battery of cannon in order to open a breach. In consequence of this resolution, on the 9th, before break of day, brigadier-general Guise, with 1200 men, marched to the attack. Unfortunately his guides were slain before he reached the walls. His scaling-ladders, being applied at random, proved too short. The officers were disconcerted for want of orders. A general confusion ensued, and the troops were obliged to retire with the loss of 600 men killed or wounded. By this time the rains began to fall very heavily, and disease became so universal in the camp, that it was determined in a council of war to relinquish every idea of a farther attempt. The remnant of the army retired to their ships, and were re-embarked on the 16th. The admiral, in order to clear himself from any imputation of neglect, and to demonstrate the impracticability of taking the place with ships after the successful attack on St. Lazar, having previously converted the Spanish admiral's ship, Galicia, into a floating battery, warped her into the harbour as near to the town as possible. In this station she fired upon the town for some hours; but it appearing that she was at too great a distance to injure the walls,

A. D. walls, she was suffered to drive, and soon struck upon the sand; 1741. This experiment, how plausible soever it might seem, was by no means allowed to be satisfactory. An historian <sup>d</sup>, who was present, affirms, that in another part of the harbour there was space and water sufficient for four or five men of war to lie within pistol-shot of the walls of Carthagea. If this be true, the admiral was certainly inexcusable for not bringing his ships to bear upon the town during the attack upon St. Lazar.

The shattered remnant of this ill-fated army having returned to their ships, diseases, peculiar to the climate, raged with inconceivable malignity, and many brave men who had escaped the enemy died in their hammocks. The jarring chieftains were unanimous as to the expediency of retiring from this scene of destruction and disgrace. A few days were spent in destroying the forts already taken, and then the fleet sailed for Jamaica.

As the rational design of historical writings is not merely to gratify the reader's curiosity, but rather to exhibit examples of vice and folly, virtue and sagacity, for his occasional abhorrence or imitation, I shall endeavour to point out the causes of the miscarriage of this important expedition. Some future commander of an attack upon Carthagea may possibly deem this investigation worthy of his attention.

The old adage, that, A bad beginning commonly produces a bad ending, is more frequently verified in the catastrophe of naval expeditions, than in any other species of human transactions. It is always in the power of a malignant prime minister to frustrate the best-concerted attempt, if he be influenced by passions or policy to wish that it may not succeed; and I fear there have been very few prime ministers so uninterestedly dispassionate, as sincerely to wish the success of measures adopted in opposition to their advice. Sir Robert Walpole's consent to a war with Spain, was evidently an involuntary compliance with the clamour of opposition, and of the nation in general. The fleet was not only unnecessarily retarded at Spithead; but the troops which were put on board, were raw and undisciplined. The fleet ought certainly to have sailed at least a month earlier; for though there might be barely time to execute the plan proposed;

<sup>d</sup> Smollet's *h. n.* vol. vii. p. 287.

naval expeditions are, in their nature, liable to so many causes A. D. of delay, that they will not admit of nice calculation in point 1741. of time. But if this ministerial delay was inexcusable, what shall we say of the dilatory proceedings of the admiral, who was certainly better acquainted with the climate?

From the above account of this unsuccessful expedition we learn, that our fleet and army were no sooner in possession of all the forts which defended the lake, than the admiral and general began to quarrel; their animosity daily increased, and their mutual contempt became at last so excessive, that the glorious cause in which they were engaged seemed less the object of their attention, than the means of effecting each other's disgrace. But the mischief did not end with the commanders: each had his separate cabal, and the spirit of discord was diffused through the whole fleet and army. This fatal, childish misunderstanding is an evident proof that both the admiral and general, to say no worse of them, were weak men. If either of them had possessed the soul of a great commander, he would not have suffered the folly of the other to ruin an enterprize of such importance. Fools, it is true, are sometimes obstinate; but it is seldom difficult for dispassionate wisdom to flatter them into compliance; and certainly, on such an occasion, somewhat of punctilio should have been sacrificed to patriotism. ✓

The attack upon St. Lazar was certainly absurd, and the hope of succeeding was doubtless founded solely on the facility with which the other forts had been possessed. This was a false conclusion; for that facility had rendered this fortress more formidable by an accumulation of troops. But in order to give the least degree of probability to the success of this attack, the admiral ought at the same time to have cannonaded and bombarded the town with all the power of his fleet. He might certainly have brought more ships into the harbour, and they might with safety have brought up much nearer to the walls. When the French took Carthagen in 1697, the firing from the ships contributed essentially to their success; but they landed a considerable train of artillery, with which they made a breach in the walls of the town, and then bravely fought their way into it. I also beg leave to remind the reader, that, in the year 1740, admiral Vernon bombarded the town of Carthagen from the sea.

A. D. sea. As therefore he had now so many ships more than he wanted, why did he not leave some of them on the coast, with orders to co-operate with the fleet in the harbour and the army, in the moment of a general attack? Upon the whole, Wentworth appears to have done all in his power, and his troops do not seem in any wise to have disgraced their country; but, alas! the resolutions by which they had the misfortune to be directed, were the result of jarring deliberations among the incongruous inhabitants of different elements. The general might be culpable in not treating the admiral with that degree of respect which his late victory gave him some reason to expect; but the latter was certainly inexcusable in not assisting the former in the reduction of the town. This conduct in the admiral will appear exceedingly reprehensible, if, upon a careful survey of the forts and harbour, it should appear, that, after the reduction of the several fortresses commanding the lake, the town might be reduced by a fleet, without the assistance of a land army: and the truth of this supposition seems so extremely probable, that I verily believe Vernon would have taken it, if the troops had never been landed, or if he had had no troops to assist him in the attempt. It is very evident, that the town of Carthagena may be easily bombarded both from the sea and from the harbour; and it is equally certain, that no town in which there are any number of opulent inhabitants, will sustain that species of destructive insult for any length of time; they will rise upon the garrison, and oblige them to capitulate.

Be this as it may, though the English sailors and soldiers were disappointed of their expected spoils of the enemy, they retired with the satisfaction of having done the Spaniards great injury in the destruction of many considerable fortifications, in spiking a number of cannon, and in annihilating six men of war and six galleons, besides many other vessels.

Let us now follow the English fleet to Jamaica, where it arrived on the 19th of May. The climate of this island did not contribute much towards the recovery of the sick, many of whom died after their arrival; among the rest lord Augustus Fitzroy, captain of the Orford. Vernon, on his arrival at Jamaica, having received orders from England to retain in the

West Indies no more ships than were necessary, sent home seven A. D. 1741.  
 ral men of war under the command of commodore Lestock f.

The remainder of his fleet were deemed quite sufficient; there being, at this time, but one Spanish squadron at the Havannah, and a small French fleet at Hispaniola. It is very certain that the admiral was so exceedingly dissatisfied with his colleague Wentworth, that he ardently wished to return to England; but the king had conceived so high an opinion of his abilities, and the letters which the admiral received from the duke of Newcastle were so extremely flattering, that he determined to continue in his station. On the 26th of May, he called a general council of war, the members of which were himself, Sir Chaloner Ogle, general Wentworth, general Guise, and governor Trelawny. The four first of these gentlemen were unanimous in opinion, that St. Jago on the island of Cuba was the proper object of attack. Governor Trelawny, on the contrary, thought Cuba of little importance, and strenuously advised an expedition against Panama on the isthmus of Darien. The governor, however, acquiesced, and raised a corps of a thousand negroes, which were put on board the fleet with all possible expedition.

This armament, which sailed from Jamaica on the first of July<sup>g</sup>, consisted of eight ships of the line, one of 50 guns, 12 frigates, &c.<sup>h</sup> and about 40 transports, on board of which;

f These were, the Carolina, Russell, Norfolk, Shrewsbury, Amelia, Torbay, Chichester, Hampton-Court, Burford, Windsor, and Falmouth; besides five frigates.

g London Gazette, Oct. 27.

h Viz.

VICE-ADMIRAL VERNON.

*Frigates.*

Shoreham,	Chester,	Captain Long	50 guns.
Alderney,	Grafton,	Rycant	70
Strombolo,	Boyne, (Admiral)	Watson	80
Phaeton,	Worcester,	Cleland	60
Bonetta,	Tilbury,	Dent	60
Princess Royal,			
Pempey,			
Triton.			

REAR-ADMIRAL SIR CHALONER OGLE.

Experiment,	Kent,	Mitchel	70
Sheerness,	Cumberland, (Adm.)	Norris	80
Vesuvius,	Tyger,	Herbert	60
Scarborough.	Montague,	Chambers	60

VOL. IV,

D

including

A. D. including blacks, were 3400 land forces. The fleet came to an  
 1741- anchor, on the 18th, in Walthenham harbour, on the south  
 side of the isle of Cuba. The admiral, fully determining to  
 annex for ever this fine island to the dominions of his Britannic  
 majesty, began by changing the name of *Walthenham* into that  
 of *Cumberland* harbour, in compliment to his royal highness  
 the duke. With submission to commanders of fleets, invading  
 an enemy's country, I should think it most advisable to avoid  
 this parade of giving names to places which were named before,  
 unless they are perfectly certain of being able to maintain their  
 conquest; because the spurious appellation, after their departure,  
 will be recollected only as a memorandum of their disgrace.  
 This harbour, howsoever called, was a very capacious and se-  
 cure asylum against the hurricanes so frequent in the West Indies  
 at this season of the year: it was therefore a desirable possession,  
 particularly as it was acquired without molestation. The island  
 of Cuba is not only the largest of the Antilles, but it is also  
 said to be the most fruitful and healthy of any in the West  
 Indies.

There were, at this time, twelve Spanish ships of the line at  
 the Havannah, a populous city on the west side of the island,  
 where the governor resides, and where there were strong forti-  
 fications and a numerous garrison. For these reasons, though  
 the conquest of the whole island was ultimately intended, it was  
 thought advisable to begin with St. Jago, a less considerable  
 city on the eastern coast. Walthenham harbour lies about eleven  
 leagues south-west from St. Jago, and distant by land about sixty  
 miles, on which side the city is almost entirely defenceless. Its  
 fortifications to the sea were not formidable, but the entrance  
 into the harbour is so extremely narrow, and the navigation so  
 dangerous, that nature has sufficiently secured it from a naval  
 attack. On these considerations it was resolved, in a general  
 council of war, held on board the admiral, on the 20th of July,  
 to land the troops immediately, and take the city of St. Jago  
 by surprize.

The troops were accordingly disembarked, and meeting with  
 no opposition, marched some miles up the country, and encamp-  
 ed on the banks of a navigable river. From this encampment  
 general Wentworth detached several reconnoitring parties,  
 which



which falling in with small bodies of the enemy, repulsed them A. D. with very little loss on either side. One of these reconnoitring <sup>1741</sup> parties, consisting of 150 Americans and negroes, commanded by major Dunster, penetrated as far as the village of Elleguava, where he continued some time; but not being supported by the main army, he returned to the camp. Meanwhile admiral Vernon dispatched part of his fleet to block up the port of St. Jago, and to watch the motions of the Spanish admiral at the Havannah, expecting with the utmost impatience the progress of the army. But, on the 5th of October, he had the mortification to receive a letter from general Wentworth, expressing his doubts of being able either to advance farther, or even to subsist his army much longer in the part which they then possessed. On the 9th the general called a council of war, the members of which were unanimously of opinion, that it was impossible to march farther into the country, without exposing the troops to certain ruin. The army nevertheless continued in its encampment till the 7th of November, when another council of war, consisting of the land-officers only, resolved, that the troops ought to be re-embarked with all possible expedition; and they were accordingly put on board their transports on the 20th, without the least molestation from the enemy.

Thus ended the *conquest* of the isle of Cuba, the inhabitants of which were, from the incomprehensible conduct of the British troops, at last persuaded that they landed without any hostile intentions. The good people of England grew extremely dissatisfied, impatient of news, and as much astonished at the cautious inactivity of general Wentworth, as they are at this moment (October the 5th, 1777\*) at the manœuvres of their general who is to conquer America. But the people of England, who reason only from appearance, and are guided solely by common sense, are very incompetent judges of the actions of great generals and great ministers. A general, though absolute at the head of his army, is a mere instrument in the hands of the prime minister, and must fight or not fight according to his private instructions. Some of the politicians, of the period of which I am now writing, were of opinion, that our making

\* General Howe sailed from New York on a secret expedition in August, and no accounts of him had arrived in England at this period.

A. D. conquests in the West Indies was disagreeable to France, and 1741. that a French war was to be avoided at all events: others did not scruple to insinuate, that the minister did all in his power to frustrate every attempt in the prosecution of a war into which he had been forced by the opposition; and a third class of people attributed this miscarriage entirely to the general's want of skill and resolution. Whatsoever might be the real cause of this very extraordinary supineness in the British troops, there are very few incidents in history which afford more apparent foundation for censure. St. Jago, which was not above four days march, for light troops, from Cumberland harbour, was in a great measure defenceless on the land side, and therefore might have been easily surprized. There was no army in the country to oppose an enemy, therefore why it was not immediately attempted is very difficult to conceive; unless we suppose that the officers had no inclination to make conquests in so fatal a climate, where, if they had succeeded, they would have been left in garrison. As to their resolution of returning to their ships, after remaining four months on the island, it was certainly proper; for by this time their number was so exceedingly decreased by the diseases of the climate, that probably, in another month, there would scarce have been a man left to bring home the tale of their disasters.

When we consider the number of men sacrificed to the climate in this, and in the preceding attempt against Carthagena, one cannot help wishing, if humanity be admissible in politics, that future ministers would not wantonly transport so many thousands of Europeans to a climate where it is almost impossible for them to exist. Possibly the political system of Great Britain may sometimes require such sacrifices; but one would hope, that nothing but the most inevitable necessity would authorize such destruction of the human species.

Before we quit this expedition, we cannot avoid inquiring into the design of it. That general Wentworth did not act his part in the reduction of St. Jago is pretty evident. But suppose that town had been taken, what then? Would the island have fallen in consequence? By no means. The Havannah was strongly fortified, well garrisoned, and defended by twelve ships of the line: so that any idea of reducing the whole island seems to be entire-

ly out of the question. What possible advantage could therefore A. D. result from taking St. Jago? It may be answered, That a rein- 1741. forcement of 2000 marines was expected from England. This supply, however, was a precarious expectation. They did not arrive at Jamaica till the 15th of January: and had they even arrived two months sooner, the army would still have been inadequate to the reduction of the Havannah, and consequently insufficient to conquer the island, or even to maintain their ground for any length of time; and yet the heroes of this expedition were so confident of success, that they not only entered upon it by giving English names to the enemy's harbours and rivers, but they actually invited new settlers from North America, and promised them grants of land.

From these considerations it follows, that, though general Wentworth may be justly censured for performing nothing, yet all he could possibly have done would have answered no rational purpose; and the expedition was no less injudiciously planned than pusillanimously executed.

The troops were re-embarked on the 20th of November, and on the 25th it was resolved in a general council of war, that the general, with the troops under his command, should return to Jamaica, and that the fleet should continue to cruize off Hispaniola in search of the expected reinforcement from England. The transports sailed on the 28th, and the admiral on the 6th of December, with the remaining squadron, consisting of eight ships of the line, a fire-ship, an hospital-ship, and two tenders. But before we take an intire leave of Cuba, it is necessary, in justice to the navy, to inform the reader, that, whilst the troops were on shore, the fleet was not quite inactive. The Worcester took a Spanish man of war of 24 guns, the Defiance took a register ship laden with provisions for Carthagena, and the Shoreham took another vessel with 70,000 pieces of eight on board.

Having closed the naval transactions of the year 1741, in the West Indies, I must recal the reader's attention to the progress of Mr. Anson, who, I before mentioned, had sailed from St. Helen's on the 18th September, 1740\*, with a squadron of

1 See governor Shirley's speech to the council at Boston, Sept. 23, 1741.

\* Anson's voyage by Walter, chap. 1.

A. D. five men of war, a small sloop, and two victuallers<sup>1</sup>. This 1740. expedition was originally planned prior to the declaration of war with Spain, and was rationally founded on a design of seizing the wealth of that kingdom at its source, and thereby depriving the enemy of the means of executing their hostile intentions. There were indeed at first two separate fleets destined for this service; one of which was to have been commanded by Mr. Cornwall, and the other by Mr. Anson. The first was to have sailed round Cape Horn into the South Seas, and the other directly to the East Indies. These two squadrons were to have met at Manilla, where they were to expect farther orders. This project seemed well calculated to humble the pride and insolence of Spain; because their remote settlements were, at this time, almost intirely defenceless, and several of the most important of them might probably have been surprized before they had intelligence of a war between the two nations. The original scheme, however, was laid aside, and it was determined that one squadron only should be sent to the South Seas, of which Mr. Anson should have the command.

This deviation from the original plan was no less displeasing to Mr. Anson than to Sir Charles Wager, by whom it was first proposed, and who was equally ignorant of the reasons which induced the ministry to lay it aside. However, on the 10th of January Mr. Anson received his commission as commodore of the squadron above-mentioned. The king's instructions were dated the 31st of the same month, which, nevertheless, Mr. Anson did not receive before the 28th of June following. He then went down to Portsmouth, where his squadron lay, in full expectation of sailing with the first fair wind; for though he knew that he was at least 300 men short of his complement, he had been assured that the deficiency would be supplied from Sir John Norris's fleet then at Spithead. But Sir John did not chuse to part with any of his sailors. This disappoint-

<sup>1</sup> Viz.	The Centurion,	60 guns,	400 men,	Geo. Anson commander,
	Gloucester,	50	300	Richard Norris,
	Severn,	50	300	Edward Legge,
	Pearl,	40	250	Matthew Mitchell,
	Wager,	28	160	Dauby Kidd,
	Tyrell,	8	100	Hon. Geo. Murray.

ment

ment was another cause of delay, and all that Mr. Anson could A. D. at last obtain was 170 men, ninety-eight of which were marines, and thirty-two from the hospitals. 1740

According to the first plan, Bland's intire regiment of foot and three independent companies were to have embarked on board this fleet. But it was afterwards resolved, that the land forces should consist of 500 out-pensioners of Chelsea hospital, of which only 259 of the most feeble were embarked, all those who were able to walk having deserted. On such occasions it is not easy to determine which most to execrate, the heads or hearts of those who are intrusted with the management of public affairs. It surely requires a very moderate degree of understanding to know that such troops, so far from being serviceable, must necessarily prove a burdensome obstruction to the success of an expedition, which, from its nature, required health, strength, and vigour, in their utmost degree of perfection. As to heart, can any thing be imagined more inhuman, than treacherously to drag from their peaceful habitations, and from the enjoyment of the scanty reward of past services, a number of decrepid old men, conscious of their inability to render further service to their country, and certain of an inglorious catastrophe? To supply the place of the 240 invalids who had deserted, 210 marines, new raised and totally undisciplined, were ordered on board, the last detachment of which embarked on the 8th of August, and on the 10th the Squadron sailed from Spithead to St. Helen's, there to wait for a fair wind.

If Mr. Anson's Squadron had now been suffered to proceed, he might have tided it down the channel without waiting for a fair wind; but the Lords Justices (the king being then at Hanover) ordered him to sail from St. Helen's in conjunction with the two fleets commanded by admiral Balchen and Sir Chaloner Ogle, amounting, in all, to 145 sail. Now it being impossible for so numerous a fleet to proceed, with safety, without an easterly wind, forty days more were spent in hourly expectation of a favourable breeze. At last, on the 9th of September, Mr. Anson received orders to proceed with his own Squadron, independent of the rest. He sailed on the 18th, and in four days got clear of the channel:

I have

A. D. 1740. I have dwelt a little upon this very extraordinary delay, and its several causes, because to this very unaccountable conduct of administration may rationally be ascribed the many hardships, dangers, and disappointments experienced in the progress of this expedition. It seems indeed exceedingly inconceivable, that an expedition appointed early in the month of January, should not have proceeded till late in September. But so it was, and the consequences were such as might easily have been foreseen. The squadron was not only, by this delay, obliged to double Cape Horn in the most tempestuous season of the year, but the Spaniards, in every part of the globe, were informed of its destination.

Having cleared the channel, Mr. Anson steered for the island of Madeira; but, as if all nature as well as art had conspired to retard his progress, he was forty days on a passage which is frequently made in ten. However, at last, after this tedious contention with adverse winds, he arrived at Madeira on the 25th of October. He immediately visited the governor, who informed him, that for several days past there had appeared to the westward of the island seven or eight men of war, which he supposed to be Spanish. Mr. Anson dispatched a sloop to reconnoitre this squadron, and the sloop returned without any intelligence. This was in truth a Spanish squadron of seven ships of the line and a Patache, which were sent for the sole purpose of counteracting Mr. Anson's operations in the South Seas. They had on board a regiment of foot, intended to strengthen some of their garrisons, and two of the ships were destined for the West Indies. Their commodore was Don Joseph Pizarro. Of the five ships that sailed for the South Seas, but one returned to Europe, the rest having either foundered at sea, or were wrecked or broken up in the course of the voyage.

On the 3d of November Mr. Anson left Madeira, and crossed the line on the 28th. He arrived at the island of St. Catherine, on the coast of Brazil, on the 21st of December, where he repaired such of his ships as had suffered in the voyage, took in wood and water, regaled his people with fresh provisions, and recovered some of his sick. But he neither found the climate so healthy, nor the Portuguese so hospitable,

as represented by former voyagers. The governor of the island A. D. perfidiously dispatched a vessel to the Spanish admiral, then at 1741 Buenos-Ayres, with an account of Mr. Anson's strength and condition, during his continuance in this neutral port.

The squadron sailed from St. Catherine's on the 18th of January, steering southward along the coast of America, towards Cape Horn. In so hazardous a voyage, at this season of the year, it was more than probable that the fleet would be separated, the commodore therefore appointed three several places of rendezvous: the first at St. Julian on the coast of Patagonia, the second at the island of Socoro in the South-seas, and the third at Juan Fernandez. Soon after their departure from St. Catherine's, the Pearl was separated, and did not rejoin the squadron till near a month after. On her return, lieutenant Salt informed Mr. Anson, that captain Kidd died on the 31st of January; that he had fallen in with the Spanish fleet above-mentioned, and that, mistaking one of their ships for the Centurion, he very narrowly escaped being taken. The English squadron anchored in the harbour of St. Julian on the 18th of February, principally with a design to repair the Tryal sloop, which had lost her main-mast in a squall. This business being finished, they sailed again on the 27th, and passed the Streights Le Maire on the 7th of March.

At this time their ships were in good condition, and their crews in tolerable health and spirits. They flattered themselves, that, as they were now entering into the Pacific Ocean, their dangers and difficulties would gradually vanish, and that Spanish treasures would soon reward their labour. But delusive were these expectations. They did not even clear the Streights without great danger, and they no sooner quitted the land than they found themselves exposed to all the horrors of impetuous winds, and waves turbulent and mountainous beyond all conception. They now began emphatically to execrate the causes of their late departure from Europe. This formidable squadron soon separated, never more to unite! After struggling with infinite variety of distress during two long months, the Centurion, Mr. Anson's ship on the last day of April, found herself to the northward of the Streights of Magellan, and therefore concluded that she had secured her passage round Cape Horn. On the 8th of

A. D. May she arrived off Socoro, the first rendezvous in the Pacific 1741. Ocean. She cruized there, in extreme bad weather, above a fortnight, in hopes of rejoining some of the squadron; but being disappointed in this expectation, stood for the island of Juan Fernandez, where she arrived on the 9th of June; but in so feeble a condition, that at this time not above twenty hands, officers included, were left capable of assisting in working the ship. The scurvy had made such terrible havoc among the crew, that out of 450, their complement when they passed Streight Le Maire, scarce half that number were now living, and most of these were sick in their hammocks. The Tryal sloop reached the island about the same time, in the same distressful situation, and they were joined by the Gloucester on the 23d of July, which ship had lost three fourths of her crew, and would certainly never have been able to reach the island, but for the assistance sent her by the commodore after she was in sight. The Anna Pink, their victualler, came in about the middle of August, and this was the last ship of the squadron they ever saw.

The missing ships were the Severn, the Pearl, and the Wager store-ship. The two first parted company off Cape Noir, and put back to the Brazils. The latter pursued her voyage towards the island of Socoro, the first rendezvous in the Pacific Ocean. She made the land on the western coast of South America, on the 14th of May, in latitude 47, and the next morning struck upon a sunken rock, and soon after bulged. Most of the crew were landed on this desolate island, where they remained five months, and then about eighty of the sailors, in a schooner built by lengthening the long-boat, sailed back for the Brazils, leaving captain Cheap and nineteen other persons on shore. These were by various accidents at last reduced to four, who were landed by an Indian on the coast of Chiloe, thence conveyed to St. Jago, where they continued a year, and three of them were finally sent to Europe on board a French ship, viz. captain Cheap, Mr. Byron\*, and Mr. Hamikon.

We now return to Mr. Anson's squadron at Juan Fernandez, consisting of the Centurion, the Gloucester, the Tryal sloop, and the Anna Pink. The last of these being found totally unfit for service, was broken up. By the beginning of September

\* Now admiral Byron.



the crews were pretty well recovered, though the whole number A. D. 1741.  
was, by this time, reduced to 335, boys included.

On the 19th of September, Mr. Anson with his small squadron sailed from the island of Juan Fernandez, with a design to cruize near the continent of Spanish America. On this cruize he took three trading vessels of no great value; but from the passengers on board he received such intelligence as determined him to surprize the town of Paita, in latitude  $50^{\circ} 12'$  south. It consisted of about 200 houses, and was defended by a small fort mounting eight guns. Fearful of alarming the inhabitants by the approach of his ships, he resolved to make the attempt by means of his boats only. Whilst the squadron was yet at too great a distance to be perceived by the enemy, about ten at night he detached fifty-eight men, commanded by lieutenant Brett, and conducted by two Spanish pilots. They landed without opposition, and soon took entire possession of the place. The governor, with most of the inhabitants, having had some previous notice from the ships in the harbour, fled into the country at their approach, and continued parading on the hill. The English remained three days on shore; during which time they sent all the treasure they could find on board their ships. They then set fire to the town and re-embarked, having lost only two men in the enterprize. The booty they carried off amounted to about 30,000 l. The loss sustained by the Spaniards was estimated at a million and a half of dollars.

Whilst Mr. Anson was thus engaged, the Gloucester, which had been sent on a cruize, took two Spanish prizes with specie on board amounting to 19,000 l. sterling. She joined the squadron two days after their departure from Paita, and they stood to the northward with a design to water at the island of Quibo, near the bay of Panama. At this island they arrived on the 4th of December. The commodore had indeed entertained some hopes of being reinforced from admiral Vernon's squadron across the isthmus of Darien; but he learnt, from the papers found on board one of his prizes, that the attack upon Carthagena had failed. These hopes therefore immediately vanished, and he now determined to steer for the coast of Mexico, in expectation of falling in with the galleon which he supposed to be on her passage from Manilla to Acapulco. The squad-

A. D. *dron* sailed from Quibo on the 12th of December, and did not 1741. make the coast of Mexico till the 29th of January. But, as this brings us to the transactions of the year 1742, we must now return to Europe, in order to take a view of the British navy nearer home to the end of the year 1741.

Whilst Vernon and Anson were thus employed in America, the admirals Sir John Norris and Haddock commanded two formidable fleets in Europe. The first of these commanders sailed from Spithead on the 27th of July with sixteen ships of the line, and, steering for the bay of Biscay, began to cruise upon the coast of Spain. With this formidable fleet he might with the utmost facility have injured the enemy most essentially, by ravaging their coast and destroying their maritime towns, which were almost totally defenceless. Not only the British nation in general, but the Spaniards themselves, and every person on board, except the admiral, were confident that so powerful a fleet had some capital object in view. But, to the astonishment of all the world, except those who were admitted behind the curtain, in less than a month, Sir John Norris returned to Spithead with half his fleet, without having executed, or even attempted, any thing worth relating. Part of the squadron continued cruising on the Spanish coast, and the Nassau and Lenox were sent to join admiral Haddock, who, with thirteen men of war, spent the whole summer cruising in the Mediterranean, without achieving any thing sufficient to furnish a tolerable Gazette. The causes assigned for his being stationed in that sea were, to prevent the junction of the Spanish fleet at Cadiz with that of France at Toulon, and to intercept the troops which were intended to be transported from Barcelona to Italy, in order to act against the queen of Hungary. But unfortunately neither of these purposes were answered.

What were the private instructions given to Norris and Haddock will probably always remain a secret. Their respective characters as men of abilities and resolution stand unimpeached; but abilities and resolution are not sufficient to complete the character of a naval commander. Probity is an indispensable ingredient. The man who is mean enough to accept of a command with ignominious restrictions, merits the obloquy which posterity will never fail to bestow.

On the 12th of October Sir John Norris sailed again for the A. D. coast of Spain with a fleet of ten men of war. The inhabitants <sup>1741</sup> of the towns along the shore were at first a little alarmed at his re-appearance; but, finding him now no less harmless than before, they beheld the English fleet as an agreeable spectacle, and were at length fully persuaded that he was sent to parade along their coast merely for their amusement.

Notwithstanding the formidable state of our navy at this period, our trade was so ill protected, that, since the commencement of the war, the Spaniards had taken no less than 372 of our trading vessels. The merchants of London and other ports were convinced that their losses were chiefly owing to neglect, and they remembered the declaration of the minister, That as the war was their own, they must take the consequences. I have before animadverted on the imprudence of intrusting the conduct of a war to a minister who is forced into it by opposition. Sir Robert Walpole did every thing in his power to avoid a war with Spain, which, with a little of that spirit which Cromwell on a like occasion would have exerted, he might have avoided. The Spaniards presumed on a knowledge of Sir Robert's pacific disposition. That nation had indeed great reason to be dissatisfied with the illicit trade carried on by English vessels in the West Indies. If, instead of guarding their coasts by armed ships, they had complained to the British ministry, and if the British ministry had taken effectual methods to prohibit this illicit trade, in consequence of such complaint, peace between the two nations might have been preserved, and Sir Robert Walpole would have remained prime minister. He was averse to the war, because he foresaw that it would destroy his influence, and I am afraid he wanted magnanimity to exert a degree of patriotic zeal sufficient to render successful a war which he did not approve<sup>m</sup>.

Sir Robert Walpole, though extremely unpopular, had hitherto stood secure under the shelter of the throne. But the people of England were now so dissatisfied with this unsuccessful war with Spain, and particularly with his total neglect of the queen of Hungary in her distress, that, at the general election of a new parliament, a considerable majority of the inde-

<sup>m</sup> For the state of the navy in the year 1741, see the Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. 2.

A. D. pendent voters, throughout the kingdom, opposed the court; 1742. many of Sir Robert's members were thrown out, and when the parliament met, the complexion of the house of commons was such, that a change of ministry became unavoidable. Sir Robert Walpole was created earl of Orford; he resigned all his employments, and found an asylum in the house of lords. The leading patriots in both houses were either taken into the new administration, or silenced by titles, so that all inquiry into the conduct of the late minister fell to the ground. Mr. Sandys was appointed chancellor of the exchequer, the duke of Newcastle and lord Carteret secretaries of state, and Mr. Pulteney was created earl of Bath.

These incidental matters being premised, we now return to the proper object of our history. Forty thousand seamen were voted for the service of the current year. The fleet in the Mediterranean, under admiral Haddock, consisted of twenty-nine men of war. He resigned to Lestock on account of his declining health; but the new ministry gave the command to admiral Mathews, who sailed from Spithead on the 16th of April, with the *Namur*, *Caroline*, *Russel*, and *Norfolk*. This admiral was also invested with the character of minister-plenipotentiary to the king of Sardinia and the states of Italy. As soon as he had assumed the command, being informed that five Spanish galleys lay at anchor in the bay of St. Tropez, he ordered captain Norris to attack and destroy them<sup>a</sup>; which service was immediately and effectually performed. The united fleet of France and Spain was at this time in the harbour of Toulon: it consisted of thirty-six ships of the line. The British fleet, being joined by rear-admiral Rowley, was somewhat superior in number of ships. Mr. Mathews's instructions were to block up the Toulon fleet, and by cruising on the coast to prevent any supplies being sent to the army in Provence. For this purpose, on the 2d of June, he stationed his two rear-admirals, Lestock and Rowley, with twenty-four ships, off the islands of Hieres, with orders to cruise for six weeks. Whilst Mathews continued at Villa Franca, a French man of war, passing by that port, in sight of the fleet, neglected to pay a proper compliment to the British flag. The admiral fired a gun as a

<sup>a</sup> Smollet's history of England, vol. vii. p. 314.

signal for her to bring to, the Frenchman continued obstinate. A. D. Upon which Mr. Mathews ordered one of his ships to pursue 1742. and sink him; which was immediately executed by the first broadside. Meanwhile a part of the British fleet<sup>o</sup>, cruizing on the coast of Catalonia, bombarded the towns of Mataro and Palamos, in both which they destroyed many houses and many of their inhabitants. What had these wretched inhabitants done to offend the king of England? But such are the laws of war! If Christian princes believed in the religion they profess, surely they would not wantonly involve their innocent subjects in such calamities. But, if they must needs quarrel and fight, it were devoutly to be wished, that, by some general law of nations, the inoffensive part of their subjects might be secured from insult and devastation.

In the beginning of August, admiral Mathews detached commodore Martin with a squadron to the bay of Naples, with orders to compel his Sicilian majesty to recal his troops from the Spanish army in Italy. The Neapolitans were thrown into the utmost consternation at the appearance of an English fleet; expecting every moment a more dreadful thunder than that of Vesuvius. The king, however, to save his capital, signed a paper delivered to him by Mr. Martin, by which he engaged immediately to recal his troops, and to observe a strict neutrality during the war. Having performed this service, the commodore rejoined the admiral in the road of Hieres, which was now the general rendezvous of the British fleet. Towards the end of August, Mr. Mathews, being informed that the Spaniards had collected a considerable magazine at St. Remo, in the Genoese territories, caused a party of sailors to be landed near that town in order to destroy it; and they executed their commission without any danger or difficulty. He likewise sent two ships with orders to take or destroy a Spanish man of war of the line, which lay at anchor at Ajaccio in the island of Corsica; but the Spaniard saved them the trouble, by first setting his men on shore, and then blowing up the ship.

Let us now take a temporary leave of Europe, in order to review the British fleet and army in the West Indies. We are to recollect, that, after the retreat from Carthageua, the troops

<sup>o</sup> Roll, vol. iii. p. 115.

A. D. under general Wentworth returned to Jamaica, and admiral 1742. Vernon with his Squadron continued cruizing off Hispaniola in expectation of a reinforcement from England. But not meeting with the convoy, he returned to Jamaica on the 5th of January, where, on the 15th, arrived also the Greenwich, St. Alban's, and the Fox, with the expected reinforcement from England of 2000 marines. The principal officers, both of the army and navy, ruminating, with regret, on their two last unsuccessful expeditions, were unanimously of opinion, that they could not with any degree of credit, return to England without some farther attempt against the enemy. General councils of war were frequently held, and it was at last determined to land at Porto-Bello, march across the isthmus of Darien, and take the rich town of Panama. But, though this resolution was taken early in January, it was upwards of two months before the troops and transports were ready for embarkation. However, they embarked at last, and the whole fleet came to an anchor in the harbour of Porto-Bello, in the evening of the 28th of March. This fleet consisted of eight sail of the line, three fire-ships, and two hospital ships, with forty transports, on board of which were 3000 land forces, and 500 negroes raised by governor Trelawney, who himself attended the expedition. As soon as the fleet came to an anchor, the governor of Porto-Bello marched directly to Panama with three companies of Spaniards and two companies of Mulattoes. There being nothing to oppose the landing of the troops, the admiral imagined that they would proceed without delay; but, to his great surprize, a council of the land-officers<sup>p</sup> resolved that the scheme was impracticable, and that it was therefore necessary to return to Jamaica. The reasons assigned for this resolution were, the season being too far advanced, their numbers being diminished by sickness and the separation of some of the transports, and their having received intelligence that the garrison of Panama had been lately reinforced. These reasons did not appear quite satisfactory to Mr. Vernon; nevertheless, as, in their general councils of war, there was a majority of land-officers, his opi-

<sup>p</sup> The officers present at this council of war were, general Wentworth, colonel Frazer, governor Trelawney, colonel Leighton, colonel Cope, colonel Daroure, and colonel Martin.

tion was of no importance. That their number was somewhat A. D. reduced is most certain; but there remained yet 2000 effective <sup>1742.</sup> men; an army more than sufficient, under a general of spirit and abilities, to have secured the treasure of Panama. Nothing can be more contemptible than this prudent timidity, when we consider that the attempt might have been made without the least risk, as there was no army in the whole country capable of meeting them in the field, and consequently, in case of a repulse, they might have returned without the least danger of being harassed in their retreat. Possibly these land officers would have had more resolution in a colder climate. The animal mercury in the human barometer seems to fall in proportion to its approximation to the sun. Be this as it may, the whole fleet sailed from Porto-Bello in the beginning of April, and arrived at Jamaica on the 15th of May. On the 23d of September the Gibraltar man of war arrived at Port Royal in that island, with a letter from the duke of Newcastle, ordering vice-admiral Vernon and general Wentworth to return immediately to England, and they returned accordingly.

Thus ended this vast enterprize against the Spanish settlements in America! in which enormous sums were expended, and ten thousand lives sacrificed, without the least benefit to the nation, or glory to the commanders. To inquire into the cause, or causes, of such a series of disappointments cannot, at this distance of time, be attributed to partiality or malevolence; and to neglect such inquiry were to frustrate the only rational design of history. The death of lord Cathcart was the first misfortune, and probably the foundation of all that followed. Though this could neither be foreseen nor prevented, yet it may teach future ministers of state, that it is not sufficient to attend solely to the abilities of the commander in chief; the second, and even the third in command, should also be men equal to the command of an army. That general Wentworth wanted that determined intrepid alacrity so necessary in the execution of such enterprizes is self-evident. As to Vernon, he certainly did not want resolution, but it is pretty certain that his contempt for Wentworth prevented him from acting so cordially and vigorously as he ought to have done. He wished to have had the sole direction of every operation, and I must do him the justice

A. D. to believe, that, if that had been the case, he would generally 1743. have succeeded.

I must now recal the reader's attention to Mr. Anson, whom we left in the Pacific Ocean, cruizing on the coast of Mexico<sup>9</sup>, in hourly expectation of falling in with the annual Spanish galleon in her passage from Manilla to Acapulco. In these hopes he was disappointed; for he was informed by three negroes whom he surprized in a canoe, off the harbour of Acapulco, that the galleon arrived on the 9th of January, about twenty days before the squadron fell in with the coast. But he had the satisfaction to learn also, that her return was fixed for the 3d of March. This information was joyfully received, as the specie for which she had sold her cargo would render her a much more valuable prize than she would have been before her arrival at Acapulco.

All hands were now employed in preparing for the reception of the galleon, not doubting but this immense reward of their former sufferings would soon be in their possession; for though the crews of the five ships amounted in all to no more than 330, boys included, and the hands on board the galleon were generally almost double that number; yet there was not a person on board the squadron who had any other doubt, or fear, than that of her not failing at the time appointed. Mr. Anson's fleet consisted of the *Centurion*, the *Gloucester*, the *Carmelo*, the *Carmin*, the *Tryal's* prize, and two cutters. With these five ships he formed a chain, commanding an extent of about twenty leagues, at such a distance from the harbour of Acapulco as not to be seen from the shore, and sent the two cutters every night nearer the shore, with orders to stand off again at the approach of day. In this disposition they expected the appointed day with the utmost impatience. The important day dawned at last, and every eye in the fleet gazed perpetually towards the land. The sun sunk beneath the horizon, and no ship appeared. Another day passed, and then a third, in fruitless expectation. In short, after waiting to no purpose till the 23d, the commodore rationally concluded, that the galleon was detained till the year following; and this was really the case, in-

<sup>9</sup> Anson's voyage, p. 338.



consequence of his barge having been seen by the enemy when A. D. 1743. he was sent to discover the harbour of Acapulco.

Having now remained on this station as long as his stores of wood and water would allow, Mr. Anson thought it expedient to prepare for his voyage to China, and it being determined to recruit his stores at Chequetan, about 30 leagues west of Acapulco, he steered directly for that harbour, where he arrived on the 7th of April. The first business here, after a vain attempt to open an intercourse with the natives, was to unload and destroy the Carmelo, the Carmin, and the Tryal's prize, in order to strengthen the crews of the men of war, so as to enable them to undertake, with any degree of safety, the voyage across the Pacific Ocean. The business of watering, &c. being now finished, the Centurion and the Gloucester weighed anchor on the 28th of April, and proceeded on their voyage to China. They lost sight of the American mountains on the 8th of May. After contending with repeated gales of contrary winds, the Gloucester, having lost most of her masts, became so leaky that, on the 15th of August, it was found impossible to keep her any longer above water. The crew was therefore removed to the Centurion, and the Gloucester was set on fire. On the 28th the Centurion arrived at Tinian, one of the Ladrone islands, in latitude  $15^{\circ}$  north, and  $115^{\circ}$  west of Acapulco. At this time so many of their people had perished, or were sick of the scurvy, that not quite a hundred men remained fit for duty. The number of the sick amounted to 128, most of which recovered soon after landing on this fertile, healthy, and beautiful island. Here they remained till the 21st of October, on which day, the crew being now in good health, the Centurion stood out to sea, steering directly for the island of Macoa, a Portuguese settlement near the mouth of the river Canton in China. She made the land on the 5th of November, and came to an anchor, on the 12th, in the road near the city of Macoa.

After many provoking delays and difficulties, Mr. Anson at last obtained permission from the Chinese government to repair his ship and replenish his store of provisions. This business being at length effected to his satisfaction, he put to sea on the 19th of April, 1743, and, though he had given out that he was

A. D. bound for Batavia, he had resolved once more to try to intercept the Acapulco ship in her passage to Manilla. With this intention he returned to the Phillippine islands, and cruized off Cape Espiritu Santo on the island of Samuel, that being the first land general made by the galleons. He continued cruizing on this station till the 20th of June, when, early in the morning, to the inexpressible joy of the whole crew, they discovered the long-expected galleon. The engagement soon began, and continued about two hours; after which the Spaniard struck, having sixty-seven men killed and eighty-four wounded. The Centurion had only two killed and seventeen wounded, who all recovered except one man. The treasure on board this galleon consisted of 1,313,843 pieces of eight, and 35,682 ounces of virgin silver, besides some cochineal and other merchandize, amounting in the whole to 313,000 l. sterling.

The commodore being now in possession of the reward of his toil, dangers, perseverance and resolution, with a crew on board whose felicity cannot be easily imagined, returned to the river of Canton, where he came to an anchor on the 14th of July. His sole intention being to lay in the stores necessary for his voyage to England, he applied immediately to the Chinese government for leave to victual his ship; but such is the suspicious folly and absurd policy of that people, that after five months delay he was at last obliged to insist on an audience of the viceroy of Canton, before he could be supplied. Immediately after this audience his stores were sent on board, and on the 7th of December the Centurion and her prize unmoored and fell down the river. On the 12th they anchored before the town of Macoa, where Mr. Anson sold the Spanish galleon for 6000 dollars, and on the 15th proceeded on his voyage. He arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 11th of March, and sailing from thence on the 3d of April, came to an anchor at Spithead on the 15th of June, 1744.

Having thus brought the fortunate Centurion safe to England, let us inquire into the exploits of our fleet in the West Indies. When admiral Vernon returned home, the command of the fleet devolved on Sir Chaloner Ogle, who in the month of February detached captain Knowles with eight men of war, having 400 land forces on board, with orders to make an attack

on

on the town of La Guira on the coast of Caraccas. Mr. A. D. Knowles accordingly proceeded<sup>1</sup>; he began his attack on the 17th about noon, and continued firing upon the town till night, without any other effect than that of destroying some houses and churches. His ships were so shattered that he was obliged to desist, and to sail for Curacoa in order to refit. It was said that the Spaniards lost 700 men on this occasion; it is however certain that the English squadron had near a hundred men killed, and three times that number wounded.

Mr. Knowles having miscarried in this attack, was unwilling to return without a farther attempt to revive the faded laurels of his country. His ships being repaired<sup>2</sup>, he resolved to make an attack upon Porto Cavallo. The Spaniards were apprized of his design, and had taken effectual measures for their defence. The garrison, consisting of sailors, Indians, Mulattoes and Blacks, amounted to about 2000 men; and the entrance into the harbour was secured by sunken vessels, and commanded by several fascine batteries. The squadron sailed from Curacoa on the 20th of March, but did not arrive off Porto Cavallo before the 15th of April. It was resolved to send in two men of war to cannonade the batteries, and the Lively and Eltham being immediately ordered upon this service, silenced the guns of the enemy before night. As soon as it was dark, the firing on both sides having ceased, major Lucas with 1200 men, sailors and soldiers, landed on the beach, and, marching along shore, took possession of one of the fascine batteries. The Spaniards being now alarmed, two guns were fired from another battery upon the assailants, which throwing them into confusion, they began to fire upon each other, and with great precipitation retired to their ships. The British spirit being not yet quite subdued by this miscarriage, it was resolved in a council of war to make a general attack upon the castle and batteries at the same time: accordingly, on the 24th this general attack was begun by seven men of war; the Assistance, Burford, Suffolk and Norwich battered the castle; and the Scarborough, Lively and Eltham fired upon the fascine batteries. The cannonading continued with great fury till nine at night, at which time

<sup>1</sup> London Gazette, June 7.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. June 14.

A. D. the commodore made a signal to cut. It was indeed high time, 1743. for he had now lost 200 men, and most of his ships had sustained considerable damage. His disgrace being now complete, commodore Knowles made the best of his way to Jamaica, where he remained inactive during the remainder of the year.

Such were the achievements of the British navy in the West Indies during the year 1743. We were indeed peculiarly unsuccessful in that part of the world, every attempt against the enemy, since the taking of Porto-Bello, having miscarried. Our commanders probably were not deficient in point of personal courage; but personal courage without abilities is frequently productive of disappointment and disgrace. In the Mediterranean the fleet under the command of admiral Mathews continued still on its station at Hieres, without performing any signal service, except preventing the French and Spanish fleets from sailing out of the harbour of Toulon.

The Spaniards in the course of this year took 262 British prizes, valued at 567,000 l. sterling; and we took from them 146 ships, worth about 754,000 l. including the Acapulco ship taken by Mr. Anson.

The naval promotions in this year were these: Sir John Norris made admiral of the red; John Balchen, Esq; admiral of the white; Thomas Mathews, Esq; vice-admiral of the red; Nicholas Haddock, Esq; vice-admiral of the white; Sir Chaloner Ogle, vice-admiral of the blue; James Steuart, Esq; rear-admiral of the red; Richard Lestock, Esq; rear-admiral of the white; Sir Charles Hardy, rear-admiral of the blue.

1744. Though, in the preceding year, the French army was defeated by the king of Great Britain in person; though the French and Spanish fleets were united in the Mediterranean, yet between England and France there was no war\*. However, in the beginning of the year 1744, both nations threw off the mask. The dissensions in the British parliament at this time ran high, and the people in general were discontented. The Popish emissaries and Jacobites, in different parts of the kingdom, persuaded the French ministry, that a revolution in favour of the Pretender might easily be effected, and cardinal Tencin gave

\* Smollet's history, vol. vii. p. 233.

ear to their project, fully persuaded that the attempt would, at A. D. least, cause a considerable diversion from the continent. Charles, 1744 the second son of the chevalier de St. George, was accordingly invited to Paris, where he arrived some time in the month of January. In the same month a fleet of twenty French men of war sailed up the English channel, and 7000 men were actually embarked at Dunkirk with a design to invade England. These proceedings being immediately known in this kingdom, Sir John Norris was ordered to take the command of the fleet at Spit-head, which being joined by several ships from Chatham, became superior to that of France. At the same time proper measures were taken for defending the coast in case of an invasion. The fleets of the two nations came within sight of each other; but the French admiral, conscious of his inferiority, thought fit to decline an engagement, and taking the advantage of a hard gale of wind, returned to the port from whence he sailed. Thus ended this famous invasion, which was intended to restore the unfortunate family of Stewart to the throne of their ancestors, and the young adventurer was obliged to postpone the assertion of his pretensions to a more favourable opportunity.

I must now conduct the reader to the grandest scene exhibited during the whole war: a scene which for magnificence and importance hath rarely been equalled in any age, on any sea. Seventy-four men of war in the Mediterranean, all in view, at the same time preparing to pour out their thunder, destructive of the human species, and decisive of the fate of nations! The great, the anxious expectation raised by such a prospect may be easily imagined; but the vast machinery was too stupendous for human management, and the heroic virtue of former ages was wanting to produce a glorious catastrophe.

The French and Spanish fleet, in the harbour of Toulon, consisted of twenty-eight sail of the line, and six frigates; that of England of twenty-eight ships of the line, ten frigates and two fire-ships, all moored in the bay of Hieres. The number of guns in the conjunct fleet was 1820, and of men 16,500; the guns on board the British fleet were 2490, and the number of men 15,000. But the number of ships of the line was equal, and these were equally manned. However, on a comparative  
view

A. D. view of the whole force of each squadron, there was an evident superiority in favour of the English, in justice to whom we must nevertheless remember, that, having been long at sea, their ships were foul, whilst those of the enemy were clean, and in fine sailing condition.

The courts of France and Spain, no longer able to support the disgrace of having their fleets blocked up in the harbour of Toulon, sent positive orders for them to proceed to sea at all events. On the 8th of February they were perceived to be under sail, the French admiral, De Court, having hoisted his flag on board the *Terrible*. Admiral Mathews immediately made a signal for unmooring, and the British fleet got under way on the 9th, with all possible expedition<sup>u</sup>. During this and the following day, these two tremendous fleets continued manœuvring in sight of each other, apparently endeavouring, like two land armies, to gain the advantage of situation. It was very evident that the French admiral had no great inclination to fight, and his ships sailed so well that he might easily have escaped; but the Spaniards, either from want of skill or want of hands, proceeded so tardily, that it was impossible to bring them off.

On the 11th, at break of day, the two fleets were at a greater distance than on the preceding day, and admiral Mathews had the mortification to find Mr. Lestock's division considerably astern. He now imagined that De Court's intention was to draw him towards the Straights, in expectation of a reinforcement from Brest; he therefore determined to engage the enemy as soon as possible, notwithstanding the irregularity of his line, his van and rear being at two great a distance from the centre. Accordingly, at half past eleven, admiral Mathews made the signal to engage; which signal Lestock did not think proper to repeat. Indeed he was, at this time, so far astern, that he had no enemy to engage. Admiral Mathews, with the centre of the English, was opposite to the enemy's rear, consisting of the Spanish squadron; and rear-admiral Rowley, who commanded the van, was abreast of the enemy's centre. Thus were the two fleets situated when admiral Mathews hoisted the signal for engaging. Himself in the *Namur*, and captain Cornwall in the *Marlborough*, bore down upon the Spanish admiral and the

<sup>u</sup> See the Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. 3.

Isabella, and began the attack about half past one o'clock. At A. D. the same time captain Forbes in the Norfolk engaged the Con-<sup>1744</sup>stant, and the Princessa, Somerset, Bedford, Dragon and Kingston fired at the Poder. About two o'clock, rear-admiral Rowley in the Barfleur, and captain Osborne in the Caroline, came up with the French admiral and the Ferme, and engaged them some time. The brave captain Cornwall lost both his legs by one shot, and was afterwards killed by the fall of a mast which was shot by the board. The Norfolk obliged the Constant to quit the line. Meanwhile the Princessa and Somerset were disabled by the Poder; but she being afterwards engaged by captain Hawke, in the Berwick, was dismasted and obliged to strike.

This irregular and partial conflict continued till night, when the French admiral, having collected his scattered fleet, bore away. The British fleet pursued them all the next day; but on the 13th, though they were yet in sight, admiral Mathews, being apprehensive that they intended to decoy him from the coast of Italy, made a signal to discontinue the chase. The French squadron put into Alicant on the 16th, and the Spaniards into Carthagenia on the day following. The British fleet, having spent some days, to no purpose, in looking out for the enemy, and afterwards in vainly attempting to regain their former station off Toulon, were at length obliged, by contrary winds, to bear away for the island of Minorca.

Thus ended, chiefly in smoke, this memorable battle, which seemed to threaten a most tremendous conflict, and which, from the superiority of the British fleet, ought to have annihilated the naval power of France and Spain. How it happened that so many of our captains were on that day *fascinated*, I know not; it is however very certain, that few of them were fairly engaged. Admiral Mathews was so dissatisfied with Lestock's conduct, that he suspended him from his command and sent him to England. That Lestock did not fight is most certain. He said in his defence, that he could not have engaged without breaking the line, which he was not authorized to do, because, though the signal for engaging was made, yet that for the line of battle was still abroad. That Mathews might be guilty of inattention in this particular without any impeachment of his abilities

D. A. abilities as a naval commander may surely be admitted, when we  
 1744. consider him bearing down upon the enemy and preparing to engage; but it was an excuse for declining an attack which an honest and brave man would never have pleaded. The misfortune originated in a continued misunderstanding between Mathews and Lestock; the latter of whom sacrificed his own reputation to the hope of ruining the former. In that hope he was but too successful; for, by the sentence of a court-martial in England, admiral Mathews was dismissed, and rendered incapable of serving the king; Lestock was honourably acquitted. The people of England were however of a very different opinion from the court, and posterity will do justice to both commanders. Mathews was doubtless a brave and an honest man; Lestock was an artful, vindictive disciplinarian. Whether he was really a coward, cannot be positively determined; but if he was not deficient in courage, he apparently wanted both honour and honesty. As second in command, he had no business with the propriety or impropriety of orders. The last order, or signal, like a last will and testament, supercedes all the preceding signals, and ought to be immediately obeyed, regardless of any apparent impropriety or absurdity. Every individual in a fleet or army, except the commander in chief, is a mere machine; whose business it is to execute, not to reason. The signal for the line of battle being abroad, when that for engaging was hoisted, was a pitiful excuse for not fighting. Lestock evidently saw, that the enemy was in our power, and though the admiral's signals might seem somewhat inconsistent, his intentions were not equivocal. Mathews might want head: Lestock certainly wanted heart. The one might deserve censure; the other ought to have been shot. By what extraordinary evidence, or other instigation, the members of the courts-martial who determined the fate of these admirals, were influenced, I know not; but their sentence must for ever remain a blot in the annals of this country.

The few naval commanders who distinguished themselves in this skirmish (for it hardly deserves the name of a battle) were, the admirals Mathews and Rowley, the captains Cornwall, Forbes, Osborne and Hawke. Few of the rest were much engaged. The Spaniards lost but one ship, the Poder, and about  
 a thou-



a thousand men killed and wounded. The British fleet lost a A. D. fire-ship, and in killed and wounded about four hundred. 1744.

Notwithstanding this naval engagement in the Mediterranean with the combined fleets of France and Spain, there was yet no declaration of war between Great Britain and France. This ceremony, however, was at last performed. On the 20th of March, war was declared at Paris, and on the 31st of the same month, at London. The navy of France consisted, at this time, of forty-five ships of the line, sixty-seven frigates and fifty-five galleys: that of England of ninety ships of the line, eighty-four frigates and fifty other vessels; in all two hundred and twenty-four ships of war. On the 23d of June the following promotions were made in the navy: Nicholas Haddock, Esq; and Sir Chaloner Ogle, appointed admirals of the blue; James Stuart, Esq; and Sir Charles Hardy, vice-admirals of the red; Thomas Davers, Esq; and the honourable George Clinton, vice-admirals of the white; William Rowley and William Martin, Esqrs; vice-admirals of the blue; Isaac Townsend, Esq; rear-admiral of the red; Henry Medley, Esq; rear-admiral of the white; George Anson, Esq; rear-admiral of the blue.

The first fleet which sailed from England after the declaration of war with France, was commanded by Sir Charles Hardy; it consisted of eleven ships of the line. He sailed from St. Helen's on the 18th of April, with a number of store-ships under his convoy for the relief of the Mediterranean fleet, which was in great want of stores and provisions. Having put into the port of Lisbon, and being there detained by contrary winds, the French ministry, acquainted with his destination, sent immediate orders for the Brest Squadron, of fourteen sail of the line, to block him up. This service was effectually performed, and Sir Charles remained in the Tagus.

On the 6th of July the British navy was reinforced by the arrival of twenty Dutch men of war at Portsmouth, under the command of admiral Bacherest. On the 15th they were joined by admiral Balchen with fourteen sail of the line<sup>x</sup>. This united

<sup>x</sup> BRITISH DIVISION.—Sir JOHN BALCHEN admiral.

Hampton-Court,	70 guns,	Victory,	110 guns,
Augusta,	60	Princess Amelia,	80.
Captain,	70		

A. D. united fleet sailed from Spithead on the 7th of August, to the relief of Sir Charles Hardy, and on the 9th of September came to an anchor off the rock of Lisbon. The French admiral having had previous intelligence of Balchen's approach, quitted his station. Sir Charles Hardy, with his convoy, joined the fleet, which immediately proceeded to Gibraltar, and, having reinforced the garrison, returned in search of the Brest squadron. But Mr. Rochambault, the French admiral, was, by this time, safe in the harbour of Cadiz. Sir John Balchen entered the bay of Biscay, in his return to England, on the 30th of September, and, on the 3d of October, his whole fleet was dispersed by a violent storm. Several of the ships suffered considerably, particularly the *Exeter* and the *Duke*, the first of which lost her main and mizen masts, and was under the necessity of throwing twelve of her guns overboard; and the latter had all her sails torn to pieces, and ten feet water in her hold. The whole fleet, however, except the admiral, arrived at St. Helen's on the 10th of October. The *Victory* was separated from the rest of the fleet on the 4th, after which she was never seen or heard of more. It is generally supposed that she struck upon a ridge of rocks, called the Caskets, near Alderney, as repeated signals of distress were heard by the inhabitants of that island; but it blew so violently that it was impossible to give her any assistance. Thus perished the finest first-rate man of war in the world, one of the best admirals in the British service, eleven hundred sailors, and a considerable number of volunteers, many of whom were of families of distinction.

Having now concluded the naval transactions in Europe during the year 1744, we direct our inquiries towards America,

Vice admiral MARTIN.		Vice-admiral STEWART.	
Falkland,	50 guns,	Sunderland,	60 guns,
Sussex,	70	Monmouth,	70
St. George,	90	Duke,	90
Exeter,	60	Prince Frederick,	60
		Princess Mary,	60
DUTCH DIVISION.			
Herlem,	70	Elam,	54
Dordrecht,	54	Assendelft,	54
Damiata,	64	Delft,	54
Leeuwarden,	54	Two frigates.	

where

where we left Sir Chaloner Ogle with the British fleet in the A. D. harbour of Port-Royal in Jamaica, and admiral de Torres, 1744. with that of Spain, at the Havannah. In these respective situations they both remained, not otherwise employed than in sending out cruizers to interrupt the trade of each nation; till, on the 4th of November, de Torres, with five men of war and as many galleons, richly laden, sailed for Europe, and arrived safe at Corunna on the 29th of December. These galleons brought a treasure of fifteen millions of piastres.

During this year the navy of England sustained some considerable losses. I have before mentioned the fate of the unfortunate Victory. On the 4th of June the Northumberland, a new ship of 70 guns and 480 men, commanded by captain Watson, cruizing in the channel, fell in with three French men of war, viz. the Mars of 68 guns and 580 men, commanded by Mons. de Perrier; the Constant of 60 guns and 480 men, commanded by Mons. Conflans; and the Venus of 26 guns and 250 men, commanded by Mons. de Dacher. The Northumberland sustained this very unequal conflict for three hours, with amazing activity and resolution; till, unfortunately, captain Watson was mortally wounded: she then struck her colours by order of the master, who was therefore afterwards sentenced by a court-martial, to spend the remainder of his life in the Marshalsea prison. The French ships lost 130 men in the engagement, and their rigging was so shattered, that they intended to sheer off as soon as it was dark. They carried the Northumberland in great triumph into Brest, where captain Watson died. The Seaford, captain Pic, the Solebay, captain Bury, both of 20 guns, and the Grampus sloop, were likewise taken by part of the Brest squadron in the course of this year.

Before I conclude the naval history of the year 1744, it is necessary to turn our eyes, for a moment, towards the East Indies. In consequence of an application to the lords of the admiralty, from the East India company, commodore Burnet, with four men of war, sailed from Portsmouth on the 5th of May,

7 Viz.	Deptford,	Commodore Burnet,	60 guns,
	Medway,	Captain Peyton,	60
	Preston,	Lord Northesk,	50
	Diamond,	Captain Moor,	20

and,

A. D. and, after his arrival in the East Indies, took a French fifty-  
1744. gun ship, and three rich prizes.

At the close of this year it appeared <sup>2</sup>, that, since the commencement of the war, the Spaniards had taken 786 British vessels, which were valued at 2,751,000 l.; and the British effects seized in Spain on the declaration of war, were estimated at 50,000 l. On the other hand, the number of Spanish ships taken by our men of war and privateers amounted to 850, supposed to be worth 2,550,000 l. To this if we add 2,181,000 l. the supposed amount of the prizes taken, fortifications destroyed, &c. by admiral Vernon and Mr. Anson, the loss sustained by Spain will exceed that of Great Britain 1,930,000 l. By a similar estimate of the account with France, there appeared above half a million sterling in our favour.

1745. Notwithstanding this balance, the reader has doubtless been disappointed to find our naval history of 1744 so unimportant, and, in the only engagement of consequence, so disgraceful. The fatal disagreement between Mathews and Lestock cannot be remembered without indignation; but the ministry, who knew their enmity, must have foreseen, and were therefore answerable for the consequence. That ministry was now changed. Lord Carteret resigned his place of secretary of state to the earl of Harrington, and the duke of Bedford was appointed first lord of the admiralty. Orders were immediately issued for every man of war in the several ports to be fitted for service. Admiral Davers was sent to protect Jamaica, the Mediterranean fleet was reinforced by admiral Medley, and the coast of Great Britain was secured by cruizers properly stationed.

Meanwhile a project was formed in the general assembly of Massachusetts in New England, to surprize the city of Louisburg, the capital of Cape Breton, and to drive the French intirely from that island. The ministry being made sensible of the importance of the enterprize, ordered commodore Warren to quit his station at the Leeward Islands, and join the American expedition. This armament was raised with so much secrecy and dispatch, that an army of 3850 volunteers, under the command

<sup>2</sup> Rolfe's history, vol. iii. p. 460.

of William Pepperel, Esq; was ready to embark at Boston be- A. D. fore the French government were apprized of their intention. 1745. They arrived at Canſo in Nova Scotia, under the convoy of ten American privateers, on the 2d of April, and on the 25th were joined by commodore Warren in the *Superbe* of 60 guns, attended by the *Lanceſton*, the *Eltham*, and the *Mermaid*, of 40 guns each. Canſo is within ſight of Cape Breton, and yet the inhabitants of that iſland were hitherto totally ignorant of their danger, till, on the 30th of April, they beheld this hoſtile fleet come to an anchor in Gabarus bay, about a league from Louiſburg. The governor immediately ſent a detachment of a hundred men to oppoſe the landing of the American troops; but the French were ſoon obliged to retire in confuſion, and the invaders diſembarked without the loſs of a ſingle man. General Pepperel immediately inveſted Louiſburg, whiſt Mr. Warren blocked up the harbour, convoyed ſeveral veſſels with ſtores and proviſions from Boſton, and intercepted a French man of war of 44 guns, and other ſhips intended to relieve the city. Meanwhile he was joined by the *Canterbury*, the *Sunderland*, and the *Cheſter*; the two firſt of ſixty guns, and the laſt a fifty-gun ſhip, and on the 11th of June the *Princeſs Mary*, the *Hector*, and the *Lark*, were alſo added to his fleet. On the 15th of June Monſ. Chambon, the governor of Louiſburg, ſent a flag of truce to the Britiſh camp, and the iſland of Cape Breton was ſurrendered to his Britanniſt majeſty.

It is impoſſible to conſider, without aſtoniſhment, the rapid ſucceſs of this handful of undiſciplined Northern Americans, againſt a city regularly fortified, with ſeveral very formidable batteries, and defended by twelve hundred regular troops, and ſkilful engineers. But the activity and reſolution of the beſiegers was ſuch, that ſkill and diſcipline fled before them like chaff before the wind. Can theſe Americans be a race of cowards? Are theſe a people to be bullied into obedience? Will the feeble attempts of a general Wentworth in the Weſt Indies bear any compariſon with the conqueſt of Louiſburg? It was indeed a very important conqueſt, as it diſpoſſeſſed the French of the fiſhery on the banks of Newfoundland, and deprived them of their only ſeaport in North America.

After

A.D. 1745. After the departure of commodore Warren for North America, the West India islands were left in a great measure defenceless, Sir Chaloner Ogle having returned to England with six men of war. For this reason, vice-admiral Townsend was ordered from the Mediterranean to the West Indies, with a squadron of eight ships<sup>a</sup>. He sailed from Gibraltar on the 2d of August, and arrived off Martinico on the 3d of October, when he was joined by the Pembroke of 60 guns, and the Woolwich of 50. Admiral Townsend having had information that the inhabitants of Martinico were in great distress for provisions, determined to remain upon this station in order to prevent their receiving any supplies from France: for though it be a maxim of honourable war, among Christian princes, not to murder such of each other's subjects as do not bear arms, it is nevertheless universally allowable to destroy by hunger as many peaceable men, women and children as they can. Gospel and political Christianity are very different religions.

On the 31st of October admiral Townsend discovered a fleet of forty sail of French ships turning the southern extremity of Martinico. It proved to be a fleet of merchant-men and store-ships sent to the relief of the French West India islands, under convoy of four men of war, commanded by commodore McNamarra; who, perceiving the superiority of his enemy, saved himself by running under the guns of Fort-Royal. The other three men of war also escaped; but near thirty of the other vessels were either taken, burnt, sunk, or drove on shore. The admiral likewise took a large privateer and three Dutch vessels bound from St. Eustatia to Martinico with provisions, by which he had the *happiness* of completing the famine on that island so intirely, that many thousand negroes and other inhabitants perished of hunger. Exploits of this nature must afford infinite satisfaction on reflection; especially when they contribute nothing either to the glory or emolument of the state!

<sup>a</sup> Viz.	Lenox,	70 guns,	Hampshire,	50 guns,
	Dreadnought,	60	Argyle,	50
	Worcester,	60	Severn,	50
	Kingston,	60	Gibraltar,	20
			C. met bomb.	

Such

Such were our naval exploits in the West Indies in the year A. D. 1745, exclusive of some valuable prizes taken by our men of war and privateers; the most considerable of which were, the Marquis d'Antin and the Lewis Erasmus, worth 70,000 l. taken by the Prince Frederic and the Duke privateers. In the course of this year the British navy suffered the loss of one sloop only, which was taken and carried into Martinico; whilst the British cruizers, in that part of the world, made captures of five French and two Spanish men of war.

In Europe nothing material happened to grace our annals. Admiral Martin commanded a squadron in the Channel, attending the motions of the Breſt fleet. Rear-admiral Medley failed from Spithead, with seven men of war, in order to reinforce admiral Rowley, who now commanded in the Mediterranean, and arrived at Minorca on the 10th of April. Thus strengthened, the vice-admiral proceeded, with twenty-four ships of the line, to block up the Spanish fleet at Carthagea, which he thereby prevented either from transporting troops to Italy or from joining the French squadron at Breſt. The republic of Genoa having declared against the queen of Hungary, admiral Rowley detached a part of his fleet, under the command of commodore Cooper, to bombard the towns upon their coast; several of these towns suffered considerably, particularly St. Remo, which he reduced almost to ashes.

The year 1746 affords not a single example of the naval superiority of Great Britain. It is nevertheless necessary, in order to preserve the thread of our history, to inform the reader where and how our several fleets were employed. Commodore Barnett, who died in the East Indies, was succeeded in the command of the squadron by captain Peyton. This squadron consisted of six men of war<sup>b</sup>, which were now stationed at Fort St. David. At Pondicherry the French had eight ships of

♂ <i>Viz.</i> Medway,	Commodore Peyton, of	60 guns
Preston,	Lord Northesk,	50
Harwich,	Captain Carteret,	50
Winchester,	Lord Thomas Bertie,	50
Medway's Prize,	Captain Griffith	40
Lively,	Captain Stevens,	20

A. D. force, under the command of *Monf. Bourdonnais*<sup>c</sup>: Commodore Peyton, cruising between the coast of Coromandel and the island of Ceylon, on the 25th of June, fell in with Bourdonnais, whose squadron was somewhat reduced by the loss of the *Insulaire*. Both squadrons prepared to engage, and about four in the afternoon they began to fire upon each other. The battle lasted till seven, it being then almost dark. The English had 14 men killed, and 46 wounded; the French 27 killed, and 53 wounded. Next morning the two fleets appeared at no great distance from each other; but neither of the commanders chose to renew the engagement. At four in the evening, Mr. Peyton called a council of war, which determined, as councils of war generally do, not to fight. When a commander in chief, invested with full power to act by his sole authority, calls a council of war, it creates a strong suspicion, that he wants to divide the blame of an unjustifiable action. The history of mankind affords innumerable examples of cowardice in collective bodies, of which every individual would have been horribly ashamed. The English squadron proceeded to the island of Ceylon, and the French to Pondicherry.

Our principal historian of these times<sup>d</sup> asserts, that the British squadron was superior to that of the enemy. This, however, was evidently not the case: therefore the imputation of cowardice seems to fall more particularly on the French commodore. But *Monf. Bourdonnais* had a greater object in view. The reduction of Madras promised a better harvest than disabling a few men of war. He appeared before that settlement on the 18th of August, and fired upon one of the ships belonging to the English East India company, chiefly with a design to try whether Mr. Peyton meant to defend the place. Our brave commodore, for reasons best known to himself, as soon as he was informed of this insult, and consequently of the danger of Madras, immediately disappeared, and sailed the Lord knows whither. *Monf. Bourdonnais*, with his whole squadron, re-

<sup>c</sup> Viz. The <i>Achilles</i> , of 74 guns,	<i>Phoenix</i> , of 44 guns,
Duc d'Orleans, 56	St. Louis, 44
Bourbon, 56	<i>Insulaire</i> , 20
Neptune, 44	<i>Lis</i> , 40

<sup>d</sup> Dr. Smoliet's history, vol. vii. p. 387.

turned



turned to Madras on the 3d of September, and in a short time A. D. made himself master of that important place. He would probably have succeeded in the reduction of every other British settlement on that coast, if he had not been prevented by a violent storm, which disabled a considerable part of his fleet. 1746.

In Europe, great designs were formed in the respective cabinets of England and France against each other's settlements in North America. The French determined to retake Louisbourg, and also to surprize Annapolis-Royal in Nova Scotia. The English, on the other hand, planned the reduction of Quebec. Both kingdoms were disappointed in their expectations. The French fleet, consisting of eleven ships of the line, three frigates, three fire-ships, and two bombs, came out of Brest on the 7th of May, but was prevented, by contrary winds, from proceeding on the voyage till the 22d of June. This fleet, which, with privateers and transports, made in all ninety-seven sail, was commanded by the duke d'Anville. He had on board 3500 land forces, under the command of brigadier-general Jonquiere. They did not make the coast of Acadia till the 10th of September, and on the 13th a storm arose, which, continuing some days, dispersed the fleet, and destroyed several of the transports; so that, on the 27th, they mustered at Chibouctou, their place of rendezvous, no more than seven ships of the line, two frigates, one fire-ship, one bomb-vessel, twelve privateers and eighteen transports, in all fifty-six sail. Whilst they lay in the harbour of Chibouctou, the mortality was so great, that, in a short space of time, they buried their commander in chief, their second in command, 1500 of the land forces, and 800 sailors. The number of their ships and of their men being thus reduced, they gave up every idea of conquest, and sailed for Europe on the 12th of October, where they arrived without farther accident.

Meanwhile the British ministry, as I have said above, had planned an expedition for the reduction of Quebec. For this purpose a considerable fleet was assembled at Portsmouth, in the month of April, and several regiments were actually embarked under the command of general Sinclair. The duke of Newcastle having previously communicated his intention of invading Canada to the northern provinces of America, requiring

A. D. their assistance, ten thousand men were immediately raised, and 1746. waited impatiently for the arrival of the British fleet. But such was the irresolution of the ministry at this period of our history, that the French were not only informed of their design, but had time to equip a squadron sufficient to counteract the entire project. This squadron, as we have seen above, sailed from France on the 22d of June. It was indeed ready to sail six weeks sooner, but was detained by contrary winds.

The British ministry having now relinquished their design against Canada, resolved to make a descent on the coast of Britany, in France, and particularly to destroy *Port l'Orient*, in order to ruin the French East India company. Lieutenant-general Sinclair commanded the land forces, and the command of the fleet was given to admiral Lestock, that very Lestock with whose conduct in the Mediterranean the reader is sufficiently acquainted. This armament consisted of sixteen ships of the line, eight frigates, and two bomb-vessels, besides store-ships and transports, on board of which were 5800 regular troops, including matrosses and bombardiers. After various unaccountable delays, during which the French were perfectly acquainted with their destination, they sailed at last from Plymouth on the 14th of September, and, steering directly for the coast of Britany, came to an anchor in Quimperlay-bay on the 18th. General Sinclair, with the troops under his command, landed on the 20th in the evening, without the least molestation, and the next morning took possession of a small town called Plémure, about a league from l'Orient, and there fixed his head-quarters. On the 22d, the British army having advanced to a rising ground about half a league from the city, general Sinclair summoned it to surrender; but the governor, not liking the conditions, determined to defend it. On the 25th the besiegers opened a battery of twelve cannon and a mortar, and the next day began to throw red-hot balls into the town, which took fire in several parts. During this time the besieged continued to fire from the ramparts with great alacrity: nevertheless, their fortifications were in such bad condition, that on the 27th they had resolved to beat a parley; when, to their infinite surprise and joy, the firing of the besiegers ceased. General Sinclair and his army retreated to their camp, leaving behind them four pieces of cannon, the mortar, and a considerable quantity of

of ammunition, and on the 28th reembarked without molesta- A. D.  
tion. Their loss during the siege amounted, in killed and 1746.  
wounded, to eighty men. Why the British general fled, with  
so much precipitation, from the arms of victory, is difficult to  
imagine, unless he was discouraged on finding the enterprize  
not seconded by the admiral, who, according to the original  
plan, was to have brought his ships to bear upon the town.  
Mr. Lestock said, in his defence, that the enemy had rendered  
his entrance into the harbour of Port, l'Orient impracticable.  
Probably the signals for advancing, as with Mathews in the  
Mediterranean, were not made in due form. But the cause of  
their miscarriage seems to have originated in not landing the  
troops immediately, and storming the town without the loss of  
a moment. When the British fleet came to an anchor, the gar-  
rison of Port l'Orient was very weak, and few of their guns  
were mounted on the ramparts. Some of our subsequent at-  
tempts on the coast of France have been frustrated by the same  
cause. The principal damage done to the enemy in this expo-  
dition was the destruction of the *Ardent*, a sixty-four gun ship,  
by the *Exeter*, who, after an obstinate engagement, ran her on  
shore, and afterwards set her on fire. Admiral Lestock, with  
his entire squadron, left the coast of France on the 8th of Oc-  
tober, and returned to England, without having in any degree  
fulfilled the intentions of the ministry, which were, to ruin the  
French East India company by destroying l'Orient, and, by di-  
viding of the French troops, to facilitate the invasion of Pro-  
vence by the Austrian army<sup>e</sup>.

In the West Indies<sup>f</sup> nothing of importance was attempted by  
any of the belligerent powers. We find, however, upon record  
one naval transaction, which, though it will not add much to  
our national renown, ought nevertheless to be remembered *in*  
*terrorem*. Vice-admiral Davers, who commanded on the Ja-  
maica station, having received intelligence that Mons. Conflans,  
with four men of war<sup>g</sup> and ninety merchantmen, from France,

<sup>e</sup> The celebrated David Hume attended general Sinclair, as his secretary, on  
this expedition.

<sup>f</sup> Roll, vol. iv. p. 360.

<sup>g</sup> *Viz.* The *Terrible* of 74 guns,  
 \_\_\_\_\_ 64  
 \_\_\_\_\_ 54  
 \_\_\_\_\_ 49

A. D. was hourly expected at Martinico, detached commodore Mitchell with five men of war and a sloop<sup>b</sup> to intercept him. He fell in with the French fleet on the 3d of August, and at seven in the evening was about a league to windward of them, when, instead of engaging the enemy, he made a signal to speak with the captains of his squadron, a majority of whom were of opinion, that it were best to defer the battle till next morning. These councils of war, as I have before observed, seldom forbode much heroism. When a man calls his friends about him, to ask them whether he shall fight to-day or to-morrow, there is great reason to believe that he had rather not fight at all. However, general orders were given to keep the enemy in sight, and to engage as soon as day-light should appear. But the French merchant vessels, being so unpolite as not to wait to be taken by the English, all escaped; and *Monf. Confians*, after exchanging a few shot with the British squadron, followed his convoy. Mr. Mitchell's caution was so great, that when night came on he ordered his ships to carry no lights, lest the French should be so rude as to give him chase. *Monf. Confians*, in his return to Europe, fell in with an English fleet from the Leeward islands, under the convoy of the *Woolwich* and *Severn*, of 50 guns each, the latter of which, after two hours engagement, he took and carried into Brest. Mitchell, being afterwards tried by a court-martial, was fined five years pay, and rendered incapable of future service.

The British fleet in the Mediterranean was this year commanded by vice-admiral Medley, whose principal transaction was the assistance which he gave to the Austrian general at the siege of Antibes. Admiral Martin, who commanded in the channel, was in the month of July succeeded by admiral Anson, who was appointed vice-admiral of the blue.

The French, in the course of this year, took from the English one man of war of 60 guns, two sloops, nine privateers, one East Indiaman, and 466 merchant-vessels. The Spaniards took 183 British ships. The British men of war and privateers

<sup>b</sup> Viz. *Stafford*, of 60 guns,  
*Lenox*, 64  
*Milford*, 44

*Plymouth*, of 60 guns,  
*Worcester*, 60  
*Drake sloop*.

took

took from the Spaniards twenty-two privateers, ten register-A. D. ships, and eighty-eight merchantmen. From the French we took seven men of war, ninety-one privateers, and 312 merchant-vessels.

The French ministry, notwithstanding their late disappointment in North America, were determined to increase their force in Canada, and, with the assistance of Canadians and Indians, to extend their territories by encroachments on the neighbouring provinces belonging to Great Britain. At the same time they formed a design against some of our settlements in the East Indies. For these purposes, in the beginning of the year 1747, a considerable armament was prepared at Brest; the squadron destined for America, under the command of Mons. Jonquiere, and that for the East Indies, commanded by Mons. de St. George. For greater security, these two fleets were to sail at the same time.

The British ministry, being informed of the strength and destination of this squadron, sent a superior fleet to the coast of France, commanded by vice-admiral Anson. He sailed from Plymouth on the 9th of April, and, cruising off Cape Finisterre, on the 3d of May fell in with the French fleet, consisting of thirty-eight sail, nine of which shortened sail and prepared to engage, whilst the rest bore away with all the sail they could make. Admiral Anson first formed his squadron in line of battle; but, perceiving the enemy begin to sheet off, he made a signal for his whole fleet to give chase, and engage promiscuously. The *Centurion* came up with the sternmost ship of the enemy about four in the afternoon. She was followed by the *Namur*, *Defiance*, and *Windsor*, who were soon warmly engaged with five of the French squadron. The *Centurion* had her main-top-mast shot away early in the action, which obliged her to drop astern; but she was soon repaired. The battle now became general, and the French maintained this very unequal conflict with great spirit and gallantry, till about seven in the evening, when the whole fleet struck their colours. The *Diamant* was the last French ship that submitted, after fighting the *Bristol* near three hours. In justice to our enemy it is necessary

A. D. to remember, that the squadron commanded by admiral Anson, 1747\* consisted of fourteen ships of the line, a frigate, a sloop, and a fire-ship, with 922 guns, and 6260 men on board<sup>†</sup>; and that Mons. de la Jonquiere had no more than five line-of-battle ships, and as many frigates, 442 guns, and 3171 men<sup>1</sup>. Admiral Anson in the mean time detached the Monmouth, the Yarmouth, and the Nottingham in pursuit of the convoy, and they returned with the Vigilant and Modeste both of twenty-two guns, the rest having made their escape. But though we acknowledge the great superiority of the British squadron, it is necessary to inform the reader, that no more than eight English ships were engaged. Captain Grenville, of the Defiance, a very gallant officer, lost his life in this engagement. Our number of killed and wounded amounted to 520; that of the enemy to

\* Lond. Gaz. May 16.

# ENGLISH.

Prince George,	Admiral Anson,	Captain Bentley,	90 guns.
Devonshire,	R. Adm. Warren,	— West,	66
Namur,	—	— Boscawen,	74
Monmouth,	—	— Harrison,	64
Prince Frederick,	—	— Norris,	64
Yarmouth,	—	— Bret,	64
Princess Louisa	—	— Watson,	60
Defiance,	—	— Grenville,	60
Nottingham,	—	— Saumarez,	60
Pembroke,	—	— Fincher,	60
Windsor,	—	— Hanway,	60
Centurion,	—	— Dennis,	50
Falkland,	—	— Barradel,	50
Bristol,	—	Hon. Wm. Montague,	50
Ambuscade,	—	— Jn. Montague,	40
Falcon Sloop,	—	— Guynn,	10
Vulcan fire-ship,	—	— Pattigrew,	

# IFRENCH.

Le Serieux,	—	Mons. de Jonquiere,	66
L'Invincible,	—	de St. George,	74
Le Diamant,	—	Hoquhart,	56
Le Jason,	—	Beccard,	52
Le Rubis,	—	M'Carty,	52
Le Gloire,	—	Saleffe,	44
L'Aolian,	—	de Santons,	30
Le Philipert,	—	Cellie,	30
Le Thetis,	—	Maçon,	20
Le Dartmouth,	—	Penoche,	18

700. Captain Boscawen was wounded in the shoulder by a A. D. musket-ball. Mons. de la Jonquiere was also wounded in the same part; one French captain was killed, and another lost a leg.

Admiral Anson returned to England, and brought the captive squadron safe to an anchor at Spithead. He set out immediately for London, where he was graciously received by the king, and afterwards created a peer. Rear-admiral Warren was made knight of the bath. The money taken on board of the French fleet was brought through the city of London in twenty waggons, and lodged in the bank.

About the middle of April, captain Fox in the Kent, with the Hampton-Court, the Eagle, the Lion, the Chester and the Hector, with two fire-ships, sailed on a cruize, designing to intercept a fleet of St. Domingo-men under the convoy of four French men of war. After cruizing a month between Ushant and Cape Finisterre, captain Fox fell in with this French fleet of 170 sail. They were immediately deserted by their men of war, and forty-six of them were taken.

The British ministry having received intelligence, that nine French men of war of the line<sup>1</sup> had sailed from Brest, in order to convoy a large fleet of merchant-men to the West Indies, ordered rear-admiral Hawke, with fourteen men of war<sup>2</sup>, to sail

1 Viz. Le Tonnant,	M. de Letenduer,	80 guns,
L' Intrepide,	Conte de Vaudreuil,	74
Le Terrible,	Conte Dague,	74
Le Monarque,	M. de Bedoyerre,	74
Le Neptune,	M. de Fromentierre,	70
Le Trident,	M. Demblimont,	64
Le Fougeux,	M. Davigneau,	64
Le Severn,	M. Durourel,	56
Le Content, belonging to the East India Company,		60
Besides several frigates.		

London Gazette extraordinary, October 26.

2 Viz. Devonshire, (admiral)	Captain Moore,	66 guns,
Kent,	—— Fox,	64
Edinburgh,	—— Cotes,	70
Yarmouth,	—— Saunders,	64
Princess Louisa,	—— Watson,	60
Windsor,	—— Hanway,	60
Lion,	—— Scot,	40

Vol. IV.

I

Tilbury,

A. D. fail immediately in quest of them. The admiral, with the fleet  
 1747. under his command, left Plymouth on the 9th of August. The French fleet, consisting of the above-mentioned men of war and 252 merchant vessels, sailed from the isle of Aix on the 6th of October, and on the 14th they had the misfortune to fall in with the British squadron. As soon as the French admiral became sensible of his situation, he made a signal for the trade to make the best of their way, with the *Content* and frigates, and for the rest of his squadron to prepare for battle. Admiral Hawke first made a signal to form the line; but finding the French begin to sheer off, he ordered his whole fleet to give chase, and engage as they came up with the enemy. The *Lion* and the *Louisa* began the conflict about noon, and were soon followed by the *Tilbury*, the *Eagle*, the *Yarmouth*, the *Windfor*, and the *Devonshire*, which ships particularly shared the danger and consequently the glory of the day.

About four o'clock four of the French squadron struck, viz. *le Neptune*, *le Monarque*, *le Foudreux*, and the *Severn*; at five *le Trident* followed their example, and *le Terrible* surrendered about seven. Be it however remembered, to the credit of their several commanders, that they maintained this unequal conflict with great spirit and resolution, and that they did not submit until they were intirely disabled. Their number of killed and wounded was about 800, and of prisoners 3300 men. *M. Fromentierre*, who commanded *le Neptune*, was among the slain, and their commander in chief was wounded in the leg and in the shoulder. The English had 154 killed, and 558 wounded. Captain Saumarez, of the *Nottingham*, was among the former. We lost no other officer of distinction. On the last day of October admiral Hawke brought these six French men of war to Portsmouth in triumph, and, in reward for his services, was soon after honoured with the order of the bath. He was dissatisfied with the behaviour of captain Fox in the engagement,

<i>Tilbury</i> ,	Captain Harland,	60 guns,
<i>Nottingham</i> ,	—— Saumarez,	60
<i>Defiance</i> ,	—— Bentley,	60
<i>Eagle</i> ,	—— Rodney,	60
<i>Gloucester</i> ,	—— Durel,	50
<i>Portland</i> ,	—— Stevens,	50

London Gazette extraordinary, October 26.

who



who was tried by a court-martial and deprived of his command; A. D. 1747-  
but he was restored about two years after.

Vice-admiral Medley, who commanded a fleet of fifteen ships of the line in the Mediterranean, died there on the 5th of August, and was succeeded by rear-admiral Byng, who continued to block up the Spanish squadron in Carthage, and to act in concert with the Austrian general on the coast of Italy. Rear-admiral Chambers commanded nine men of war in the channel, and on the 1st of November rear-admiral Boscawen sailed for the East Indies with six ships of the line.

During this year the English took from the French and Spaniards 644 prizes, among which were seventeen French and one Spanish men of war. The English vessels, including one man of war and a fire-ship, taken by the French and Spaniards, amounted to 551. The royal navy of Spain was now reduced to twenty-two ships of the line, and that of France to thirty-one; whilst the navy of Britain amounted to 126 sail of the line, besides seventy-five frigates.

Being arrived at the last year of this general war, I shall begin with the history of our naval transactions in the West Indies, where the British fleet was now commanded by rear-admiral Knowles. He sailed from Jamaica, on the 13th of February, with eight ships of the line<sup>a</sup>, on an expedition against St. Jago de Cuba; but being prevented by contrary winds from approaching that island, Port Louis, in Hispaniola, became the object of his hostile intentions, before which place he arrived on the 8th of March. Port Louis was defended by a strong fort, mounting seventy-eight guns, with a garrison of 600 men, commanded by M. de Chaleaunoye. The admiral began his attack immediately on his arrival, and after three hours violent cannonading, silenced the fort, which surrendered on the follow-

<sup>a</sup> Viz. Cornwall, (admiral)	Captain Chadwick,	80 guns,
Plymouth,	— Dent,	60
Elizabeth,	— Taylor,	64
Canterbury,	— Brodie,	60
Stafford,	— Rentone,	60
Warwick,	— Innes,	60
Worcester,	— Andrews,	60
Oxford,	— Toll,	50
Weasel and Merlin sloops.		

A. D. ing terms, viz. The garrison not to serve against the king of 1748. Great Britain or his allies during a year; that they should march out with their arms, but without cannon, mortars, or ammunition; that the officers should retain their private baggage and servants; that the town should be spared on certain conditions to be settled next morning. The garrison lost 160 men killed and wounded, and the fleet seventy. Among the slain were the captains Rentone and Cust, the last of whom was a volunteer in the expedition.

Admiral Knowles having entirely destroyed the fort, resumed his former design against St. Jago de Cuba, where he arrived on the 5th of April. The Plymouth and the Cornwall were ordered to enter the harbour; but finding a boom across, and four vessels filled with combustibles, after firing a few broadsides at the castle, they judged it prudent to desist, and the squadron returned to Jamaica. Captain Dent of the Plymouth was afterwards, at the request of the admiral, tried by a court-martial for not forcing the boom, and was honourably acquitted.

From this time the British and Spanish fleets were solely employed in cruising in detachments against the trade of each nation. Towards the latter end of August admiral Knowles, having received intelligence that the annual fleet from Vera Cruz was daily expected at the Havannah, began to cruise off the banks of Tortuga. The Spanish admiral Reggio, being informed of the vicinity of the English squadron, and of the consequent danger of the expected fleet, sailed from the Havannah, determined to give admiral Knowles battle. On the 29th of September,

#### BRITISH SQUADRON.

Cornwall, (Adm. Knowles),	Captain Taylor,	80 guns,
Lenox,	— Holmes,	56
Tilbury,	— Pawlett,	60
Strafford,	— Brodie,	60
Warwick,	— Innes,	60
Canterbury,	— Clarke,	60
Oxford,	— Toll,	50

440 — Men 25,000.

SPANISH.

tember, admiral Reggio saw, at a distance, fourteen sail of A. D. English merchant-men, under convoy of two men of war; he <sup>1748</sup> gave them chase, but they had the good fortune to escape, and the *Lenox*, having made a signal for his convoy to save themselves by flight, joined admiral Knowles, who, on the first of October, fell in with the Spanish squadron near the Havannah.

By a comparison of the two squadrons, it appears that in number of ships they were equal; that in number of guns the Spaniards were somewhat superior, and that in number of men they exceeded us by 1250<sup>p</sup>. The English admiral, though he had the advantage of the wind, did not at first seem over anxious to engage. About two o'clock the Spaniards began to fire at a distance. Admiral Knowles then made a signal for his squadron to bear down upon the enemy, and in less than half an hour most of the ships were engaged. The two admirals fought each other about half an hour, when admiral Knowles, having received some damage, fell astern and quitted the line. The *Conquistadore*, being likewise injured in her rigging, was also obliged to quit the line of battle, and before she had time to repair the damage she had sustained, she had the misfortune to be attacked by the British admiral, who had now replaced the yard and main-top-mast which he had lost in his engagement with the *Africa*. They fought for some time with great obstinacy. The Spanish captain was killed, and the *Conquistadore* finally struck to the *Cornwall*. The general action continued till eight in the evening, when the Spaniards began to edge away towards the Havannah, and got safe into port, except the *Conquistadore* and the *Africa*, which last, being entirely dismasted, was run on shore and blown up by the Spanish ad-

## SPANISH SQUADRON.

<i>Africa</i> ,	Admiral Reggio,	74 guns,
<i>Invincible</i> ,	Rear-admiral Spinola,	74
<i>Conquistadore</i> ,	Don de St. Justo,	64
<i>Dragon</i> ,	de la Paz,	64
<i>New Spain</i> ,	Barella,	64
<i>Royal Family</i> ,	Terrestal,	64
<i>Galga</i> ,	Garrateocha,	36

---

440—Men 4,150.

<sup>p</sup> *Roll*, vol. iv, p. 567.

miral.

A. D. miral. The Spaniards had in this action three captains and 748. eighty-six men killed, and 197 wounded; among the latter were admiral Reggio and fourteen other officers. The English, though they had fifty-nine killed and 120 wounded, were so fortunate as not to lose a single officer.

After this action the English captains were by no means satisfied with each other's conduct. The admiral himself was accused by some of them, and he was afterwards tried by a court-martial, and reprimanded for not hoisting his flag on board another ship after his own was disabled. It seems indeed very probable, notwithstanding the superiority of the enemy, that if the English fleet had been commanded by a Hawke, not a single Spaniard would have escaped.

This was the last naval action of importance previous to the general peace, which was finally concluded in the month of October 1748. The English, during this year, took three French and one Spanish men of war. The whole number of vessels taken from the Spaniards since the commencement of the war amounted to 1249; from the French to 2185: in all 3434. The entire loss of the English amounted to 3238 ships.

When we consider the immense value of these captures; when we reflect that most of this wealth was private property; when we count the number of lives that have been sacrificed during the war, and recollect that all the people sacrificed were neither consulted nor concerned in the contest: when we farther reflect, that all the princes who caused this horrible destruction of life and property, professed the religion of peace, charity, philanthropy and concord, we are disgusted with human nature, and laugh at the pretension of kings to Christianity. But what will the reader think of these mighty potentates, when he is told, that, after all this waste of blood and treasure, the war ended just where it began. None of the contending powers retained any part of their acquisitions, the 5th article of the treaty of peace having stipulated, that all conquests whatsoever should be restored; consequently Cape Breton was restored to the French, and Madras to the English. Great Britain had now increased her national debt to eighty millions, and her sole consolation was her having reduced the navy of France to a state of contemptible insignificance. As to that nation, the  
terms

terms of peace were easily settled, because we fought with her A. D. without any previous cause of quarrel or dispute; she began the 1748 war merely in consequence of her alliance with Spain: but against that nation we commenced hostilities, solely with a design to secure an uninterrupted navigation to our own settlements; nevertheless, strange as it may seem, this important article was entirely neglected, or forgotten, by our plenipotentiaries at Aix-la-Chapelle. Our right to cut logwood in Campeachy and Honduras, an article of equal consequence to this nation, was also left undetermined. But these were not the only examples of inattention (I cannot suppose it ignorance) in the British ministry at this very important period. The French, in consequence of possessing Canada, had, for many years past, been gradually extending the limits of that province, and, in open violation of the treaty of Utrecht, their encroachments were now flagrant and oppressive to our North American colonies: yet the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle was concluded without this notorious cause of complaint being mentioned by the British plenipotentiaries. The limits of Nova Scotia, another doubtful point, were also left undetermined.

From this precarious state of affairs it was easy to foresee, that the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle would be of no long duration; and, from the conduct of the French immediately after, their latent intentions were obvious. But before we proceed to develop the *principia* of the succeeding war, it is necessary to record certain transactions in the British parliament, which are immediately connected with our naval history.

The ministry<sup>a</sup>, for very wise reasons no doubt, brought a bill into parliament, under the title of, "A bill for reducing into "one act the laws relating to the navy;" by which the half pay officers were to be rendered subject to martial law. The sea-officers took the alarm: they assembled, and presented a petition to the house requesting to be heard by their counsel, and though the minister mustered sufficient strength to reject the petition, he thought proper to relinquish his unconstitutional attempt. Another plan<sup>b</sup>, relative to the navy, was also offered

<sup>a</sup> Smollet's continuation of the history of England, vol. i. p. 19.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. p. 34.

A. D. to the consideration of parliament, viz. to register a certain  
 1748. number of seamen, who, for an annual stipend, should be liable to serve when called upon. This project, being calculated to supersede the illegal necessity of pressing, appeared rational; nevertheless Mr. Pelham found it to be an unpopular measure, and therefore gave it up.

In the course of this year, 1748, the earl of Halifax, who presided at the board of trade, formed a design of establishing a colony in Nova Scotia. His project was approved, and four thousand adventurers, under the protection of colonel Cornwallis, sailed from England, and landed in the harbour of Chebuctou, in the neighbourhood of which they built a town and called it Halifax. The French were displeased with this exertion of our right, and, by way of counterbalance, attempted to make a settlement on the island of Tobago in the West Indies; but, in consequence of a spirited remonstrance to the court of Versailles, they thought proper to desist. They continued nevertheless to assert their title to St. Lucia, Tobago, and other neutral islands; and in North America their daily encroachments were so daring, that the subjects of Great Britain bordering on the French settlements, became very loud in their complaints to our ministry. The French ministry, according to custom, endeavoured to exculpate themselves by throwing the blame on the governor of Canada. After several ineffectual memorials and remonstrances delivered by our ambassador at Paris, commissaries, of each nation, were appointed, in the  
 1750. year 1750, to settle the limits of Acadia or Nova Scotia. These commissaries met at Paris, and proceeded with all that deliberate circumspection which is generally observed by servants of the public whose stipends must end with their commission. The French commissaries, in order to gain time by evading the main question, drew their antagonists into a discussion concerning the island of St. Lucia. Meanwhile the Indians bordering on the British dominions in North America, were instigated by the French to commence their barbarous hostilities against the defenceless inhabitants of our back-settlements. The Spaniards,  
 1752. in 1752, began again their former practice, of insolently interrupting our navigation in the West Indies by their Guarda Costas, and in Europe the navy both of France and Spain were daily

daily augmenting. In 1753 the conference at Paris, concerning the limits of Nova Scotia, ended without effect; and the French continued to extend their dominions in North America, by erecting a chain of forts along the lakes of Erie and Ontario, so as to connect their settlements on the Mississippi with Canada. At length, presuming on the amazing supineness of the British ministry, they crossed Lake Champlain, and built a fort at Crown-Point, in the province of New York. A reader of English history, who reflects as he reads, when he meets with such examples of inactivity, such want of vigilance, such impolitic procrastination, is necessarily led to inquire into the cause. Is this incelerity (if I may be allowed the word) to be attributed to our natural or political constitution? Be this as it may, what we lose in time, as in mechanics, we sometimes gain in power.

The French ministry, notwithstanding such flagrant acts of hostility in America, continued to amuse the court of London with repeated assurances of friendship. But early in the year 1755, certain intelligence was received, that a considerable fleet of men of war was preparing to sail from different ports in France, to America, with a formidable number of land forces on board. The British ministry, roused at this intelligence, gave immediate orders to equip a squadron of men of war, and, towards the latter end of April, admiral Boscawen, with eleven ships of the line, sailed for America. He was soon after followed by admiral Holbourne with six line-of-battle ships and one frigate, the ministry having received subsequent intelligence that the French fleet, intended for America, consisted of twenty-five ships of the line, &c. This fleet sailed from Brest in the beginning of May; but, after sailing a few leagues beyond the mouth of the English channel, Mons. Macnamara, the commander in chief, returned to Brest, with nine of the capital ships, and the rest proceeded to North America under the command of Mons. Bois de la Mothe. Admiral Boscawen's orders were, to attack the French fleet wheresoever he should meet with it. Being joined by admiral Holbourne, he continued cruising off the banks of Newfoundland, in hopes of intercepting the French squadron in their attempt to enter the gulf of St. Laurence. But the thick fog, so frequent on that coast,

A. D. favoured their enterprize, and *Monf. de la Mothe* arrived fast  
 1755 at *Quebec* with his whole Squadron, except the *Alcide* and the  
*Lys*, the first of sixty-four guns and 480 men; the second of  
 twenty-two, though pierced for sixty-four, with eight compa-  
 nies of land forces on board. These two unfortunate ships fell  
 in with the *Dunkirk*, captain *Howe*, and the *Defiance*, captain  
*Andrews*, both sixty-gun ships. After a resolute engagement of  
 five hours, the French ships struck. On board the *Lys* were  
 several officers of distinction, and about 80,000 l. sterling.

From the capture of these two ships the commencement of  
 the war may properly be dated. As soon as it was known in  
 Europe, the French ambassador left London, and the British  
 ministry issued general orders for making reprisals in every part  
 of the globe. In consequence of this resolution, three hundred  
 French merchantmen were taken and brought into England be-  
 fore the expiration of this year. On the 21st of July, Sir *Ed-  
 ward Hawke* sailed on a cruize to the westward, with eighteen  
 ships of the line, and, on the 14th of October, admiral *Byng*  
 proceeded to sea with twenty-two ships. Both these fleets re-  
 turned without meeting with any thing worth their attention.  
 The French nevertheless bore these insults with a degree of  
 patience which astonished all Europe. But they were not yet  
 prepared for war: their alliances were yet unformed, and their  
 fleet was much inferior to that of Great Britain, which, at this  
 time, consisted of 213 men of war<sup>s</sup>; that of France, including  
 ships upon the stocks, amounted to no more than 113<sup>t</sup>.

* VIZ: ENGLISH.			† FRENCH.	
1 ship of 120 guns and 1100 men.			6 ships of 86 guns each.	
5	100	1000 — each.	21	74
13	90	700	1	72
8	80	600	4	70
5	74	500	31	64
29	70	480	2	60
39	60	400	6	50
3	54	350	32 frigates	
28	50	300	113	
4	44	250		
35	40	250		
42	20	140		
31	from 18 to 10			
		100		

213 besides bomb ketches, fire-ships and tenders.



In the beginning of this year major-general Braddock sailed A. D. from Corke, with two regiments of foot, for Virginia, with 1755. orders to dispossess the French of the lands they had unjustly usurped. That general was totally defeated, and slain, by an ambuscade of Indians. I have before observed, that three hundred French merchantmen were brought into the ports of England; and all this without a declaration of war. The British ministry intended, by this extraordinary conduct, to validate their defensive alliances, and that the private property of the subjects of France might not suffer, the several cargoes of the ships taken were ordered not to be touched. But this appearance of strict justice was a mere chimera, because many of these cargoes consisted of perishable commodities, and consequently proved a loss to the owners, without producing any profit to those by whom they were taken. The French had evidently, and flagrantly, broken the bonds of peace by their audacious encroachments in America, so palpably contradictory to the tenor of treaties between the two nations. For the credit of England, I wish that a formal declaration of war had preceded the first act of hostility on our part. Previous to such declaration, every act of hostility is a piracy against the subjects of either nation. It is surely a sufficient hardship for subjects to be ruinously involved in the quarrels of their superiors after such quarrels are notorious; but to feel the horrible effects of such quarrels, whilst these superiors wear the mask of mutual friendship, requires a greater degree of patience than any subjects can be supposed to possess. We now proceed to the naval history of the year 1756.

About the close of the preceding year<sup>4</sup>, overtures of accommodation were made on the part of France by Monsr. Rouille, 1756. secretary of state, in a private letter to Mr. Fox, secretary of state to his Britannic majesty. But as this application was calculated only to amuse the English ministry, in order to gain time, it produced no other effect. The French, having now augmented their navy very considerably, ordered all the British subjects in France to depart the kingdom, published an edict for the encouragement of privateers, seized every English vessel in

<sup>4</sup> Smollet's history, p. 315.

A. D. their ports, and sent their crews to prison. They then began  
 1756. to threaten us with an invasion, and, in order to give this project an air of probability, were extremely busy in their military preparations on the coast of the British Channel. But the design of these preparations was merely to divert our attention from their armaments in the Mediterranean, where the blow was really intended. The king, the ministry, and their adherents in parliament, were, however, so completely duped by this French manœuvre, that Hessian and Hanoverian troops were sent for to protect us, and the repeated authentic information concerning the equipment and destination of the Toulon fleet totally disregarded. There never was a more flagrant example of obstinate insatiation.

At length the destination of the armament at Toulon was so certainly and universally known, that the British ministry started suddenly from their apathy, and, like men just awoken from a sound slumber, began to act before they had recovered their senses. It was known to all Europe, that the French squadron at Toulon consisted of thirteen ships of the line, and that 15,000 land forces were there ready for embarkation: nevertheless, only ten British ships were ordered for the Mediterranean, and the command was given to admiral Byng, a man whose courage and abilities were yet untried. With this squadron, not completely manned, without either hospital or fire-ship, he sailed from Spithead on the 7th of April. He had on board major-general Stuart, lord Effingham, colonel Cornwallis, and about forty inferior officers, whose regiments were in garrison at Minorca; also a regiment of soldiers to be landed at Gibraltar, and about a hundred recruits.

Admiral Byng arrived at Gibraltar on the 2d of May, where he found the *Louisa*, captain Edgecombe, who informed him, that he had been driven from Minorca by a French squadron of thirteen ships of the line, commanded by Monsi. Galissoniere, who had landed 15,000 men on that island. Admiral Byng gave immediate orders for the ships to complete their provisions and water with all possible expedition. On the third day after his arrival he went on shore to confer with general Fowke, the governor of Gibraltar, concerning a battalion to be transported

to Minorca. When the admiral demanded this battalion, the A. D. governor produced three several letters of instruction from the 1756. war-office, which he could neither reconcile with each other, nor with the order given by the admiralty to admiral Byng. These several orders, which were then compared and considered by a council of war at Gibraltar, being matter of importance to every future commander, whether at land or sea, I must intreat the reader, before he proceeds, to consider attentively admiral Byng's instructions, which he will find in the Appendix, N<sup>o</sup> 4. and then to read carefully the orders sent from the war-office to general Fowke, which he will find at the bottom of this page <sup>x</sup>.

The council of war, after mature deliberation, determined not to part with the battalion required; first, because it appeared by lord Barrington's first letter, that the Fuzileers were to remain at Gibraltar; and, secondly, because it was the opinion of the engineers who were well acquainted with Minorca, that to throw succours into St. Philips would be extremely difficult, if not impossible. But this resolution of the council of war was certainly wrong: for though it appeared by lord Barrington's first letter, that the Fuzileers were to remain at Gibraltar, that order was evidently contradicted by admiral Byng's instructions of a later date, and the order for sending a battalion to Minorca was repeated and confirmed. However, the council of war consented that one captain, six subalterns, five drums, and 235 privates, should be embarked, to supply the deficiency of those left at Minorca by captain Edgecombe, and without which his ships would have been of little service in case of an engagement. With regard to admiral Byng's orders, though they were in many respects conditional, his orders to save Minorca, at all events, were positive and explicit, and that he ought to have

<sup>x</sup> Lord Barrington's letter to general Fowke, dated the 21st of March, says, "The king has ordered the royal regiment of Fuzileers to embark immediately for Gibraltar, and that upon their arrival you are to make a detachment equal to a battalion, from the four regiments in garrison, to Minorca." The second letter, without any reference to the first, repeats the order for embarking a battalion on board the fleet for the relief of Minorca, in case there was any probability of its being attacked; and the third letter, dated April 1st, orders the governor to receive such women and children, belonging to the Fuzileers, as admiral Byng should think fit to land,

effected,

A. D. effected, even at the risk of sacrificing his whole fleet. Be this  
 1756. as it may, he sailed from Gibraltar on the 8th of May, and on the 16th arrived at Majorca, where he was joined by the Phoenix, captain Hervey, who confirmed the intelligence relative to the French fleet and the siege of St. Philips. He then steered for Minorca, but having contrary winds, did not make that island until the morning of the 19th, when he saw the English flag still flying on the castle of St. Philips, and several bomb-batteries playing upon it from the enemy's works. There have been British admirals, who, at such a prospect, would have sworn to relieve the garrison, or perish in the attempt! Early in the morning the admiral dispatched captain Hervey, in the Phoenix, with the Chesterfield and Dolphin, with orders to reconnoitre the entrance into the harbour, and, if possible, to convey a letter to general Blakeney<sup>7</sup>. Captain Hervey got round

<sup>7</sup> Though this letter from the admiral was not delivered, it is necessary that the reader should know its contents; because no circumstance ought to be concealed which may, in any degree, tend to elucidate a transaction attended by such serious consequences.

“ To General BLAKENEY.

“ Sir, I send you this by captain Hervey, of his majesty's ship Phoenix, who  
 “ has my orders to convey it to you, if possible, together with the inclosed  
 “ packet, which he received at Leghorn. I am extremely concerned to find  
 “ that captain Edgecombe was obliged to retire to Gibraltar with the ships un-  
 “ der his command, and that the French are landed, and St. Philips castle is  
 “ invested; as I flatter myself, had I fortunately been more timely in the Me-  
 “ diterranean, that I should have been able to have prevented the enemy's get-  
 “ ting a footing in the island of Minorca. I am to acquaint you, that general  
 “ Stuart, lord Effingham, and colonel Cornwallis, with about thirty officers,  
 “ and some recruits belonging to the different regiments now in garrison with  
 “ you, are on board the ships of the squadron; and shall be glad to know by  
 “ the return of the officer, what place you will think proper to have them  
 “ landed at. The royal regiment of English Fusiliers, commanded by lord  
 “ Robert Bertie, is likewise on board the squadron, destined, agreeable to my  
 “ orders, to serve on board the fleet in the Mediterranean, unless it should be  
 “ thought necessary, upon consultation with you, to land the regiment for the  
 “ defence of Minorca; but I must also inform you, should the Fusiliers be  
 “ landed, as they are part of the ship's complements, the marines having been  
 “ ordered by the lords commissioners of the admiralty on board of other ships  
 “ at Portsmouth, to make room for them, that it will disable the squadron  
 “ from acting against that of the enemy, which I am informed is cruising off  
 “ the island: however, I shall gladly embrace every opportunity of promoting  
 “ his majesty's service in the most effectual manner, and shall assist you to dis-  
 “ tress the enemy and defeat their designs to the utmost of my power.”

the Laire before nine o'clock in the morning : he made signals A. D. to the garrison for a boat to come off ; but without effect, and 1756. the admiral, about this time, discovering the French fleet, ordered him to return.

Admiral Byng now stood towards the enemy, and about two in the afternoon made a signal for the line of battle a-head. He then distributed as many seamen as could be spared from the frigates, on board such ships as were most in want of hands, and converted the Phoenix into a fire-ship. At seven in the evening the French squadron, being then about two leagues distant, tacked, in order to gain the weather-gage ; and the English admiral, not chusing to relinquish that advantage, also put his ships about.

On the 20th, in the morning, the weather being hazy, the French fleet could not be discovered ; but it became visible before noon, and at two o'clock admiral Byng made a signal to bear away two points from the wind and engage. Rear-admiral West was then at too great a distance to comply with both these orders ; he therefore bore away seven points from the wind, and with his whole division attacked the enemy with such impetuosity, that several of their ships were soon obliged to quit the line. Had admiral Byng been equally alert and eager to engage, it is most probable that the French fleet would have been defeated and Minorca saved ; but the enemy's centre keeping their station, and Byng's division not advancing, admiral West was prevented from pursuing his advantage, by the apprehension of being separated from the rest of the fleet.

After engaging about a quarter of an hour, the Intrepid, the sternmost ship of the van, lost her fore-top-mast, which, according to Byng's account of the action<sup>2</sup>, obliged his whole division to back their sails, to prevent their falling foul of each other. But when this matter came to be examined by the court-martial, it appeared, that immediately after the signal for engaging, whilst the van were bearing down upon the enemy, admiral Byng, in the Ramillies, edged away some points, by which means the Trident and Louisa got to windward of him,

<sup>2</sup> Byng's letter to the admiralty.

A. D. and that, in order to bring them again into their stations, he  
 1756. backed his mizen-top-sail, and endeavoured to back his main-  
 top-sail. This manœuvre necessarily retarded all the ships in his  
 division, and gave the enemy time to escape. M. Galiffoniere  
 seized the opportunity, and, his ships being clean, was soon out  
 of danger. But admiral Byng, before the engagement, ordered  
 the Deptford to quit the line, in order to reduce his line of bat-  
 tle to the same number of ships as that of the enemy. For this  
 apparent generosity he was censured by the court-martial: ne-  
 vertheless, there does not appear to be any great impropriety in  
 reserving one or more supernumerary ships in readiness to sup-  
 ply the place of those which may happen to be disabled.

From this relation of facts, the reader will easily perceive  
 that admiral Byng's conduct was by no means justifiable. The  
 naval reader sees very clearly, from the situation of the two  
 fleets, relative to the wind, that he might have fought if he  
 would; and, from a comparison of the two fleets<sup>a</sup>, it will seem  
 more than probable, to those who are acquainted with the su-  
 perior activity and skill of our sailors in time of action, that a  
 decisive victory might have been expected. Whether admiral

A. ENGLISH.			FRENCH.		
Ramilles,	90 guns,	780 men,	Foudroyant,	84 guns,	950 men,
Culloden,	74	600	La Couronne,	74	800
Buckingham,	68	535	Le Guerrier,	74	800
Lancaster,	66	520	Le Temeraire,	74	800
Trident,	64	500	Le Redoubtable,	74	800
Intrepid,	64	480	L'Hipopotham,	64	600
Captain,	64	480	Le Fier,	64	600
Revenge,	64	480	Le Triton,	64	600
Kingston,	60	400	Le Lion,	64	600
Defiance,	60	400	Le Content,	64	600
Louisa,	56	400	Le Sage,	64	600
Portland,	48	300	L'Orphée,	64	600
	<hr/>	<hr/>		<hr/>	<hr/>
	778	5875		828	8350
<i>Frigates.</i>			<i>Frigates.</i>		
Deptford,	46	280	La Juno,	46	300
Chesterfield,	40	250	La Rose,	30	250
Phoenix,	22	160	Gracieuse,	30	250
Dolphin,	22	160	La Topcz,	24	250
Experiment,	22	160	La Nymphe,	24	200
	<hr/>	<hr/>		<hr/>	<hr/>
	532	6885		982	9600

Byng's

Byng's conduct is justly to be ascribed to his excessive prudence, A. D. his want of skill, or want of courage, is difficult to determine. 1756. Probably these three causes operated in conjunction to produce the fatal effect. The only plausible argument that can be urged in extenuation of this admiral's conduct is, that he might be too strongly impressed by the recollection of Mathews and Le-stock; the first of whom was punished for fighting, not according to rule, and the latter not punished, though he did not fight at all.

The English had in this engagement 42 men killed, and 168 wounded; the French, 145 wounded, and 26 killed. Captain Andrews, of the *Defiance*, was the only officer of distinction, on board the English fleet, who lost his life on this occasion. The French fleet soon disappeared, and at eight in the evening admiral Byng made a signal for his squadron to bring to, at which time the *Intrepid* and the *Chesterfield* were missing; the former, being disabled, had been left to the care of the latter. They joined the fleet next morning, and the admiral then finding that three of his squadron were damaged in their masts, called a council of war, at which general Stuart, lord Effingham, lord Robert Bertie, and colonel Cornwallis were requested to assist.

The council of war being assembled on board of the *Ramillies*, the following questions were proposed by admiral Byng:

1. Whether an attack upon the French fleet gives any prospect of relieving Minorca? *Answer*. It would not.

2. If there was no French fleet cruising off Minorca, whether the English fleet could raise the siege? *Ans*. It could not.

3. Whether Gibraltar would not be in danger by any accident that may befall this fleet? *Ans*. It would be in danger.

4. Whether an attack with our fleet, in the present state of it, upon that of the French, will not endanger the safety of Gibraltar, and expose the trade of the Mediterranean to great hazard? *Ans*. It would.

5. Whether it is not for his Majesty's service that the fleet should immediately proceed for Gibraltar? *Ans*. It should proceed for Gibraltar.

Here I must beg leave to retard the progress of our history a few moments, for the sake of the naval reader, to whom the

D. A. consideration of these five resolutions may prove of infinite importance; these volumes being written with an intention, not only to record the heroic virtues of our naval commanders in times past; not only to amuse the gentlemen who in the present age have the honour to serve on board the British fleet; but to animate, to inform, to warn them, by example. I have, more than once, observed, and the truth of my observation hath been frequently confirmed, that councils of war seldom forebode much heroism. When a commander in chief, whose power is absolute, condescends to ask advice of his inferiors, it is a tacit acknowledgment, that his abilities are inadequate to his power; or, that he is inclined to do that for which he dares not be responsible. I do not believe there was one member of this council of war, who, if the five resolutions had depended upon his single voice, would not have answered them all in the negative. I am also of opinion, that if admiral Byng had been positively ordered to call no councils of war, but to relieve Minorca at all events, he would have destroyed the French fleet, saved the island, and would have returned triumphant to Britain; unless we are to suppose him constitutionally a coward; for, on such beings, the *present*, though *least*, danger always acts most powerfully.

How this council of war could determine, that it was impossible to relieve Minorca, without ever making the least attempt for that purpose, is incredibly astonishing! and indeed it afterwards appeared that the troops on board might have been landed at the Sally-port with little danger; for Mr. Boyd, commissary of the stores, actually went out to sea in a small boat in search of the English fleet, and returned safe to the garrison. As to their concern for the safety of Gibraltar, their apprehensions were in the highest degree ridiculous. According, however, to the fifth resolution of the council, admiral Byng returned with his fleet to Gibraltar, and Galiffoniere to his former station off Cape Mola. How the garrison of St. Philips must have been affected, when they beheld the French squadron return triumphant, and afterwards heard a *feu-de-joye* in the enemy's camp, may be easily conceived. The besiegers had doubtless cause to rejoice at the safe return of their fleet, though not on account of any victory obtained by their admiral; for the



two admirals evidently ran from each other. But though the A. D. garrison were not a little disappointed at Byng's disappearance, 1756. they nevertheless defended the castle till the 28th of June, when, despairing of relief from England, and rationally supposing that, in the great system of politics, they were intended to be sacrificed, after a gallant defence of ten weeks, the venerable Blakeney, on very honourable terms, surrendered Minorca to the *Duc de Richlieu*.

Admiral Byng arrived at Gibraltar on the 19th of June, where commodore Broderick had come to an anchor four days before, with a reinforcement of five ships of the line, which were sent from England in consequence of certain intelligence that the French were fitting out more ships at Toulon. Thus enforced, admiral Byng determined to return to Minorca, in hopes of being yet in time to relieve the garrison; but whilst he was with great activity preparing for this second enterprize, the *Antelope* of 50 guns arrived at Gibraltar. On board of this ship were admiral Hawke, admiral Saunders, and lord Tyrwally, who were commissioned to supersede and arrest admiral Byng, admiral West, and governor Fowke. The three delinquents were accordingly sent on board the *Antelope*, and returned prisoners to England. Sir Edward Hawke, with the fleet under his command, sailed immediately up the Mediterranean; but, upon his arrival off Minorca, he had the mortification to see the French flag flying on St. Philip's castle. As soon as the garrison surrendered, Galissoniere prudently retired to Toulon, where he remained in security, whilst Sir Edward Hawke asserted the naval empire of Great Britain, in sight of an enemy elated with the conquest of a small island, which they were afterwards obliged to relinquish. This conquest, though really insignificant, caused such extravagant exultation in France, such an universal *Te Deum laudamus*, that one might rationally have supposed the British empire totally annihilated.

The people of England, on the contrary, received the intelligence of Byng's retreat with general dissatisfaction, and, without the least inquiry into the conduct of the ministry, pointed all their resentment against that unfortunate admiral. The ministry joined in the cry, doing every thing in their power to divert the resentment of the people from themselves. That Mr.

A. D. Byng's conduct was, in many respects, extremely reprehensible, 1756. is most certain; but it is not less certain, that the ministry were equally inexcusable, for not sending troops to Minorca much sooner, and for not giving Byng a superior fleet. If the five ships, which afterwards failed to his assistance, had made part of his squadron, Galiffoniere must have fled at his approach, and Minorca would infallibly have been saved. But these reflections, whilst they fix eternal obloquy on the administration, do not exculpate the admiral. The exigency and importance of the service on which he was sent, required a sacrifice of prudence to necessity. Our history affords many examples of English fleets obtaining a complete victory over an enemy far superior in number of guns and men; but these victories were gained by admirals who disdained to calculate the exact weight of metal in each squadron.

Admiral Byng, admiral West, and general Fowke, arrived at Portsmouth on the 3d of July. The two latter were ordered to London, where admiral West was graciously received by the king. The general was tried for disobedience of orders in not sending a battalion to the relief of Minorca, and sentenced to be suspended for a year. The king confirmed the sentence, and afterwards dismissed him the service. Admiral Byng, after continuing some time in arrest at Portsmouth, was escorted to Greenwich-hospital, where he remained close prisoner till December, the time appointed for his trial, which began on the 28th of that month, on board the *St. George* in Portsmouth-harbour. The court-martial consisted of four admirals, and nine captains of the navy<sup>b</sup>. They sat a month, daily examining evidence for and against the prisoner. Admiral West deposed, that he saw no reason why the rear-division might not have engaged the enemy as close as did the van, and that there was no signal made for giving chase when the French sheered off. General Blakeney deposed, that, on the 20th of May, boats might have passed between the fleet and the garrison with great security, and that if the troops ordered for his relief had been landed, he could have held out till the arrival of Sir Ed-

<sup>b</sup> Admirals. Smith, president; Holbourne, Norris, Broderick.

Captains. Holmes, Boys, Simcoe, Bantley, Dennis, Geary, Moore, Dugles, Keppel.

ward Hawke. Captain Young, of the *Intrepid*, declared, that A. D. the loss of his fore-top-mast did not appear to prevent the rear- 1756. division from bearing down upon the enemy. Captain Gardiner deposed, that he advised the admiral to bear down, but without effect, and that, on the day of the action, the admiral took the command of the *Ramillies* intirely upon himself.— These cogent depositions were corroborated by other witnesses, and not in the least degree invalidated by any counter-evidence in favour of the delinquent. But some of the officers who were on board his ship, and near him during the engagement, deposed, that he discovered no signs of confusion, or want of personal courage, but that he gave his orders distinctly and with apparent coolness. The admiral's speech, in his defence, was inadequate to the great purpose of effacing the impression which the powerful evidence against him had made upon the court; they therefore found him guilty of a breach of that part of the twelfth article of war, which says,—“ or shall not do his utmost to take or destroy every ship which it shall be his duty to engage; and to assist and relieve all and every of his Majesty's ships which it shall be his duty to assist and relieve.” He was therefore sentenced to be shot, that being the punishment positively ordained for a breach of this article. The court, however, being of opinion, that admiral Byng's misconduct did not proceed from want of courage or disaffection, added to their report of their proceedings to the lords of the admiralty, a petition, requesting their lordships most earnestly to recommend him to his majesty's clemency.

The lords of the admiralty, having compared the sentence of the court-martial with the words of the twelfth article of war, which are, “ Every person in the fleet, who through *cowardice*, *negligence*, or *disaffection*, shall,” &c. and not finding the crime of *negligence* (he being acquitted of the other two) imputed by the court; were in doubt concerning the legality of the sentence: they therefore presented a memorial to the king, requesting that the opinion of the twelve judges might be taken. This was accordingly done, and the judges pronounced it a legal sentence. After the lords of the admiralty had signed a warrant for admiral Byng's execution, some of the members of the court-martial expressed a wish to be released, by act of parliament;

A. D. liament, from their oath of secrecy. A bill for this purpose 1756: accordingly passed the house of commons; but when it came to a second reading in the house of lords, each member of the court-martial was separately asked, whether he had any thing to reveal which might incline the king to pardon the delinquent. Strange as it may seem, they all answered in the negative! and, on the 14th of March, admiral John Byng was shot on board the *Monarque*, in the harbour of Portsmouth.

This exemplary punishment of a British admiral was an event so singular, and so interesting to every gentleman of the navy, that it seems to require a few reflections before we dismiss the subject. That the admiral did not exert his utmost power against the enemy, is very evident; and it is equally apparent, his fleet having the advantage of the wind, that his fighting or not fighting was matter of choice. Hence it necessarily follows, (allowing that he ought to have fought), that he either wanted judgment or resolution. As to judgment, it certainly required very little, to comprehend the importance of the service on which he was sent, and still less knowledge of the history of human events, not to know, that, when great achievements are required, something must be left to fortune, regardless of the calculation of chances. In all battles, whether at sea or in the field, fortuitous events have vast influence; but in naval combats most frequently, where a single accidental shot from a frigate may disable a first-rate man of war. This consideration is alone sufficient to determine any commander of a king's ship never to strike so long as he can swim, be the force of his antagonist ever so superior. Upon the whole, I believe we may equitably conclude, that admiral Byng was constitutionally deficient in that degree of personal intrepidity, by no means essential to the character of a private gentleman, but which is the *sine qua non* of a British admiral. The justice of punishing a man for a constitutional defect, rests solely on his accepting his commission with the articles of war in his hand. But admitting we are satisfied in regard to the justice of his execution, in consequence of the sentence of the court-martial, we are not at all satisfied with the conduct of that, or those members of that court, who were so anxious to be released from their oath of secrecy as to push an act for that purpose through the house of commons,

commons, and who afterwards spoke another language at the A. D. bar of the house of lords. Truth or calumny, I know not 1756. which, have whispered, that lord Anson's private remonstrances deprived Byng of that last ray of hope which some scruples of conscience gave him reason to expect, and the public of that satisfaction which they have still a right to demand. I say this, on a presumption that the person alluded to is now living.

The pursuit of this tragedy to its catastrophe having carried us somewhat beyond the limits of the year 1756, it is necessary that we should now resume the thread of our relation of such public transactions as were connected with the naval history of this kingdom. Hitherto we have seen Great Britain and France actually at war, without the ceremony of an open declaration. Why this formality was so long deferred, must be ascribed to political considerations, by which the ministers of both countries were influenced; but how cogent soever these considerations might seem to a cabinet-council, a piratical war between two polished nations is unjust to the subjects of both: the reason is obvious. However, in the beginning of May, the British ministry being no longer in doubt concerning the invasion of Minorca by the French, determined to throw off the mask; accordingly a declaration of war with that nation was published in London on the 18th, and on the 9th of June war with England was proclaimed at Paris. The state of the navy of Britain and of France, at this period, the reader will find in the Appendix, N<sup>o</sup> V. and VI.

One principal design of this history being to perpetuate the names of such naval commanders, as, by their gallant actions, deserve to be recorded in the annals of Britain, I cannot omit an engagement which happened on the 17th of May off Rochfort, between the Colchester of 50 guns, commanded by captain Obrian, and the Lime of 20 guns, with the Aquilon of 48 guns, M. de Maurville, and the Fidelle of 36 guns, M. de Litardais. They were within gun-shot about six in the evening, and soon came to so close an engagement, that the fore-sail of the Lime was set on fire by the wads of the Fidelle, against whom, notwithstanding the great inequality of strength, she maintained a glorious contest upwards of five hours; when the Fidelle retreated firing signals of distress, and the Lime was shattered

A. D. shattered as to be totally incapable of making any sail ahead: 1756. The Colchester and the Aquilon fought with equal intrepidity till past midnight, and then parted with mutual honour and satisfaction. Previous to this action, the Warwick of 60 guns; captain Shulldham, off Martinico, falling in with three French men of war, was taken after an obstinate running fight, in which she lost her captain and a considerable number of men.

Our fleet in North America was, during this year, not totally inactive. A French man of war of 50 guns, called *L'Arc-en-ciel*, with troops and military stores for Louisbourg, was taken off that port by the Norwich and Litchfield, both 50 gun ships, belonging to admiral Spry's squadron. On the 26th of July, off the harbour of Louisbourg, commodore Holmes on board the Grafton, with the Nottingham, and the Hornet and Jamaica sloops, fell in with two French men of war, *Le Hero*, *L'Illustre*, and two frigates, which were returning from Canada. The enemy being to windward, commodore Holmes stood towards them, as near the wind as he could lye. The French squadron bore down upon him till within about two leagues distance, when the English tacked with a design to cut the enemy off from the port of Louisbourg; but they hauled in for it, and came to an anchor about noon. Commodore Holmes pursued them till within a league of the harbour, where he laid to till four in the afternoon, and then made sail to the eastward. As soon as it was dark, he dispatched the Hornet sloop to Halifax, to request a reinforcement, being much inferior to the enemy. At eight next morning, the four French ships, above-mentioned, weighed anchor, sailed out of the harbour, and gave him chase. The English ships stood from the enemy at first, and fought them for some time with their stern chase only; but the Grafton at length hauled up her coursers, bunted her main-sail, and bore down upon the French commodore, who was also attacked by the Nottingham. *L'Illustre* was prevented from assisting his partner, by a sudden calm; but a breeze springing up soon after, the French were again united about seven in the evening. At dusk the battle ended, and the two squadrons separated. According to the French account of this engagement, the two English ships sheered off when they saw the *Illustre* coming up; and next morning *Monf. Beaufrer*, the commodore,

commodore, finding the English at too great a distance, returned A. D. to Louisbourg, with the loss of eighteen men killed and 1756. forty-eight wounded. The English account, on the contrary, assures us, that, before it grew dark, the French sheered off, and next morning prevented a renewal of the action, by bearing away right before the wind for Louisbourg. The *Hero* was considerably injured. The *Grafton* had six men killed and twenty-one wounded.

Spain, at this time, affected to entertain sentiments of sincere friendship towards England, and declared herself determined to maintain the strictest neutrality: nevertheless, she had so continued to augment her navy, that she had now forty-six ships of the line and twenty-two frigates almost fit for service. Notwithstanding the pacific declarations of the Spanish ministry, they were certainly determined, as soon as they were ready, if not to break with England, at least to try her patience to the utmost. Their guarda costas began again to insult our trade in the West Indies, and private orders were sent to prevent our cutting logwood in the bay of Honduras. But these insults being insufficient to provoke the British ministry, the haughty Spaniard resolved to seize the first opportunity of insulting us nearer home. A French privateer, having taken an English vessel on the coast of France, brought her to an anchor under the guns of Algezire, a Spanish fort in the bay of Gibraltar. Sir Edward Hawke, whose squadron was at this time riding in the bay, and lord Tyrawley governor of Gibraltar, immediately sent to demand the restitution of the prize, which the governor of Algezire positively refused. The English officer who carried this demand, being attended with a number of armed boats, with orders to cut the ship out and to bring her off at all events, proceeded to execute his orders, and carried his point; but the castle gave him so warm a reception, that above a hundred of his men were either killed or wounded. The court of Spain approved of the governor's conduct, and pretended to be violently offended with that of Sir Edward Hawke. England bore this outrage with Christian patience; and the impression it made was soon obliterated by a greater.

Human nature, collected into states and kingdoms, is influenced by the follies, passions, and vices, by which individuals

A. D. are generally governed. The man who wants spirit to resent 1756. the first affront, must soon expect a second; so it is with nations. The Antigallican, an English private ship of war, of thirty carriage and sixteen swivel guns, commanded by captain William Foster, cruising in the bay of Biscay, fell in with *Le Duc de Pentkievre*, a French East Indiaman, on the 26th of December, about seven leagues from Ferrol. The Indiaman, mounting fifty guns, being to windward, bore down upon the Antigallican, and fired a gun to bring her to. She then hoisted her colours. The Frenchman fired a broadside, and half another, with considerable effect, before the Antigallican returned the compliment. A close engagement ensued, and continued three hours, when the Indiaman struck, her captain and twelve men being killed, and her second captain and twenty-seven men wounded. They were, at this time, five leagues and a half distant from the light-house at Corunna. Captain Foster attempted to carry his prize into Lisbon; but, finding it impossible to make that port, he bore away for Cadiz, where as soon as he came to an anchor, the officers of the Indiaman deposed upon oath, that their ship was in all respects a legal prize. Nevertheless, incredible as it may seem, it was not long before orders were sent from Madrid, to the governor of Cadiz, to detain both the ships, under pretence that the Indiaman was taken so near a Spanish fort, as to be within the distance prescribed by the law of nations: a palpable falsehood! The Spaniards pretended to institute a legal inquiry; but their proceedings were a disgrace to all law and equity. Sir Benjamin Keene at Madrid, and Mr. Goldsworth, the English consul at Cadiz, in vain remonstrated. The court of Spain sent a positive order for the prize to be delivered to the French consul, and the governor of Cadiz, on captain Foster's refusing to strike the English colours, sent a sixty-gun ship and a thirty-gun frigate to reduce the *Pentkievre* to obedience by force. They continued firing upon her near two hours without a single shot being returned. They shot away his ensign, killed the sailor who was sent to strike his pendent, and wounded seven of his men. When the Spanish commodore had thus amused himself as long as he thought fit, captain Foster was told that he was not a prisoner, and suffered to go on shore, and was afterwards told by



by the governor, that he had no farther commands for him: A. D. nevertheless, he was next morning dragged to prison, and his crew, after being robbed and abused by the Spanish soldiers, were thrown into a loathsome dungeon, where they must inevitably have perished of hunger, but for the humanity of the British consul. These unhappy men were not released till the 5th of March. 1756.

It is as painful to the British historian as to the British reader to contemplate the insolent cruelty and injustice of Spain, in this and the preceding example. In some periods of our history, not a nation under heaven would have dared thus to provoke the growling lion. If this had happened in the reign of Elizabeth, or during Cromwell's usurpation, Cadiz would have been laid in ashes in less than a month. But the political system of the British ministry prompted them rather to submit to any insult, than risk a Spanish war. The people of England grew dissatisfied. Braddock's defeat, the reduction of Oswego and other forts in America; the loss of Minorca, and the absurd disposition and employment of the navy, convinced them, that the ministry were unequal to the importance of their several offices. The nation became clamorous, and the king at last consented to a partial change in the administration. Mr. Pitt was appointed secretary of state for the southern department, and Mr. Legge nominated chancellor of the exchequer.

The people in general were extremely delighted with this change of men, in full confidence that a change of measures would follow; but too much of the old leaven still remained, to suffer the full exertion of heroic patriotism. These new ministers began to act upon principles so diametrically opposite to those of their colleagues in administration, that they were hardly seated in their places before it was determined to remove them. They were represented to the king as two obstinate, wayward servants of the people, rather than of the crown, and totally ignorant of that political system by which Hanover could possibly be preserved. This artful appeal to his majesty's natural affections produced the desired effect. On the 5th of April Mr. Pitt, by the king's command, was dismissed the office of 1757.

A. D. secretary of state, and Mr. Legge, having also resigned, was 1757 succeeded by Lord Mansfield in the office of chancellor of the exchequer. This sudden dismissal of the two popular ministers, surprized and alarmed the nation, and, instead of disgracing them with the people, added infinitely to their popularity. Many of the principal cities in England complimented them with their freedom in gold boxes, and the whole nation became at last so clamorous, that it was soon thought advisable to solicit their re-acceptance of the places from which they had been so lately dismissed. Mr. Pitt resumed his office of secretary of state for the southern department on the 29th of June, and Mr. Legge that of chancellor of the exchequer a few days after. From this time Mr. Pitt became prime minister, though the principal persons who composed the late administration remained in office. The duke of Newcastle was appointed first lord of the treasury, Mr. Fox paymaster-general of the army, and lord Anson first lord of the admiralty.

The first expedition in which the navy bore a part, after Mr. Pitt's restoration, was that against Rochfort on the coast of France. This minister conceived, that the most effectual means of stopping the progress of the French armies in Germany, was, by ravaging their coast, to call their attention to the security of their own dominions. Rochfort became the first object of his attention in consequence of certain intelligence which he had received from a captain Clerk, who informed him, that, returning from Gibraltar in the year 1744, he visited Rochfort, with a design to make himself acquainted with its strength, in case of a war with France, and that he found its fortifications in so ruinous a state, that the town might be easily taken by a *coup-de-main*; presuming that it remained in the same situation, because the fortifications had not been repaired during the two last wars with England. Captain Clerk's information was afterwards laid before the cabinet, and Thierry, a French pilot, was closely examined, concerning the practicability of landing and protecting the troops.

The ministry being now perfectly satisfied, as to the feasibility and importance of the enterprize, a formidable fleet was immediately ordered to Spithead, and ten regiments of foot encamped on the Isle of Wight. Sir John Mordaunt, knight of the

the bath, commanded the troops, and Sir Edward Hawke the A. D. fleet of men of war ordered for this service. The destination <sup>1757</sup> of this formidable armament remained a profound secret for some time; it was, however, at last, generally understood to be intended against some part of the coast of France. Mr. Pitt, perfectly sensible of the necessity of proceeding with all possible expedition, repeatedly urged the departure of the fleet; but, either by some unaccountable fatality, or by the malignant influence of men who would damn their country to thwart the measures of an envied minister, the transports did not arrive at St. Helen's till the 4th of September. The troops were embarked with all possible expedition, and the fleet got under sail on the 8th. This entire armament consisted of sixteen ships of the line, seven frigates, two bomb-ketches, two fire-ships, two buccs, one horse-ship<sup>d</sup>, and fifty-five transports, besides the

<sup>d</sup> <i>Viz.</i>	Royal George,	Captain Buckle,	100 guns.
	Ramilles, (Adm. Hawke),	Hobbs,	90
	Neptune,	Galbraith,	90
	Namor,	Dennis,	90
	Royal William,	Taylor,	84
	Barfleur,	Graves,	80
	Princess Amelia,	Colby,	80
	Magnanime,	Howe,	74
	Torbay,	Keppel,	74
	Dublin,	Rodney,	74
	Burford,	Young,	70
	Alcide,	Douglas,	64
	America,	Byron,	60
	Achilles,	Barrington,	60
	Medway,	Proby,	60
	Dunkirk,	Digby,	60
<i>Frigates</i>	Southampton,	Gilchrist,	32
	Coventry,	Scrope,	28
	Cormorant,	Clive,	18
	Postillion,	Cooper,	18
	Beaver,	Gascoigne,	18
	Pelican,	O'Hara,	16
	Escort,	Irglis,	14
<i>Ramb</i>	Firedrake,	Edwards,	8
	Infernal,	Kensie,	8
<i>Fire-ship</i>	Pluto	Lindsay,	8
	Preserpine,	Banks,	8
<i>Buccs</i>	Canterbury,	Lampriere,	6

Jason,

A. D. Jason, a forty-gun ship, in the capacity of a transport, and the 1757. Chesterfield man of war for the purpose of repeating signals. On board of this fleet were ten regiments of foot, two regiments of marines, sixty light horse, and a formidable train of artillery. The admirals under Sir Edward Hawke were Knowles and Broderick, and under Sir John Mordaunt were the generals Conway and Cornwallis.

This fleet sailed from St. Helen's with a fair wind, and bore away to the westward. The troops on board were totally ignorant of their destination till the 15th, when the orders issued by Sir John Mordaunt relative to the nature of the service on which they were sent, put the matter out of doubt. They stood into the bay of Biscay, and on the 20th made the isle of Oléron. Sir Edward Hawke sent immediate orders for admiral Knowles to proceed with his division to Basque road, and to attack the fort on the isle of Aix; but the execution of this order, though positive, was suspended by a very extraordinary accident. Admiral Knowles, as soon as he received these orders, made sail with his division, and prepared his ships for action; but he had scarce taken leave of Sir Edward Hawke, before a French man of war was observed standing in towards the centre of the English fleet. When this singular phenomenon appeared, admiral Knowles was so deeply engaged in the important occupation of exhibiting the entertaining spectacle of a clear ship between decks to general Conway, that he could not possibly attend to the first information brought by his lieutenant. However, in consequence of a second message, the admiral came upon deck, and, with his spy-glass, discovered this strange sail to be a two-decked ship. Admiral Knowles recollecting that he was sent on a different service, but not recollecting the comparative importance of that service, was in doubt whether he should make a signal for any of his division to chase, during this hesitation the French ship discovered her mistake, tacked and bore away with all the sail she could crowd. The admiral continued still to doubt, and doubted so long, that all possibility of coming up with her before night vanished. At last, however, admiral Knowles ordered the *Magnanime* and the *Torbay* to give chase.

§ Knowles's answer on Sir John Mordaunt's trial.

They

They chased as long as they could see their object, and next A. D. morning rejoined the fleet.

1757-

On the 21<sup>st</sup> admiral Knowles, with the division under his command, made sail towards the land; but the weather proving hazy, the pilots refused to carry the fleet in. This evening the troops were in full expectation of landing; but about seven o'clock the ships tacked, and came to an anchor near the Isle of Rheë. On the 22<sup>d</sup> the fleet entered the bay called the Road of Basque, between the islands of Rheë and Oleron, and there remained at anchor during the night. About eight next morning, admiral Knowles in the Neptune, with the Magnanime, the Barfleur, America, Alcide, Burford, and Royal William, made sail towards Aix, a small island in the mouth of the river leading up to Rochfort. Captain Howe in the Magnanime led the van. At half past twelve, the fort upon the island began to fire upon him, and his people soon grew impatient to return the compliment. But he continued to advance with the utmost composure, without firing a single shot, continually urging his pilot to lay the ship as close to the fort as possible. The moment he came abreast of the battery, he let go his anchors, and fired a broadside, which drove most of the Frenchmen from their guns. From this time the fire from the battery gradually ceased. It was, however, near an hour before she struck her colours. That this island should prove so easy a conquest will not appear surprising, when the reader is informed, that the battery so furiously attacked by the Magnanime consisted of no more than six iron cannons, mounted *en barbets*; so that the gunners were so entirely exposed, that captain (now lord) Howe might have taken the fort in his long-boat. There were indeed near thirty pieces of cannon upon the island; but the six above-mentioned were all that were brought to bear upon the ships. The fortifications of Aix were planned by the great Vauban; but the execution of that plan had been so totally neglected, that the island was, at this time, entirely defenceless.

As soon as the French colours were struck, an English regiment landed and took possession of the important conquest. Aix is an island about five or six miles in circumference, entirely covered with vines, which yield a meagre wine, the common beverage

A. D. beverage of the country. The garrison consisted of about <sup>five</sup>  
 1757 hundred men, part soldiers and part sailors, most of which had  
 been landed from the continent on the day preceding the attack,  
 and were now made prisoners of war. As to the behaviour  
 of the English regiment which took possession of the fort, I will  
 tell it in the language of a writer, who served as a volunteer on  
 this expedition.—“I wish,” says the author, “I could with  
 “truth report, that our people behaved with the moderation  
 “they ought to have done: and I am sorry, for the cre-  
 “dit of our discipline, that the severe orders issued by the ge-  
 “neral were not as severely executed: Both our soldiers and  
 “sailors were suffered to get abominably drunk; and, in con-  
 “sequence of that, cruelly to insult the poor sufferers: This  
 “little island became, in a very few hours, a most shocking  
 “scene of devastation; even the church was suffered to be pil-  
 “laged, the poor priest robbed of his little library; and his  
 “robes became a masquerading habit to the drunken tars.”  
 Such behaviour is not surprising in a class of men who act with-  
 out reflection, and in whom reflection would be a misfortune  
 to themselves and to their country; but that such conduct  
 should have been suffered by their superiors, is wonderful in-  
 deed! That men flushed with wine and victory are with diffi-  
 culty restrained, I readily acknowledge; but the difficulty of  
 preventing a crime, which admits of no palliation, is a very  
 feeble apology.

The conquest of the isle of Aix<sup>†</sup>, though of little importance,  
 considered as an omen of success, gave vast spirits to the whole  
 fleet, and inspired the troops with such ardour, that, if they  
 had been immediately landed on the continent, they would prob-  
 ably have succeeded in any possible attempt. Five days from  
 this period were spent in sounding the depth of water, in pru-  
 dential deliberations and sage councils of war; so that eight  
 days were now elapsed since the first appearance of the fleet on  
 the coast of France, during which time, we may rationally sup-  
 pose, that the enemy had made no inconsiderable progress in  
 preparing for a vigorous defence. But before we proceed to  
 the conclusion of this grand expedition, it is necessary to relate,

<sup>†</sup> Genuine account of the late expedition, p. 44.

<sup>‡</sup> Ibid.

more particularly, the transactions of the five days from the taking of the isle of Aix. A. D. 1757.

On the 23d, in the afternoon, immediately after the *glorious* conquest of that *important* fortress, Sir Edward Hawke sent admiral Broderick, with captains Dennis, Douglas, and Buckle, to reconnoitre and sound the coast, in order to find a proper place for landing the troops which were intended to destroy the shipping, decks, and naval stores at Rochfort. These gentlemen, having spent the remainder of that day, and the following night, in the laborious execution of their commission, returned to the fleet about four in the evening of the 24th, and reported, that from Angolin to Chataillon there was a hard sandy beach; also a small bay farther to the eastward, at either of which places troops might be conveniently landed, and that there was sufficient depth of water, and clear ground for the transports to anchor at the distance of a mile and a half from the shore. They also reported, that on the south side of the bay there was a square fort; on the north-west side of which were nine embrasures, and two on the north-east. This fort had been previously reconnoitred by colonel Wolfe, who was of opinion, that it might be easily silenced by a single ship, or, at least, so engaged, that the troops might land on each side of it with very little interruption. The pilot of the *Magnanime* made no doubt of carrying his ship near enough to batter the fort. From these several reports Sir Edward Hawke and Sir John Mordaunt seemed determined to proceed to the execution of colonel Wolfe's plan. But this resolution was afterwards staggered by general Conway, who, after a tedious examination of several prisoners from the isle of Aix, reported that, according to the information of these prisoners, the attempt against Rochfort would be attended with danger and difficulty<sup>b</sup>. This suspicious information determined the two commanders to have recourse to that bane of our national glory, a council of war. If Wolfe had commanded these brave troops, would he, on this occasion, have called a council of war? The report of prisoners ought not to be entirely disregarded; but a wise general, or admiral, will listen to their information with the utmost

<sup>b</sup> Entick, vol. ii. p. 321.

A. D. suspicion. Be this as it may, if these prisoners produced the 1757 council of war, they ought to have been amply rewarded by the king of France as the saviours of Rochfort.

The members of this memorable council were, Sir Edward Hawke, Sir John Mordaunt, admiral Knowles, general Conway, admiral Broderick, general Cornwallis, captain Rodney, colonel Howard. They met on the 25th, on board the Neptune, and, after mature deliberation, determined, unanimously, that an attempt upon Rochfort was neither *advisable* nor *practicable*. That it was unadvisable, if impracticable, no body will presume to doubt. Nevertheless, admiral Knowles was sent next morning with two bomb-ketches and other small vessels to bombard the fort, and to sound the entrance into the river Charante; who on his return reported, that one of the bombs ran a-ground, and that the Coventry touched five times in attempting to protect her from two French row-gallies. This report by admiral Knowles can no otherwise be reconciled with that of the officers first employed in founding, and with the evidence of the pilot of the *Magnanime*, than by supposing that the French pilots now employed, chose to sacrifice their reputation as pilots to the safety of their country. But notwithstanding this report, orders were issued that night for the troops to hold themselves in readiness to land next morning; yet that day passed in perfect inactivity. However, another council of war, consisting of the same members, being called, it was now unanimously resolved, that it *was* advisable to land the troops.

In consequence of this resolution, on the 28th in the afternoon, the *Ramillies* hoisted a signal for the commanders of regiments to come on board, and at eight the same evening orders were issued for the troops to prepare for landing in the night.

Twelve

; *Viz.*

" Ramillies, Sept. 28.

" The troops are to be ready to go from the transports into the boats at twelve o'clock at night; a number of men of war's boats will be appointed to every regiment, under the command of a lieutenant; these, with the transport boats, (who are to be under the direction of a lieutenant of foot) are to receive the grenadiers, the piquet companies, one, two, or more, as the boats can contain them; the commander of every regiment lands with the first detachment, if it amounts to three companies.

" Particular care to be taken that the soldiers be not too much crowded in the boats.

" The



Twelve hundred men were accordingly crowded into boats, in A. D. full expectation of a signal at midnight to put off. Indeed such was the alacrity of the troops on this occasion, and such their eagerness to land, that the boats were filled an hour before the time. In this situation they remained, the boats beating against each other, for it blew rather fresh, till about three in the morning; when, instead of a signal to put off, a laconic order came for the troops to return to their respective transports.

"The crews of the boats that row the transports long-boats, are to be chiefly composed of soldiers, who are to return to the corps after the first landing, and row backwards and forwards till the whole disembarkation is completed, and till the provisions, tents, baggage, &c. are landed, according to the orders of the 15th.

"When the first part of every regiment is embarked, it is to proceed silently and quietly to the place of rendezvous appointed for the division, and there the whole division receives their orders from a captain of a ship of war, which orders they are in every particular strictly to obey.

"The troops have had a great example before their eyes, and the general is confident that they will endeavour to imitate the coolness and determined valour that appeared in the attack of the isle of Aix.

"No soldier is to fire from the boats upon any account, but to wait for the moment to join the enemy with their bayonets.

"Eight mantlets *per* regiment will be distributed, and the commanding officers will dispose of them, so as to cover the landing boats and rowers from the musquetry, in case it be necessary.

"The troops are to land silently, and in the best order the nature of the thing allows of.

"The companies to form, and be ready to attack whoever appears before them.

"The chief engineer, the quartermaster-general, and his deputies, are to go on shore with the first body that lands.

"All the intrenching tools are to be landed immediately after the second embarkation.

"Mr. Boyd, the comptroller of the artillery, is appointed to carry orders to the chief engineer, captain of the artillery, and to every branch of the ordnance, and is to be obeyed.

"Each regiment to send a return immediately of the number of tents they have remaining after the calculating a tent for eight men, as ordered on the 15th.

"Colonel Kingsly to be ready to march with the grenadiers upon their landing, with two field-officers, major Farquhar, and lieutenant-colonel Sir William Boothby.

"The regiments are each of them to receive from the store keeper of the ordnance, ten chevaux-de-frize, and to send for them forthwith."

A. D. This order was obeyed, but not without a general murmur of 1757. dissatisfaction.

If the reader be unacquainted with the real history of this expedition, he will doubtless be at a loss on what martial principle to account for all these apparent dilatory, irresolute, incongruous, and even contradictory proceedings: in justice, therefore, to the commanders on each element, I will endeavour to develop the motives by which they were influenced in their various resolutions, and, if possible, to point out the several causes to which the miscarriage of this enterprize is to be attributed.

Those who are acquainted with the history of Great Britain, must recollect many instances of our naval expeditions having failed for want of alacrity in the preparation. It requires very little nautical knowledge or experience to conceive, that the success of naval enterprizes depends almost intirely upon the proper season of the year. This diversion on the coast of France seems to have been first suggested by the king of Prussia and the duke of Cumberland, who were at this time overpowered by numerous French armies in Germany. Mr. Pitt adopted their idea, because he thought it rational; but he was principally influenced by the prospect of giving a mortal stab to the naval power of France, in the destruction of Rochfort. When he first determined to carry this project into execution, there appeared to be time sufficient. The troops, and the fleet of men of war, were assembled early in the month of August, and their not sailing till the 8th of September was intirely owing to the misconduct of the contractors for the transports: so much is it in the power of little beings to frustrate the designs of the wisest of the human species!

That the fleet did not make the isle of Oleron till the 20th, was chiefly owing to contrary winds; but, from the above narrative, it is evident that they might with great ease, have anchored in Basque road next morning; that the remainder of that day would have been sufficient for reconnoitring the coast, and that the troops might have been in possession of Rochfort on the evening of the 22d. The attack upon the isle of Aix was a mere waste of time, nor would the taking of fort Fouras have answered any better purpose; because neither of these forts were so situated as to prevent the landing of the troops, or impede their

their march to Rochfort, or render their retreat less secure. A. D. 1757. By the king's private instructions to Sir John Mordaunt<sup>k</sup>, it appears, that the first and principal object of the expedition was, to destroy the docks, magazines, arsenals and shipping at Rochfort. This was to be effected by surprize, or *coup de main*: therefore every hour of unnecessary delay was a fault, as it not only gave the enemy time to recover from the consternation into which the appearance of such an armament must have thrown them, but also gave them time to collect their troops, and add strength to their fortifications.

We have seen above, from the report of admiral Broderick, that the transports might safely ride at anchor within a mile and a half of a firm beach, where the troops might have landed without the least molestation from any fort or battery. Why were not the transports, immediately upon this report, ordered to that station, and the army landed upon the beach? If the transports had been thus situated, the intire disembarkation would have been effected in the space of a few hours, and the first division landed would have been supported by the second in less than an hour. This seems to have been an obvious, easy, and rational method of proceeding, and probably would have been pursued, but for general Conway's interrogation of the French prisoners which were taken on the isle of Aix. The report of these prisoners produced a council of war, and that council, on the information of these and other Frenchmen, were persuaded, that, if the troops should land on the continent, they would certainly all be drowned, for that, by opening certain sluices, the whole country might be laid under water. With these terrible apprehensions, the council unanimously determined, that any attempt upon Rochfort was neither *advisable* nor *practicable*. For this determination some reasons were assigned; but it may be somewhat difficult to find any reason for an apparent contrary determination at their next meeting, especially when we consider, that the report of admiral Knowles, subsequent to the first council, tended rather to increase than diminish the horrible chimeras which guarded the coast of France. But it is necessary to observe, that this second resolution meant nothing more

<sup>k</sup> Vide Appendix, No. 7.

A. D. than an attack upon fort *Pouras*, if it had any precise object <sup>1757</sup> farther than that of mere bravado; for, at this time, every idea of attempting Rochfort was entirely relinquished.

We have seen above, that, in consequence of the resolution of the council of war of the 28th, the troops were ordered to land the same night, and that, after remaining four hours in the boats, they were ordered to return to their ships. The only reason that can be assigned for this counter-order is, that, after the first order had been issued, and in part executed, the commanders discovered the absurdity of attempting to land a numerous army from ships which were at the distance of two leagues from the shore. It is also probable that they now recollected, that, at this time, they had no motive, no object, which could either distress the enemy or serve their country in the smallest degree. We find, in the fourth article of the king's private instructions to Sir John Mordaunt<sup>1</sup>, that Mr. Pitt's plan extended to other towns on the coast of France, particularly L'Orient and Bourdeaux; but we see in the following article of these instructions, that the end of September was fixed for the return of the fleet. Nevertheless, lest a scrupulous obedience to these orders might frustrate the intent of the expedition, Mr. Pitt, on the 15th of September, wrote to Sir Edward Hawke and to Sir John Mordaunt, informing them, that his majesty's commands were to continue upon the coast of France as many more days as might be necessary to the completion of any operation in which they were engaged.

Having thus endeavoured to give the reader a clue which may enable him to pass through this labyrinth of delays and councils, to the several apparent causes of our disappointment, I will now presume to assign the real cause. The very able and patriotic minister who planned this admirable enterprize, notwithstanding his superior sagacity, was mistaken in the character of Sir John Mordaunt, of general Conway, and of general Cornwallis. In military knowledge and personal courage they were by no means deficient; but there was in them all a want of that constitutional spirit of enterprize, that impetuosity of resolution, bordering upon imprudence, without which an expedition of this

<sup>1</sup> Appendix N<sup>o</sup>. 7.

nature will never succeed. If the minister himself, or any general of equal constitutional heroism, had commanded this army, 1757- Rochfort would have been destroyed in twenty-four hours after the fleet came to an anchor on the coast of France.

We now resume the thread of our narrative. Sir Edward Hawke, at length disgusted with the irresolute proceedings of the army, on the 29th of September, informed Sir John Mordaunt, by letter, that if he had nothing farther to propose, he intended to proceed with the fleet to England. The land officers approved his resolution, and, on the first of October, the fleet sailed with a fair wind for England, and came to an anchor at Spithead on the sixth of the same month.

The people of England were exceedingly disappointed and dissatisfied at this inglorious return of such a fleet and such an army. But no man in the kingdom had so much reason to be displeased as the minister himself. He now plainly perceived that he had mistaken his generals, and, to satisfy the people, consented to an inquiry into their conduct. Accordingly, a board of inquiry was appointed, consisting of the duke of Marlborough, lord George Sackville, and general Waldegrave. These gentlemen, after much examination, deliberation, and reflection, presented to the king so vague, so unsatisfactory, so silly a report, that it was afterwards thought necessary to bring Sir John Mordaunt to a formal trial by a court-martial. But before we proceed to speak of that court-martial, it is impossible to avoid taking some farther notice of this court of inquiry, the first article of whose report to the king was, that—"The  
 " not attacking fort Fouras by sea, at the same time that it  
 " would have been attacked by land, was one cause why the  
 " expedition failed."—That is, the expedition failed, because something was not done in conjunction with something which was never attempted. The second article of their report was—"That  
 " the council of war of the 28th was not justifiable in the resolution not to make an attack upon Rochfort, because they afterwards resolved to attack fort Fouras." Their third article of report was, "That the expedition failed, because the fleet returned to England without any previous regular meeting of  
 " the council of war." If the three members of this board of inquiry had been well informed as to the situation of Rochfort,

Aix,

A. D. Aix, and Fouras, they would have discovered that the first 1757 ought to have been attacked without any attention to either of the latter. Sir John Mordaunt was afterwards tried by a court-martial, and honourably acquitted. The minister and the admiral were also acquitted by the general voice of the people ; so that this grand expedition miscarried without a cause.

Having, I hope, satisfied the reader concerning the employment of the British navy in Europe, let us now follow our fleets and armies to other parts of the world. In the East Indies we behold a scene extremely different from that which we have just quitted ; unanimity, resolution, and the genuine spirit of enterprize in our commanders ; intuitive military genius, and victory its natural attendant. Admiral Watson sailed from Bombay on the 30th of April, 1756. He arrived at St. David's on the 29th of May ; sailed from thence on the 20th of June, and anchored in Madras road the day following<sup>m</sup>. Here he first learnt the dreadful fate of Calcutta. Having taken colonel Clive and his small army on board his squadron, he sailed on the 6th of October, determined to revenge the horrid murder of his countrymen. They anchored in Balasore road on the 5th of December, reached Fulta on the 15th, and on the 28th proceeded to Calcutta, with the Kent, Tyger, Salisbury, Bridgewater, and King-fisher sloop. Next day colonel Clive, with a small body of men, landed, in order to attack a fort called Busbudgia, which, being at the same time cannonaded by the ships, was soon abandoned by the garrison. Other forts and batteries were likewise deserted as the ships proceeded up the river, and, on the 2d of January, 1757, after a smart cannonade from the Kent and Tyger, the enemy were driven from their guns, and the town of Calcutta restored to the East India Company. No more than nine seamen and three soldiers were killed, and about thirty men wounded. Ninety-one pieces of cannon were found in the place, with a considerable quantity of ammunition and military stores.

This important conquest being finished, the British commanders resolved to attempt Hughly, a city of great trade, higher up the Ganges. The Bridgewater of twenty guns, and a sloop,

<sup>m</sup> Smollet's continuation, vol. ii. p. 46.

with a detachment of troops under the command of captain A. D. Kirkpatrick, were destined for this service. This armament <sup>1757</sup> proceeded up the river on the 5th of January, and reduced the place without much difficulty. Twenty pieces of cannon were found on the ramparts, besides a considerable quantity of saltpetre and magazines of grain, which were immediately destroyed by the conquerors. The nabob of Bengal, enraged at being thus rapidly driven from his most important possessions, assembled an army of ten thousand horse and fifteen thousand foot, and, on the 2d of February, encamped about a mile from Calcutta. Colonel Clive, though very inferior in number, resolved to attack the nabob in his camp, and requested the admiral to assist him with all the sailors he could spare. Six hundred seamen were landed, under the command of captain Warwick, on the 5th, at one in the morning; at three colonel Clive marched his little army, and about five the attack began. The nabob, after a feeble resistance, retreated, with the loss of a thousand men killed, wounded and taken. This action, though not decisive, obliged the nabob to sign articles of capitulation, very advantageous to the East India company.

Having thus humbled this insolent nabob, the conquerors turned their attention towards Chandénagore, a capital French settlement above Calcutta, on the same river. Colonel Clive with seven hundred Europeans; and about sixteen hundred Indians, marched towards the place, and, after gaining possession of the principal outposts, waited for the arrival of the fleet. On the 18th of March, the admirals Watson and Pocock, with the Kent, Tiger, and Salisbury men of war, came to an anchor two miles below Chandénagore. They found their passage obstructed by booms and chains across the river. These obstacles being removed, on the 24th in the morning they began to batter the fort, whilst colonel Clive continued his approaches by land, and after three hours cannonading the enemy hoisted a flag of truce, and surrendered by capitulation. The garrison consisted of five hundred Europeans and twelve hundred Indians, well provided with ammunition and subsistence, and a hundred and twenty-three pieces of cannon mounted on the ramparts. This important conquest cost the victors no more than forty men. Colonel Clive's subsequent achievements are foreign to

A. D. the purpose of this history. It is sufficient to say, that he totally 1757- defeated the nabob Sulajud Dowla at the head of twenty thousand men, caused him to be solemnly deposed, and his prime minister Ali Khan to be proclaimed viceroy in his stead.

We now take our leave of the East in order to inquire how our fleets in the West Indies and in North America were employed. We are to remember that Mr. Pitt's first administration, which commenced with the year 1757, was of short duration. It continued however long enough to convince the nation of his spirit and political sagacity. Astonished at the negligence of his predecessors in administration, he immediately conceived, and in part executed, a plan of operation wisely calculated to revive the faded laurels of Britain. He sent a squadron of men of war under the command of commodore Stevens to the East Indies, another to Jamaica under admiral Cotes, and a third was ordered to be equipped for North America, the command of which was to be given to Sir Edward Hawke. This third squadron was destined, with a body of troops under lord Loudoun then in America, for the reduction of Louisbourg; but the design was scarce revealed to the privy-council, before it was known in the French cabinet, and the preparations at Portsmouth so flagrantly retarded, that the enemy had sufficient time to render the expedition abortive. One French fleet of nine ships sailed from Brest in January, a second, of five men of war, sailed from Toulon in April, and a third, of fourteen sail, left France on the third of May. The last of these squadrons arrived at Louisbourg in June. The English fleet, intended for Sir Edward Hawke, was given to admiral Holbourne, who sailed from Corke a week after the departure of the last French squadron from Brest, and arrived at Halifax in North America on the 9th of July. Admiral Holbourne being joined by lord Loudoun with the troops from New York, councils of war were frequently held, and, according to the general issue of such councils, it was resolved to postpone the attack upon Louisbourg to a more favourable opportunity. Thus ended the naval expedition of admiral Holbourne. The troops under the command of lord Loudoun were 12,000 effective men, and the fleet consisted of fifteen ships of the line, and eighteen frigates, &c.

We



We have seen above, that early in this year a squadron sailed A. D. to the West Indies, under the command of admiral Cotes. 1757. Soon after his arrival on the Jamaica station, he detached captain Forest with three frigates to cruize off Cape François, in order to intercept the trade from the French islands. Captain Forest had scarce made his appearance on that coast before he fell in with four French men of war commanded by Monsi. Kerfaint. An engagement immediately ensued, which was sustained with mutual courage and obstinate resolution for two hours and a half; after which the enemy retreated to Cape François, and the English frigates to Jamaica. Thus ends our naval history of the year 1757: a history equally unsatisfactory to the writer and to the reader; a year distinguished solely by our conquests in the East Indies, which are to be attributed entirely to the genius and intrepidity of one man. Our fleets and armies in Europe and in America were either totally inactive or failed in their attempts. Notwithstanding the superiority of our fleet, the number of prizes taken by the French exceeded the English list of captures by more than two hundred. Let us now hasten to the year 1758, where we may expect to find the 1758. patriotic zeal, political abilities, and heroic spirit of enterprize, so conspicuous in the character of the new minister, in full exertion of their influence. This intrepid minister was so extremely disgusted at the behaviour of some of our commanders, that, in one of his speeches in the house of commons; he did not scruple to declare, that, though the king would readily embrace any rational measure for the honour of his crown, he doubted whether a man could be found, who might safely be trusted with the execution of any enterprize of danger or difficulty.

The parliament voted, for the service of the year 1758, sixty thousand seamen, fifteen thousand marines included; and for the land service, near fifty-four thousand men. Our fleet, at this period, consisted of three hundred and twenty ships of war, one hundred and fifty-six of which were of the line. Besides these, there were on the stocks, four ships of 74, two of 70, four of 64, six of 36, and ten of 28 guns. The supplies were raised with the utmost facility, and at a moderate interest. The languid, latent spirit of the nation, inflamed by that of the new minister, was suddenly roused from the disgraceful apathy which,

A. D. except in the East Indies, characterised the operations of the 1758<sup>th</sup> preceding year. The navy of France, at this time, consisted of seventy-seven ships of the line, and thirty-nine frigates; that of Spain of fifty-two line-of-battle ships, twenty-six frigates from 30 to 16 guns, thirteen xebecs of 24, and four packet-boats of 16 guns.

The reduction of Louisbourg being a principal object in Mr. Pitt's plan of military operations, a naval armament, adequate to the purpose, was prepared with all possible expedition, and the command given to admiral Boscawen, an officer of approved abilities. The formidable French fleet which had protected Louisbourg the preceding year, had returned to France in a shattered condition. These ships being repaired, were intended to return to their former station in North America; but their intentions were effectually anticipated and prevented by the vigilant alacrity of the British minister. Admiral Boscawen sailed from St. Helen's on the 19th February, with forty-one men of war<sup>a</sup>. Meanwhile, a fleet under the command of Sir Edward

<sup>a</sup> Viz. Namur,	(Adm. Boscawen),	Capt. Bockle,	90 guns,
Royal William,	(Sir Cha. Hardy),	Evans,	80
Princess Amelia,	(Philip Durell),	Bray,	80
Dublin,	—	Rodney,	74
Terrible,	—	Collins,	74
Northumberland,	—	Lord Colvil,	70
Vanguard,	—	Swanton,	70
Oxford,	—	Spry,	70
Burford,	—	Gambier,	70
Somerset,	—	Hughes,	70
Lancaster,	—	Edgecombe,	70
Devonshire,	—	Gordon,	66
Bedford,	—	Fowke,	64
Captain,	—	Amherst,	64
Prince Frederic,	—	Man,	64
Pembroke,	—	Simcoe,	60
Kingston,	—	Parry,	60
York,	—	Pigot,	60
Prince of Orange,	—	Ferguson,	60
Defiance,	—	Baird,	60
Nottingham,	—	Marshall,	60
Centurion,	—	Mantel,	54
Sutherland,	—	Rous,	50

Besides eighteen frigates.

Hawke,

Hawke, blocked up the French ports in the bay of Biscay, and A. D. another squadron, commanded by admiral Osborne, was sent 1758. to cruise between Cape de Gatte and Carthagenæ on the coast of Spain. There were, at this time, three small squadrons of French ships of war in the different ports of Toulon, Carthagenæ and Brest, which squadrons, under the command of Mons. du Quesne and Mons. de la Clue, had orders to steal away for Louisbourg, jointly or separately. The former of these commanders, in order to join the latter at Carthagenæ, sailed from Toulon on the 25th of April, on board the *Foudroyant* of 80 guns, attended by the *Orphée* of 64, the *Oriflamme* of 50, and *Pleiade* of 24 guns. Admiral Osborne, expecting the departure of this squadron from Toulon, had stationed the *Gibraltar* frigate in the offing of that harbour to watch their motions. As soon as du Quesne's squadron appeared, the *Gibraltar* steered off, and gradually decoyed the enemy so effectually, that on the 27th, about two in the morning, du Quesne found himself in the midst of Osborne's fleet. In this critical situation, the French admiral made a signal for his squadron to disperse: each ship immediately steered a different course, and were as immediately pursued by detachments from Osborne's fleet, who, with the remainder of his fleet, continued to block up the harbour of Carthagenæ. The *Pleiade*, being a prime sailer, escaped. The *Oriflamme* was chased by the *Monarque* and *Montague*, and escaped destruction by running under the guns of a small Spanish fort. The *Orphée* was pursued by the *Revenge* and *Berwick*, and was taken, by the first of these ships, in sight of Carthagenæ. The *Foudroyant* was chased by the *Monmouth*, *Swiftsure* and *Hampton-Court*. About seven in the morning the *Monmouth* and *Foudroyant* began to fire at each other, the rest of the fleet being then totally out of sight. The disproportion between the two ships was very great. The *Foudroyant* had a thousand men on board, and mounted eighty guns, 42 and 22 pounders; the *Monmouth* mounted only sixty-four 12 and 24 pounders, and her complement of men was no more than four hundred and seventy. This remarkable disparity notwithstanding, captain Gardiner, who commanded the *Monmouth*, resolved, at all events, to vanquish his enemy. Thus determined, he brought his ship within pistol-shot of his antagonist,

A. D. antagonist, and now the battle raged with infernal fury. About 1758. nine o'clock captain Gardiner was shot through the head by a musket-ball°. He lingered till the day following, and then died, universally regretted and lamented, particularly by the officers and crew of his own ship. The death of such a man was a very great loss to his country. Soon after the captain fell, the Monmouth's mizen-mast came by the board; on which the enemy gave three cheers. The crew of the Monmouth returned the compliment a few minutes after, on the mizen-mast of the Foudroyant being also shot away. This disaster was soon followed by the fall of her main-mast, which giving fresh spirits to the English, their fire became so incessant and intolerable, that the French sailors could no longer be kept to their guns, and the mighty Foudroyant struck a little after one o'clock. This action, which is one of the most glorious in the naval history of Britain, and which must ever remain an incontestable proof of our naval superiority, I beg leave to recommend to the constant recollection of such of our sea-officers as may be inclined to calculate their comparative weight of metal before they venture to engage.

The Orphée and Foudroyant being taken, and the commander in chief being a prisoner, Mons. de la Clue gave up all thoughts of passing the Straits of Gibraltar, and returned from Carthagena to Toulon, where his squadron was laid up. But the French ministry, not depending entirely on their Mediterranean fleet for the protection of Louisbourg and the reinforcement of their army in North America, had prepared a considerable fleet of transports and store-ships at Rochfort, Bourdeaux, and other ports in that neighbourhood. These transports, with three thousand troops on board, were ordered to rendezvous in April, and to sail under convoy of six ships of the line and several frigates. Such however was the intelligence and alacrity of the English minister, that effectual measures were taken to frustrate the design. Sir Edward Hawke, with seven ships of

° It is said that captain Gardiner, before he expired, sent for his first lieutenant, and made it his last request, that he would not give up the ship. The lieutenant assured him he never would, and instantly went and nailed the flag to the staff. He then took a pistol in each hand, and swore if any man in the ship should attempt to strike the colours, he would put him to death.

the line and three frigates, sailed down the bay of Biscay, and A. D. on the third of April brought up in Basque-road, where he dis- 1758. covered five French ships of the line and seven frigates at anchor near the isle of Aix. They no sooner saw the English fleet than they began with the utmost precipitation to slip their cables, and fly in great confusion. Some of them escaped to sea; but far the greater number threw their guns and stores overboard, and, running into shoal water, stuck in the mud. Next morning several of their men of war and transports were seen lying on their broadsides; but being out of the reach of his guns, Sir Edward Hawke left them to their fate, perfectly satisfied with having frustrated their intention of sailing to America.

I have before observed, that some of the store-ships and transports destined for North America were to sail from Bourdeaux. These transports were twelve in number. They sailed under convoy of the *Galathée*, a frigate of twenty-two guns, and a letter of marque of twenty guns. In the bay of Biscay they had the misfortune to fall in with the *Essex* of sixty-four guns, and the *Pluto* and *Proserpine* fire-ships, which were on their passage to join Sir Edward Hawke. After a short, but smart conflict, the French frigate, the letter of marque, and one of the transports, were taken. But this advantage was dearly purchased with the death of captain James Hume, who commanded the *Pluto*. Two more of these transports were afterwards taken by the *Antelope* and *Speedwell* sloops.

Having seen every attempt of France for the protection of Louisbourg intirely frustrated, we now proceed to projects more directly offensive, planned and executed by Mr. Pitt. But a melancholy event intervenes. On the 13th of April the Prince George of eighty guns, commanded by rear-admiral Broderick, in his passage to the Mediterranean, took fire between one and two in the afternoon, and, notwithstanding the utmost exertion of human skill and labour, aided by despair, burnt with such rapidity, that in the space of a few hours she burnt down to the water edge. A little before six in the evening she sunk intirely, and more than two thirds of her crew perished in the ocean. The admiral, after buffeting the waves near an hour<sup>p</sup>,

<sup>p</sup> Annual register, p. 306.

A. D. was at length taken up by a boat belonging to one of the merchantmen under his convoy. Captain Payton and the chaplain were also among the few that were saved.

We now proceed to the circumstantial relation of an expedition to the coast of Africa; an expedition which, extraordinary as it may seem, was planned and executed by a Quaker. Thomas Cuming, the projector of this enterprize, having made a voyage, as a merchant-adventurer, to Portenderrick, on the coast of Africa, became personally acquainted with Amir the Moorish king of Legibelli. This prince, being prejudiced in favour of the English nation, and extremely dissatisfied with the French, wished eagerly for an opportunity to drive them from their settlements on the river Senegal, and promised all the assistance in his power to the arms of Britain. Mr. Cuming, during his residence on the Gum-coast, became perfectly acquainted with the nature, extent, and importance of the trade, and was very assiduous in his inquiry concerning the situation and strength of the French forts. On his return to England he communicated his observations and ideas to the board of trade, by whom his project was approved, and finally adopted by the ministry. This was in the year 1757. A force which was deemed adequate to the expedition, was ordered to be prepared; but before the ships were ready to sail, the season was so far advanced that it was thought advisable to postpone the design. In the beginning of the following year, Mr. Cuming revived his application; the minister approved his plan, and a small squadron was equipped with all possible expedition. The ships ordered for this service were the Nassau of sixty-four, the Harwich of fifty, and the Rye of twenty guns, attended by the Swan sloop and two buffies. They had on board two hundred marines, commanded by major Mason, and a detachment of matrosses, under captain Walker; ten pieces of cannon and eight mortars.

This small squadron<sup>a</sup>, commanded by captain Marsh, and conducted by friend Cuming, sailed from Plymouth on the 9th of March, and on the 24th of April came to an anchor in the mouth of the river Senegal, and in sight of fort Louis,

<sup>a</sup> Smollet's continuation of the history of England, vol. ii. p. 272.

which

which is situated on the island of Senegal, about four leagues A. D. within the bar. The French governor of this fort, as soon as 1758, he discovered the English squadron, sent down an armed brig and six sloops to dispute the passage of the bar. A brisk but ineffectual cannonading ensued. Meanwhile the channel being discovered, and the wind blowing up the river, captain Millar of the London barge passed the bar and came to an anchor, where he remained all night exposed to the fire of the enemy. He was followed next morning by the other small vessels, some of which ran a-ground and bulged. The troops on board these vessels immediately took to their boats, and landed on the east shore of the river. Apprehensive of being attacked by the natives, they threw up an entrenchment and disembarked their stores. Next morning they were reinforced by a detachment of 350 seamen, and now began to meditate an attack upon fort Louis. But the governor, not chusing to wait the event, sent two deputies with offers of surrender. His proposals, after a little deliberation, were accepted by captain Marsh and major Mason. By the articles of capitulation, the natives of France were to be sent home with all their private effects. On the first of May the English took possession of fort Louis, and all the settlements belonging to France on the river Senegal were at the same time ceded to the king of Great Britain. Thus this important conquest, which was planned and conducted by a Quaker, was achieved in a manner perfectly consonant with the principles of his religion, namely, without spilling a single drop of human blood. It is also worthy of remark, that it was our first successful expedition since the commencement of the war. There were found in the fort ninety-two pieces of cannon, some treasure, and a considerable quantity of goods. This business being accomplished, and fort Louis garrisoned by English troops, the men of war proceeded to attack the island of Goree, about thirty leagues distant from Senegal; but their force being insufficient, the attempt miscarried.

On the 29th day of May, the Dorsetshire, captain Dennis, of 70 guns, cruising in the bay of Biscay, fell in with the *Raisonable*, a French man of war of 64 guns and 630 men, commanded by *le Prince de Mombazon*, who defended his ship with great resolution till one hundred and sixty of his men were

A. D. killed or wounded, and his hull and rigging considerably damaged. 1758.

Mr. Pitt's comprehensive plan of operation was too rational to be disconcerted by such miscarriages as were justly to be attributed to a want of spirit in the execution. The expedition to the coast of France, of the preceding year, having failed, made no alteration in the minister's opinion, that a diversion of the like nature was a proper measure. For this purpose, in the month of May, near fourteen thousand men were encamped on the Isle of Wight. This army, commanded by the duke of Marlborough, consisted of sixteen battalions of infantry, four hundred artillery-men, and five hundred and forty light horse. One of the regiments of infantry, being destined for another service, did not embark; so that the number employed in this expedition amounted to about thirteen thousand. The subordinate general officers were lord George Sackville, the earl of Ancram, major-generals Waldegrave, Mostyn, Drury, Boscawen and Elliot. Two distinct fleets were assembled at Spithead: the first commanded by lord Anson, of twenty-two sail of the line; the second under commodore Howe, consisting of several frigates, sloops, fire-ships, bomb-vessels, tenders, cutters, and transports.

This tremendous fleet sailed from St. Helen's on the first of June. Lord Anson with the line-of-battle ships stood away to the west, and proceeded to block up the French fleet at Brest; whilst commodore Howe steered athwart the channel with the wind at south-east. The night proved so tempestuous, notwithstanding the season of the year, that one of the store-ships rolled away her masts. About eight next morning they made Cape la Hogue, and that night anchored in the race of Alderney. On the third, about noon, one of the transports struck upon a rock, near the island of Sark, and was lost, but the troops on board were saved. On the fourth, Mr. Howe came to an anchor within three leagues of St. Malo. Next morning he weighed before break of day, and stood into the bay of Canceille, so called from a village of that name, where the troops were intended to land. At four in the evening the



whole fleet brought up, and in a short time after ten companies A. D. of grenadiers landed near the village above-mentioned. The only 1758. opposition was from a battery of two guns fired by a brave old Frenchman and his son, who maintained their post till the poor old man was wounded by a shot from one of our frigates. If others of his countrymen had behaved with equal resolution, the disembarkation would have been more difficult; for there were at this time seven companies of foot and three troops of dragoons at Cancalle: but these troops retired to St. Malo. The British grenadiers landed a little before sunset, attended by five volunteers of distinction, whose names should be recorded and remembered with gratitude. Such spirit in young men of rank and fortune, raises the military character of a nation more effectually than a victory over the enemy. Lord Down, Sir John Armitage, Sir James Lowther, Mr. Francis Blake Delaval, and Mr. Berkley, were the men. The entire disembarkation was completed on the sixth, and the whole army encamped near Cancalle; the grenadiers and the light horse being advanced about a mile in the front of the line.

The duke of Marlborough, sensible of the ravages which are generally committed by the common soldiers on their landing in an enemy's country, issued strict orders to prevent marauding. Nevertheless, some irregularities were committed. The offenders were brought to immediate trial, and two or three of them executed. This rigorous exertion of military law saved the inoffensive peasantry from many acts of brutal licentiousness which they would otherwise have experienced.

On the 7th, at break of day, the army marched towards St. Malo in two columns. The left column, commanded by lord George Sackville, fell into the great road; but the lanes through which lord Ancram's column marched were so narrow, and the country so inclosed and woody, that notwithstanding the previous labour of two hundred pioneers, the men were frequently obliged to pass in single files; so that a small number of the enemy might easily have destroyed this column, or at least have made it impossible for them to advance. But, so far from meeting with any opposition, they found the villages and hamlets through which they passed intirely deserted. The army proceeded in good order without beat of drum, and, after a

A. D. march of six miles, encamped at the distance of little more than 1758. a mile from the town of St. Malo. Whilst they were employed in pitching their tents, the light horse, with the piquets of the whole army, marched towards the town, and were saluted by a few shot from the cannon on the ramparts. As soon as it was dark the piquets marched down to the harbour, where they found a considerable number of privateers and other small vessels, most of which, it being low water, were laid dry. Having set fire to all the shipping, they proceeded to communicate the flames to the magazines of pitch, tar, ropes, &c. all which were intirely destroyed, except one small store-house, which, if it had been set on fire, must from its situation have destroyed most of the houses in the suburbs. This building was spared from a noble principle of humanity, worthy the imitation of all future invaders. The number of ships destroyed was about one hundred and twenty. The piquets now rejoined the army, which continued unmolested in its encampment till the 10th, when the tents were struck, and the army in one column marched back to Cancale. Whilst the main body of the troops were employed as I have related, a battalion of the guards, under the command of colonel Cesar, marched twelve miles up the country, to a town called Dolle, where they were politely entertained by the magistrates. As their design was merely to reconnoitre, they continued one night in the town without committing the least act of hostility, and then returned. A party of the English light horse penetrating a few miles farther, fell in with the *videts* of a French camp, two of which they took, and brought prisoners to Cancale.

The purpose of this invasion being fully accomplished, the troops were re-embarked, and the fleet sailed on the 16th early in the morning, and, after beating against the wind during that whole day, came to an anchor off the harbour of St. Malo. The night proved so tempestuous, that many of the ships drove, and some parted their cables. Next morning, the wind continuing contrary, the fleet returned to Cancale bay, and there remained till the 22d, when they sailed again, and next day passed the islands Jersey and Guernsey. On the 25th they made the Isle of Wight, and on the 26th, the wind veering to the northward, they steered again for the coast of France, and ran  
in.

in with the land near Havre; but towards evening it blew so A. D. fresh, that, to avoid the danger of a lee-shore, they stood out 1758 to sea. On the 27th, the weather becoming more moderate, they ran in with the land a second time, and the duke of Marlborough and Mr. Howe went out in a cutter to reconnoitre the coast. At their return, orders were given for the troops to prepare for immediate disembarkation: nevertheless, the 28th passed without any attempt to land, and on the 29th the fleet bore away before the wind, and anchored within a league of Cherbourg. Some of the transports which brought up nearer in shore, were fired at from several batteries, but received no damage. A few troops were seen parading on the strand, most of which appeared to be militia.

Soon after the fleet came to an anchor, the duke of Marlborough signified his intention of making an attack upon the town that night, and ordered the first battalion of guards to be in their boats at eleven o'clock. The rest of the troops received orders in what manner, and at what time, they were to proceed, and every necessary preparation was made for immediate disembarkation. But as night approached, the wind off shore gradually increased, and, before the appointed hour, became so violent as to render the attempt impracticable. Next morning, the duke of Marlborough, upon inquiry into the stock of provisions, hay, and water, found these several articles so nearly exhausted, that it would be dangerous, in so variable a climate, to remain any longer on an hostile coast. He therefore resolved to return to England. The fleet accordingly weighed anchor at ten o'clock, and arrived at St. Helen's the next day in the evening. The troops were encamped on the Isle of Wight, that they might recover the effects of so long a confinement, on board of transports by no means sufficient for the accommodation of so numerous an army. These troops were destined for more expeditions of the like nature, the success of which will be seen in due time; but a regular attention to a chronological series of naval events now calls us to North America.

I am to remind the reader, that admiral Boscawen sailed from England, with a considerable fleet, on the 19th of April. He

<sup>2</sup> Smollet's continuation, vol. ii. p. 197.

A. D. arrived at Halifax in Nova Scotia on the 9th of May; from 1758. whence he sailed on the 28th, with an army of fourteen thousand men, under the command of major-general Amherst<sup>t</sup>. This fleet, consisting of a hundred and fifty-seven sail, anchored, on the second of June, in the bay of Gabarus, about two leagues westward of Louisbourg. The French governor, *le chevalier Drucour*, had taken every possible precaution to prevent a surprise. He had thrown up several entrenchments, erected batteries, and formed a chain of redoubts for two leagues and a half along the coast. There were in the harbour six ships of the line and five frigates, three of which were, during the siege, sunk at the entrance. The fortifications of the town were not in good repair; the garrison consisted of two thousand five hundred regular troops, besides six hundred burghers and Canadians. When the fleet first came to an anchor, and during several succeeding days, the surf ran so high, that it was impossible for the boats to come near the shore. These several obstacles appeared so tremendous to many of the officers, that they advised the admiral to call a general council of war. Fortunately for the service, and for his own reputation, he disregarded such advice, and determined to land the troops at all events.

On the 8th of June, the weather being more moderate, the grenadiers and light infantry were in the boats before break of day. The frigates and armed sloops began to scour the coast, by an incessant fire upon the enemy; and now the boats rowed briskly towards the shore in three divisions, commanded by the generals Wolfe, Whitmore, and Laurence. When they approached the land they met with a warm reception from the enemy, and the surf ran so high that many of the boats were stove, and some of the soldiers drowned. General Wolfe leapt into the sea, and, being followed by his whole division, formed his people on the beach, and marched intrepidly to the nearest battery. The other two divisions followed his example, and the enemy soon fled in confusion. The remainder of the army, cannon, and stores were landed with all possible speed, and the town was regularly invested. General Amherst having secured

<sup>t</sup> Annual register, p. 70.

his camp by proper redoubts and epaulments, now began his A. D. approaches in form. In landing the troops, three officers, four <sup>1758.</sup> serjeants, one corporal, and thirty-eight private men, were killed or drowned; five lieutenants, two serjeants, one corporal, fifty-one men wounded; and about seventy boats lost. The enemy, when they fled from their entrenchments, left behind them seventeen pieces of cannon, fourteen large swivels, two mortars, a furnace for red-hot balls, small arms, ammunition, stores, tools and provisions in considerable quantity.

The chevalier Drucour, having received his detachments into the town, destroyed his out-posts, and all buildings within two miles of the ramparts, prepared for a vigorous defence. The approaches of the British general were at first slow, owing to the difficulty of landing his stores, the labour of dragging his cannon through a marshy country, and the necessity of fortifying his camp. Meanwhile, general Amherst, being not a little incommoded by the fire from the enemy's ships in the harbour, and also from the island battery, detached general Wolfe, with a considerable body of troops, with orders to march round the north-east harbour and take possession of the light-house point. This order was executed with great alacrity and dispatch, and a powerful battery erected, which on the 25th silenced that of the enemy on the island. On the 29th the besieged sunk four ships at the entrance of the harbour. They made several sallies from the town, and were repulsed with loss. The British army continued to approach the town in a regular and scientific manner, and the enemy displayed no less resolution and skill in the science of defence. On the 13th of July the besiegers were about six hundred yards from the covert way.

On the 21st, a shell from our battery on the light-house point set fire to one of the enemy's ships in the harbour. She immediately blew up, and two other men of war having caught the flame were also destroyed. These were the *Entreprenant*, the *Capricieux*, and the *Celebre*: so that the *Prudent* and the *Bien-faisant* were the only ships of force remaining. In the night of the 25th the first of these two was set on fire, and the other towed triumphantly out, by a detachment of seamen under the command of captains Laforey and Balfour. This gallant exploit merits a circumstantial relation. The naval reader will  
peruse

A. D. peruse it with pleasure; probably with advantage—By the admiral's orders, a barge and pinnace from every ship in the fleet 1758. assembled, about noon, under the stern of the *Namur*. These boats were manned only by their proper crews, armed chiefly with pistols and cutlasses, and each boat commanded by a lieutenant and midshipman. From thence they proceeded, by two or three at a time, to join Sir Charles Hardy's squadron near the mouth of the harbour. Being there re-assembled in two divisions, under the two captains above-mentioned, about midnight they paddled into the harbour of Louisbourg unperceived. The night was extremely dark, and the seamen were profoundly silent. They passed very near the island battery undiscovered, the darkness of the night, and a thick fog, prevented their being seen, whilst the perpetual din of bombs, cannon, and musquetry, both of the besieged and besiegers, effectually covered the noise of their oars. As soon as each division came near enough to perceive the devoted object, the two men of war were immediately surrounded by the boats, and were first alarmed by the firing of their own centinels. All the boats fell a-board at the same instant, and the several crews, following the example of their officers, scrambled up every part of the ships, and, in a few minutes, took possession of their respective prizes. The resistance was very feeble, and consequently the loss of men on either side inconsiderable.

Day-light and the shouts of our sailors, having at length discovered to the enemy on shore, that their ships were in possession of the English, they immediately pointed every gun that could be brought to bear upon the boats and prizes, and a furious discharge of cannon ensued. Those who were in possession of the *Prudent*, finding her a-ground, set her on fire, and then joined the boats which were now employed in towing off the *Bienfaisant*, which, with the assistance of a favourable breeze, was triumphantly carried away and secured.

On the 26th, whilst admiral Boscawen was preparing to send six ships into the harbour, he received a letter from the chevalier Drucour, offering to capitulate on the same terms that were granted to the English at Minorca. The admiral insisted on the garrison remaining prisoners of war, and with these terms the governor finally complied. He could not do otherwise. He yielded

yielded to irresistible necessity. His ships were all destroyed or A. D. taken; his cannon were dismounted; his garrison diminished, 1758 and the remainder harassed and dispirited; all his hopes of relief from Europe or from Canada were vanished, and his ramparts in many places battered to pieces. The capitulation being signed, the British troops took possession of Louisbourg on the 27th, and the two islands of Cape Breton and St. John were ceded to his Britannic majesty. The ships of war lost by the French on this occasion were the *Prudent* of 74 guns, *Entreprenant* 74, *Capricieux* 64, *Celebre* 64, *Bienfaisant* 64, *Apollo* 50; *Chevre*, *Biche* and *Fidelle* frigates sunk at the harbour's mouth; *Diana* of 36 taken by the *Boreas*; *Echo* of 26 taken by the *Juno*.

We now return to Europe. The spirited minister who, at this time, held the reins of government; whose successive expeditions were distinct gradations in a regular plan of operation; whose invasions on the coast of France were principally intended to divide the forces of the enemy: this active minister, I say, determined once more to invade the coast of Normandy. Part of the troops which, since the last expedition, had been encamped on the Isle of Wight, were sent to Germany. The duke of Marlborough and Lord George Sackville were likewise ordered upon that service. The remainder of the troops now commanded by lieutenant-general Bligh, embarked on board the fleet under commodore Howe, and sailed from St. Helen's on the first day of August. On the 6th, in the evening, the fleet came to an anchor in the bay of Cherburg, and a few shells were thrown into the town that night. Next morning, about seven o'clock, the fleet got under way, and at nine brought up in the bay of Maris, two leagues west of the town, where the general resolved to land his troops. The governor of Cherburg, since his late alarm, had thrown up several entrenchments, and planted some batteries along the coast. Behind these works there appeared about two thousand regular troops. On the 7th, at two in the afternoon, the grenadiers and guards, commanded by general Drury, in flat-bottom boats, landed, without opposition, under cover of an incessant fire from the fleet. Having formed his troops on the beach, he marched immediately towards a party of the enemy, received their fire, and

A. D. then attacked them with such resolution, that they soon fled in  
 1758. the utmost confusion, and with considerable loss. They left  
 behind them two pieces of brass cannon. Of the English, about  
 twenty were killed or wounded.

The remainder of the infantry being disembarked, general Bligh marched to the village of Erville, and there pitched his tents for the night. The ground which he had chosen for his encampment was so inadequate, in point of extent, to the number of troops, that the tents were crowded together as close as they could stand, without order or regularity. If the French commander had not been as ignorant in his profession as his enemy, the British army would, in this situation, have been surrounded and destroyed, or taken: two or three thousand men, judiciously commanded, were sufficient. But, either for want of skill, or strength, or resolution, the English army was suffered to sleep in perfect security, and the succeeding dawn did not discover a single French soldier in sight of the camp. On reconnoitring the nearest fort, called Quirqueville, it was found desolate; so that the light horse were now disembarked without the least interruption, and the army proceeded, in two columns, towards Cherburg, which they entered without firing or receiving a single shot, the town and all the forts being entirely abandoned by the troops. The inhabitants, in confidence of a promise of protection, contained in a manifesto published by general Bligh, remained in the town, and received their hostile visitors with politeness and hospitality. I am sorry to record, to the disgrace of English discipline, that their confidence was abused. The proper means of restraining the licentious brutality of the common soldiers were neglected, till the just complaints of the sufferers reminded the general of his duty.

General Bligh now proceeded, according to his instructions, to demolish the harbour and basin, which had been constructed by Lewis XV. at a vast expence, and were intended as an asylum for men of war. It appeared, however, from the unfinished state of the fortifications, that the importance of Cherburg had of late dwindled in the estimation of the French ministry. Whilst the engineers were thus employed, the light horse were sent to scour the country, and to reconnoitre a French camp at Walloign, about twelve miles from Cherburg. In these excursions they frequently skirmished with the enemy, and in one of these



these rencounters Lindsay, a captain of the British light horse, A. D. was unfortunately killed. He was a very active and gallant officer. 1758. The great business of demolition being finished, on the 16th of August, at three in the morning, the army evacuated Cherburg, marched down to Fort Galet, and there embarked without molestation.

In our estimate of the utility of this enterprize, we are to remember, that the primary object was, by keeping the French coast in perpetual alarm, to oblige them to retain an army for their own security, which would otherwise have marched to Germany. Exclusive of this consideration, the expedition to Cherburg was, by no means, unimportant. Twenty-seven ships were burnt in the harbour. A hundred and seventy-three pieces of iron ordnance and three mortars were rendered useless; and twenty-two brass cannon and two mortars were sent to England. These cannon were afterwards exposed, for some time, in Hyde Park, and then drawn through the city in pompous procession, amidst the joyful acclamations of the people, the oldest of whom had never beheld a similar triumph.

Thus far the operations of this terrific, itinerant army were successful. But the general's commission did not end with the destruction of the forts and harbour of Cherburg. By his secret instructions he was ordered to keep the coast of France in continual alarm; to make descents, and attack any place that might be found practicable, between the east point of Normandy and Morlaix. In compliance with these instructions, the fleet weighed anchor on the 18th of August, and steered towards St. Malo, with a design to make a second attack upon that nest of privateers. But they were obliged, by contrary winds, to run for the English coast. They came to an anchor in Weymouth road on the 23d; they sailed from thence on the 25th, but were obliged to put back the same evening. The next attempt proved more successful. The fleet, though not without difficulty, kept the sea, and, standing to the southward, soon made the coast of France; but it was the 4th of September before they came to an anchor in the bay of St. Lunaire, about two leagues west of St. Malo. Whilst the fleet was bringing up<sup>u</sup>, the commodore, with Prince Edward, (afterwards

<sup>u</sup> Account of our last attempt on the coast of France, by an officer.

A. D. duke of York,) who attended Mr. Howe in the capacity of  
 1758. midshipman, went off in their barge to reconnoitre the shore. Seeing no appearance of an enemy, the troops were disembarked, without opposition; but not entirely without misfortune. One of the flat-bottom boats being run down by the *Brilliant*, was overset, and five soldiers drowned. As soon as the troops were landed, Sir William Boothby, with 300 grtnadiers, was detached with orders to destroy a hundred and fifty vessels in the harbour of Briat, near St. Malo. He executed his commission effectually; but the number of vessels in that harbour did not exceed fifteen.

The British army continued in their encampment near St. Lunnaires four days, which were spent in deliberations concerning the practicability of an attack upon St. Malo. It was finally determined to be impracticable, and Mr. Howe having declared that it was impossible to re-embark the troops from the place where they had landed, it was resolved that the troops should march over land, and that the fleet should, in the mean time, proceed to the bay of St. Cas, and there remain ready to receive them. The commodore weighed anchor, and stood to the westward. On Friday, the 8th, in the morning, general Bligh struck his tents, and began his march towards the village of Gildau, where he was told the river which he must necessarily pass, was fordable at low water. The day's march, though short, proved fatiguing to the troops, on account of the heavy rain and bad roads; and, as the army marched in a single column, it was night before the rear came to their ground. When colonel Clark, who marched at the head of the advanced guard, arrived at the village of Gildau, he saw a body of about three hundred peasants on the opposite bank of the river, apparently forming with an intention to oppose his passage. A few shot from two or three field-pieces immediately dispersed them. Orders were issued to prepare for passing the river at six o'clock next morning, and the army went to rest. Next morning, at six o'clock, the troops were ready to plunge into the river, when it appeared that the general had been so totally misinformed as to the time of fording, that it was now *high* instead of *low* water, and that it would be three in the afternoon before the troops could pass. Such a mistake, though apparently of no  
 great

great importance, as it discovered the fallibility of the general's A. D. intelligence, was a bad omen. 1758.

The army forded the river in two columns, without any other molestation than a volley or two of musket-shot from the opposite village, by which lord Frederick Cavendish, and a few grenadiers were slightly wounded. They passed the river, and pitched their tents immediately. Why they marched no farther that night, is difficult to imagine. On Sunday morning the army again decamped, and marched towards Mattingnon. When the advanced guard approached the town, they saw a party of French dragoons, and observed that the hedges were lined by foot which seemed to be regulars. This being reported to the general, all the grenadiers were ordered to advance, and they pressed forward with great eagerness; but the enemy did not think fit to wait for them. Having marched about four miles, the army encamped to the southward of Mattingnon, after parading through the town by beat of drum. From this circumstance, it is evident that general Bligh had not the least idea that a superior army was at this time within a few hours march of his camp<sup>x</sup>.

This evening a French soldier was brought into the camp, who informed the general, that nine battalions of foot, two squadrons of dragoons, with five thousand gardes de costs, were on their march from Brest, and that they were not above two leagues distant. He named the general officers, and the regiments. His intelligence, however, produced no other effect than an order to the piquets of the English army to be particularly vigilant. During the night, the advanced guard of the enemy came so near, as to exchange some shot with the outposts. Nevertheless, general Bligh continued so totally unapprehensive, that he ordered the usual drums, preparatory to a march, to beat next morning at three o'clock. The drums beat accordingly, and the army marched, in a single column, towards St. Cas, which is about a league from Mattingnon. If the troops had marched in two columns, they would have reached

<sup>x</sup> "I recollect," says the author of the account of this expedition, "that the language of this day, in the mouths of some of our considerable personages was—" By G—d, a man might march through France with a single company of grenadiers."

their

A. D. their ships in half the time. When the head of the column  
1758. reached the eminence, about half a mile from the sea, they had orders to halt, and the regiments formed the line as they advanced in succession; but, before the grenadiers in the rear reached the ground, the youngest brigade was ordered to march down to the beach. Meanwhile the frigates which were intended to cover the embarkation, and the boats, were approaching the land. Before the grenadiers quitted the height, they saw the enemy advancing in four columns. The grenadiers marched deliberately down to the beach, and there rested on their arms, whilst the battalions were conveyed to their transports in the flat-bottom boats.

The rear of the English army had scarce quitted the height before it was possessed by the enemy. As soon as they began to descend, Mr. Howe made a signal for his frigates to fire; which order was executed with so much skill and dexterity, that many of the French were killed, and their whole army thrown into confusion. The British troops were now all embarked, except the grenadiers and four companies of the first regiment of guards; in all about 1400 men. The enemy continued to advance, and their cannon destroyed some of our boats. General Drury, who was now the senior officer on shore, formed his little army, and most imprudently advanced up the hill to meet his enemy. By this manœuvre he quitted a parapet of sand banks, and effectually silenced the frigates, which could not now fire without destroying their friends. This inconsiderable body of English troops, with every disadvantage of situation, and commanded by a man of no experience or abilities, maintained their ground against ten times their number, till most of them had entirely spent their ammunition. Thus circumstanced, after making terrible havock in the enemies ranks, they yielded to necessity, and retreated to their boats. Unhappily, the boats then in shore were insufficient to receive half the number of men which now crowded to the beach, and the boats were consequently in an instant so overloaded, that most of them were a-ground. In this horrible situation, exposed to the continual fire of a numerous army, they remained for some time; till, at last, the commodore himself leapt into his boat, and, rowing to the shore, took one of the flat-boats in tow. The rest of  
the

the fleet followed his example, and about 700 men were A. D. brought on board. The other half were either shot, taken prisoners, or drowned. Among the killed were major-general Drury, lieutenant-colonel Wilkinson, and Sir John Armitage, a volunteer. Lord Frederick Cavendish, lieutenant-colonels Pearson and Lambert, and sixteen officers of inferior rank, were taken prisoners. Four captains of men of war, who went on shore in order to expedite the embarkation of the troops, were also obliged to surrender themselves to the enemy. Eight seamen were killed, and seventeen wounded.

This terrible disaster was very justly ascribed to a total want of military knowledge, sagacity, and experience in the general, who imprudently gave ear to those about him, who talked of marching through France with a single company of British grenadiers. His marching, in an enemy's country, in a single column, was extremely imprudent. His beating *the general* the morning of his march from Mattington, was inexcusable; and his dilatory proceedings on the fatal day of embarkation, admit of no apology. But, though our loss on this occasion was considerable, the enemy had certainly no great cause of triumph: they had defeated a rear-guard of fourteen hundred men with an army of at least fifteen thousand, and their loss in killed and wounded was much greater than that of the English<sup>2</sup>. This check, however, was no proof that the minister's plan of operation was improper. His design was fully answered, and was certainly attended with salutary consequences. Commodore Howe returned to Spithead, and the troops were disembarked.

We are now to recollect, that, after the reduction of Senegal, an attempt was made upon the island of Goree; but without success, owing to the want of sufficient naval force. The British minister, sensible that his conquest on the coast of Africa was incomplete without the reduction of this island, sent out a

<sup>1</sup> Viz. Rowley, Maplefos, Paston, and Elphinston.

<sup>2</sup> In the account of this affair published at Paris, by authority, they acknowledge 400 men killed and wounded, and make the number of English prisoners 600. Now, as our entire loss was only 700, the number of our killed must have been proportionably very small. The real number of our killed and wounded was about 200. The French lost three times that number.

A. D. small squadron of four ships of the line, two frigates, and two bomb-ketches, commanded by commodore Keppel, with 600 land forces under colonel Worge. This armament sailed from Cork on the 11th of November, and, after a tempestuous voyage, anchored in the road of Goree, about a league from the island, on the 24th of December. Goree is a barren island, not a mile in length, situated near Cape Verde. The Dutch took possession of it in the beginning of the last century. The French took it in 1677, and since that period it has remained in possession of their East India Company. On the south-west side there was a small fort called St. Michael, and another, less considerable, called St. Francis, near the opposite extremity. Besides these forts, there were several slight batteries along the shore, mounting in the whole a hundred cannon. The garrison, commanded by Monf. St. Jean, consisted of 300 regulars, and about the same number of negro inhabitants.

On the 28th, in the morning, the troops were ordered into the boats, ready for landing, if necessary; and, the ships being properly stationed on the west side of the island, a general cannonading began, which was answered by the enemy with great spirit, and with such success, that above a hundred of the English were killed or wounded. Nevertheless, the French garrison, though not one of them was killed, were so terrified by the fire from the ships, that the governor was obliged to surrender at discretion. A detachment of marines was landed to take possession of the island, and the British flag was hoisted on the castle of St. Michael.

Mr. Keppel, having taken his prisoners on board, and left a sufficient garrison under the command of major Newton, touched at Senegal, and then returned to England. But this expedition, though successful, was not unattended by misfortunes. The Litchfield, of 50 guns, a transport, and a bomb-ketch, were on their outward passage separated from the fleet, and wrecked on the coast of Barbary, about nine leagues to the northward of Saffy. A hundred and thirty people, among which were several officers, were drowned. Captain Barton, with about two hundred and twenty, reached the inhospitable shore. They suffered great hardships, and were enslaved by the emperor of Morocco, our worthy ally, who held them in captivity

tivity till they were ransomed by the king of Great Britain. Such A. D.  
is the faith of barbarian princes! 1758.

Our naval exploits in the West Indies, in the course of this year, were not attended with any important consequences. There were performed, however, several gallant actions, which ought not to pass unnoticed. Captain Forrest of the *Augusta*, having sailed from Port-Royal in Jamaica, cruized off Cape Francis, a harbour in the island of St. Domingo; he was accompanied by the captains Suckling and Langdon, commanding the *Dreadnought* and *Edinburgh*. There lay at that time, at the Cape, a French squadron of four ships of the line and three stout frigates, which the French commodore, piqued at seeing the coast insulted by Forrest's little squadron, reinforced with several store-ships, which he mounted with cannon, and supplied with seamen from the merchant-vessels, and with soldiers from the garrison. Thus prepared, he weighed anchor, and stood out for sea. When Forrest perceived the approach of the French ships, he called his two captains. "Gentlemen," said he, "you know our own strength, and see that of the enemy. Shall we give them battle?" Being answered in the affirmative, he bore down on the French fleet, and, between three and four in the afternoon, came to action. The French attacked with great impetuosity, and displayed uncommon spirit in the sight of their own coast. But, after an engagement of more than two hours, their commodore found his ship so much shattered, that he was obliged to make a signal for his frigates to tow him out of the line. The rest of the squadron followed his example, and availed themselves of the land breeze to escape in the night from the three British ships, which were too much damaged in their sails and rigging to pursue their victory.

Captain Forrest signalized his courage in this engagement; but he displayed equal courage, and still more uncommon conduct and sagacity in a subsequent adventure near the western coast of Hispaniola. Having received intelligence, that there was a considerable French fleet at *Port au Prince*, a harbour on that coast, ready to sail for Europe, he proceeded from Jamaica to cruize between Hispaniola and the little island *Goave*. He disguised his ship with *tarpaulins*, hoisted Dutch colours, and, in order to avoid discovery, allowed several small vessels to pass,

A. D. without giving them chase. The second day after his arrival in  
 1758. those parts, he perceived a fleet of seven sail steering to the west-  
 ward. He kept from them to prevent suspicion, but, at the  
 approach of night, pursued them with all the sail he could crowd.  
 About ten in the evening he came up with two vessels of the  
 chase, one of which fired a gun, and the other sheered off.  
 The ship which had fired no sooner discovered her enemy, than  
 she submitted. Forrest manned her with thirty-five of his own  
 crew, and now perceiving eight sail to leeward, near the har-  
 bour of *Petit Gave*, ordered them to stand for that place, and  
 to intercept any vessels that attempted to reach it. He himself,  
 in the *Augusta*, sailed directly for the French fleet, and, coming  
 up with them by day-break, engaged them all by turns as he  
 could bring his guns to bear. The *Solide*, the *Theodore*, and  
 the *Marguerite*, returned his fire; but, having soon struck their  
 colours, they were immediately secured, and then employed in  
 taking the other vessels, of which none had the fortune to escape.  
 The nine sail, which, by this well-conducted stratagem, had  
 fallen into the power of one ship, and that even in the sight of  
 their own harbours, were safely conducted to Jamaica, where  
 the sale of their rich cargoes rewarded the merit of the captors.

While Forrest acquired wealth and glory by protecting the  
 trade of Jamaica, the vigilance of captain Tyrrel secured the  
 English navigation to Antigua. In the month of March, this  
 enterprizing and judicious commander demolished a fort on the  
 island of Martinico, and destroyed four privateers riding under  
 its protection. In November of the same year, he, in his  
 own ship the *Buckingham* of sixty-four guns, accompanied by  
 the *Weazle* sloop commanded by captain Boles, discovered, be-  
 tween the islands of Guadaloupe and Montserrat, a fleet of nine-  
 teen sail under convoy of the *Florissant*, a French man of war of  
 seventy-four guns, and two frigates, of which the largest car-  
 ried thirty-eight, and the other twenty-six guns. Captain Tyr-  
 rel, regardless of the great inequality of force, immediately gave  
 chase in the *Buckingham*; and the *Weazle*, running close to  
 the enemy, received a whole broadside from the *Florissant*.  
 Though she sustained it without considerable damage, Mr. Tyr-  
 rel ordered captain Boles to keep aloof, as his vessel could not  
 be



be supposed to bear the shock of heavy metal; and he alone prepared for the engagement. The *Florissant*, instead of lying to for him up, made a running fight with her stern chase, while the two frigates annoyed the *Buckingham* in her pursuit. At length, however, she came within pistol-shot of the *Florissant*, and poured in a broadside, which did great execution. The salutation was returned with spirit, and the battle became close and obstinate. Mr. Tyrrel, being wounded, was obliged to leave the deck, and the command devolved on the brave Mr. Marshall, his first lieutenant, who fell in the arms of victory. The second lieutenant took the command, and finally silenced the enemy's fire. On board the *Florissant* 180 men were slain, and 360 wounded. She was so much disabled in her hull, that she could hardly be kept afloat. The largest frigate received equal damage. The *Buckingham* had only seven men killed, and seventeen dangerously wounded: she had suffered much, however, in her masts and rigging, which was the only circumstance that prevented her from adding profit to glory, by making prizes of the French fleet under so powerful a convoy.

In the East Indies the French squadron was commanded by Mr. d'Aché, and the English by admiral Pocock, who had succeeded admiral Watson. The former was reinforced by a considerable armament under the command of general Lally, an adventurer of Irish extraction in the French service. The English admiral was also reinforced on the 24th of March by four ships of the line; and, being soon after apprized of Lally's arrival, he hoisted his flag aboard the *Yarmouth*, a ship of sixty-four guns, and sailed in quest of the enemy. He made the height of Negapatam the 28th of March, and the day following discovered the enemy's fleet in the road of Fort St. David. It consisted of eight ships of the line, and a frigate, which immediately stood out to sea, and formed the line of battle. Pocock's

• FRENCH.

<i>Zodisque</i> ,	—	74 guns.
<i>Bien Aimé</i> ,	—	74 —
<i>Vengeance</i> ,	—	64 —
<i>St. Louis</i> ,	—	64 —

Duke of Orleans, — 60 guns.

Duke of Bourgogne,	—	60 —
<i>Condé</i> ,	—	50 —
<i>Moras</i> ,	—	50 —
<i>Sylphide</i> ,	—	36 —

A. D. squadron consisted only of seven ships<sup>b</sup>; with which he formed 1758: the line, and, bearing down upon Mr. d'Aché, began the engagement. The French commodore, having sustained a warm action for about two hours, in which one of his largest ships was disabled, sheered off with his whole fleet. Being afterwards joined with two more ships of war, he again formed the line of battle to leeward. Admiral Pocock, though his own ship and several others were considerably damaged, and, though three of his captains<sup>c</sup> had misbehaved in the engagement, prepared again for the attack. But the manœuvres of the French fleet seem to have been intended merely to amuse him; for they neither showed lights, nor gave any signal in the night, and next morning the smallest trace of them could not be observed.

Admiral Pocock made various attempts to bring the French squadron to a second engagement. These, however, proved ineffectual till the third of August, when he perceived the enemy's fleet, consisting of eight ships of the line and a frigate, standing to sea off the road of Pondicherry. They would have gladly eluded his pursuit, but he obtained the weather gage, and sailed down upon them in order of battle. As it was now impossible to escape without coming to action, the French prepared for the engagement, and fired on the *Elisabeth*, which happened to be within musket-shot of the ship in their van. But this spirited attack was not seconded with equal perseverance. In little more than ten minutes after admiral Pocock had displayed the signal for battle, Mr. d'Aché set his fore-sail, and bore away, maintaining a running fight in a very irregular line for

b ENGLISH			Weymouth,	—	60 guns.
Cumberland,	—	66 guns.	Tyger,	—	60 —
Yarmouth,	—	64 —	Newcastle,	—	50 —
Elisabeth,	—	64 —	Salisbury,	—	50 —

<sup>c</sup> Captain Breton of the *Cumberland* was one of the three who misbehaved. God forbid that we should particularise an individual with a view to insult his misfortunes. A man may possess much probity, great good sense, and many amiable qualities, without being born with that constitutional courage, or endowed with that accurate circumspection, which qualifies him for doing his duty as a sea-officer. We name this gentleman as an example, that the character of a naval commander, when once hurt by misconduct, is seldom to be retrieved; and we would, if possible, persuade men in power of the dangerous consequences of again intrusting, with an honourable employment, those who, on any former occasion, have shewed themselves undeserving of so important a charge.

near

near an hour. The whole squadron immediately followed his A. D. example; and at two o'clock they cut away their boats, crowded sail, and put before the wind. They escaped by favour of the night into the road of Pondicherry; but their fleet was so much damaged, that, in the beginning of September, their commodore sailed for the isle of Bourbon in order to refit, thus leaving the English admiral (whose squadron had always been inferior to that of the French in number of ships and men as well as in weight of metal) sovereign of the Indian seas.

Having examined the naval successes of Great Britain in the different quarters of the world, we shall, for the reader's satisfaction, exhibit in one view the consequences of these glorious exploits. During the course of this year the French lost sixteen men of war<sup>d</sup>, while the English lost no more than three<sup>e</sup>: the French lost forty-nine privateers and armed merchantmen, carrying 619 guns and 3824 men. The diminution of their commerce, and the dread of falling into the hands of the English, prevented many of their trading vessels from venturing to sea. Of these, however, they lost 104; and not less than 176 neutral vessels, laden with the rich produce of the French colonies, or with military and naval stores, to enable them to continue the war, rewarded the vigilance of the English navy. The loss of ships, on the part of Great Britain, amounted to three hundred and thirteen, a considerable number, but consisting chiefly of empty transports, and coasting or disarmed vessels, of little value or importance.

The capture of so many of the enemy's vessels, though it added much wealth and glory to those concerned in maritime affairs, was not the only, or even the principal advantage which Great Britain derived from the spirited efforts of her seamen. The conquests acquired to the nation were still more important. Not to mention the taking of fort Du Quesne, on the river

<sup>d</sup> These were the *Foudroyant* of 80 guns; the *Esperance* 74; the *Alcide*, *Lys*, *Orpheus*, *Raisonné*, of 64 each; the *Arc en Ciel* and *Duc d'Aquitaine* of 50 guns each; the *Aquilon* of 48; the *Royal Chariot* and *Hermione* of 36 each; the *Melampé*, *Emerald*, and *Nymph*, of 34; the *Bruse* of 30; and the *Galatée* of 32.

<sup>e</sup> These were the *Warwick* of 60 guns; the *Greenwich*, 50; the *Winchelsea*, 24-

**A. D.** Ohio, a place of the utmost consequence, on account both of **1758**. its strength and situation ; the acquisition of the strong fortrefs of Louisbourg, with the islands of Cape Breton and St. John ; the demolition of Frontenac, and the reduction of Senegal, were events not more destructive to the commerce and colonies of France, than advantageous to those of Great Britain : even the British expeditions to the coast of France, though conducted with little prudence, brought glory and renown to the invaders, and taught an ambitious people, that, while they were intent on ravaging the territory of their neighbours, their own dominions were still within the reach of the British thunder.

The repeated triumphs of the year had inspired the English with a warlike enthusiasm : they discoursed about nothing but new plans of conquest ; and every object appeared inconsiderable, compared with military glory. In this disposition of the nation, the king assembled the parliament the 23d day of November. The lord-keeper, who harangued them in his name, (the king being indisposed), recapitulated the glorious events of the war, and observed, that, as it was uncommonly extensive, it must likewise be uncommonly burdensome ; but that no higher supplies should be required, than such as were adequate to the necessary services. The nation were not at present of a temper to refuse any reasonable demand. They voted, therefore, sixty thousand seamen, including fourteen thousand eight hundred and forty-five marines, for the service of the ensuing year ; and they granted for their maintainance the sum of three millions one hundred and twenty thousand pounds. Besides this, two hundred thousand pounds were voted towards the building and repairing of ships of war. These sums together, how enormous soever they may appear, amounted to little more than was annually expended in subsidies to German princes, and pay to German troops. Yet the former rendered the English name illustrious in every quarter of the globe, while the advantages of the latter still remain undiscovered.

**1759.** The operations of the year 1759 began in the West Indies. In the end of the preceding year, a squadron of nine ships of the line, with one frigate and four bomb-ketches, as well as sixty transports, containing six regiments of foot, commanded by general Hopson, sailed thither, with orders to attack and reduce

reduce the French Caribbee islands. The fleet was to be under A. D. the orders of commodore Moore, who was already in those parts. Martinico, as the seat of government, and the centre of commerce, is the most considerable of these islands. The principal towns are St. Pierre and Port-Royal, places strong by nature and art, and at that time defended by a numerous and well-disciplined militia, as well as by a considerable body of regular troops. Port-Royal was the first object of English ambition. The ships of war easily drove the enemy from their batteries and entrenchments, and the troops landed without meeting any considerable opposition : but after they had effected their landing, they found it impossible to convey the cannon to a sufficient vicinity for attacking the town. General Hopson judged the difficulties on the land side unsurmountable. Commodore Moore thought it impossible to land the cannon nearer the town ; and, in consequence of these opinions, the forces were re-embarked, in order to proceed to St. Pierre. When they had arrived before that place, and examined its situation, new difficulties arose, which occasioned a council of war. The commodore had no doubt of being able to reduce the town, but, as the troops had suffered greatly by diseases, and the ships might be so much disabled in the attack, as to prevent them from availing themselves of their success, and from undertaking any other expedition during that season, he advised, that the armament should be brought before Guadaloupe, the reduction of which would tend greatly to the benefit of the English sugar islands. Guadaloupe falls little short of Martinico in the quantity and richness of its productions. It long continued, however, in a languishing condition, the French having treated Martinico with the predilection of a partial mother for a favourite child, to the great prejudice of all her other colonies. But the situation and natural advantages of Guadaloupe abundantly justified the opinion of commodore Moore ; and if our ministers had understood the value of such a conquest, this island might have still continued a bright gem in the British crown. The fleet arrived, on the 23d of January, before the town of Basseterre, the capital of Guadaloupe, a place of considerable extent, defended by a strong battery, which, in the opinion of the chief engineer, could not be reduced by the shipping. But commodore

A. D. dore Moore entertained very different sentiments, and brought  
 1759. his ships to bear on the town and citadel. The *Lyon*, a ship of 60 guns, commanded by captain Trelawney, began the engagement, against a battery of ninety guns: the rest of the fleet took their stations a-breast of the other batteries, and the action, in a little time, became general. The commodore, meanwhile, shifted his flag into the *Woolwich* frigate, and kept aloof without gun-shot, that he might have a more distinct view of the state of the battle; an expedient seldom practised, though the propriety of it cannot admit of the smallest doubt. All the sea commanders behaved with extraordinary spirit and resolution in the attack; particularly captains Leslie, Burnet, Gayton, Jekyl, Trelawney and Shuldham. The action had lasted from nine in the morning till five in the afternoon, when the fire of the citadel was silenced. The *Burford* and *Berwick* being driven to sea, captain Shuldham in the *Panther*, was unsupported, and two batteries played on the *Rippon*, captain Jekyl, who silenced one of them, but could not prevent his vessel from running a-ground. The enemy, perceiving her disaster, assembled on the hill, lined the trenches, and poured in a severe fire of musquetry: they afterwards brought an eighteen pounder to bear, and, for two hours, raked her fore and aft with great effect: a box, containing nine hundred cartridges, blew up on the poop, and set the ship on fire. The captain hoisted a signal of distress, which brought captain Leslie, in the *Bristol*, who ran in between the *Rippon* and the battery, and engaged with such impetuosity, as saved captain Jekyl from destruction, which otherwise was unavoidable. At seven in the evening, the large ships having silenced the batteries to which they were opposed, the four bombs began to play on the town, with shells and carcasses. In a short time the houses were in flames, the magazines of gunpowder blew up with a terrible explosion, and the sugar, rum, and other combustible materials composing a continued and permanent line of fire, formed a suitable background to this terrible picture.

Norwithstanding the vivacity of the engagement, the loss, on the part of the British, was not very considerable. Next day our fleet came to anchor in the road, off Basseterre, having intercepted several ships, which had turned out and endeavoured

to

to escape. They found the hulls of several more vessels, which A. D. the enemy had set on fire, to prevent them from falling into their 1759 hands. The troops landed in the afternoon, without opposition, took possession of the town and citadel, and displayed the British colours on the walls. The country, however, was still far from being reduced: it abounded in mountains and narrow defiles, of difficult and dangerous access; and although the governor, Monsieur D'Etreuil, possessed neither bravery nor conduct, the inhabitants of Guadaloupe were determined to defend their possessions to the last extremities. It is foreign to our design to enter into any detail of the operations by land, which were drawn out to an extraordinary length. The French were too prudent to hazard a general engagement with regular troops: they determined to weary them out, if possible, by maintaining a kind of petty war, in detached parties, in which the British were harassed by hard duty, and suffered greatly by diseases in an unhealthy climate, ill supplied with those conveniencies to which they were accustomed. In this manner the war continued from the 24th of January till the first of May, when the inhabitants of Guadaloupe thought proper to capitulate. Their example was followed, a few days afterwards, by those of Desirade, Santos, and Petite-terre, three small islands in that neighbourhood; and, on the 26th of May, the island of Marie-Galante likewise surrendered, which left the French no footing in the Leeward Islands.

These conquests being happily finished, part of the troops were sent in the transports to England. They sailed the 3d of July from the harbour of Basseterre; and next day commodore Moore's squadron was joined by two ships of the line, which rendered him greatly superior to Mr. de Bompert, the French commodore, who lay in the harbour of Martinico. At this time vice-admiral Cotes commanded in the Jamaica station; but neither he nor Moore could bring Mr. de Bompert to an engagement: so that the naval transactions in the West Indies, during the remainder of the year, consisted solely in the taking of several rich prizes and armed ships of the enemy, by cruizers detached from the English squadrons.

The reduction of Guadaloupe, and the neighbouring islands, afforded an auspicious omen for the success of the British opera-

A. D. tions in North America. These were carried on in the year 1759. 1759, on the most extensive scale. The splendour of military triumph, and the display of extraordinary genius in the art of war, eclipsed, in some measure, the glory of the navy. But if we consider the conduct of the war with attention, we shall find, that our admirals had a principal share in the happy consequences which resulted even from our military expeditions. The hearty and powerful co-operation of the navy facilitated every enterprize; but the nation, fond of novelty, and transported with their successes by land, to which they were less accustomed, conferred the most exalted honours on their generals, while they hardly bestowed due praise on their naval commanders. About the middle of February, a squadron of twenty-one sail of the line sailed from England, under the command of the admirals Saunders and Holmes, two gentlemen of approved honour and bravery. By the 21st of April they were in sight of Louisbourg; but, the harbour being blocked up with ice, they were obliged to bear away for Halifax. From hence they detached rear-admiral Durel, with a small squadron, to the isle of Courdres, in the river St. Lawrence, in hopes that he might intercept a fleet of French transports and victuallers destined for Quebec. He accordingly took two store-ships; but, before he reached his station, seventeen sail of transports had already got to the capital of Canada. Meanwhile admiral Saunders arrived at Louisbourg, and took on board eight thousand troops, under the command of general Wolfe, whose name is so illustrious in the memoirs of the present year. With this armament it was intended, that the general should proceed up the river St. Lawrence, and undertake the siege of Quebec. The reduc-

† The Neptune, —	90 guns.	The Alcide, —	64 guns.
Royal William, —	80 —	Devonshire, —	64 —
Princess Amelia, —	80 —	Captain, —	64 —
Dublin, —	74 —	Stirling Castle, —	64 —
Shrewsbury, —	74 —	Prince of Orange, —	60 —
Northumberland, —	70 —	Medway, —	60 —
Oxford, —	70 —	Pembroke, —	60 —
Somerfet, —	70 —	Bedford, —	60 —
Vanguard, —	70 —	Centurion, —	54 —
Terrible, —	64 —	Sutherland, —	50 —
Trident, —	64 —		

tion



tion of this wealthy and populous city, which gave an opening A. D. to the possession of all Canada, was the object to which all the 1759. other operations of the English in North America were subservient, and which they were designed to assist. For this purpose general Amherst, who commanded an army of regulars and provincials, amounting to twelve thousand men, was ordered to reduce Ticonderoga and Crown-Point, cross the lake Champlain, and proceed along the river Richelieu, to the banks of the St. Lawrence, to effect a junction with the armament under Wolfe and Saunders. For the same purpose, general Prideaux, who commanded the provincials of New York, with a large body of the Indians of the five nations, collected by the influence of Sir William Johnson, was commissioned to invest the French fort erected near the fall of Niagara, and, having seized that important pass, to embark on the lake Ontario, fall down the river St. Lawrence, and co-operate with the united armies. This scheme, however, was too refined and complicated to be put in execution. The operations began by the taking of Crown-Point and Ticonderoga; the English standard was also displayed at Niagara. But these events were not of the smallest importance in effecting the conquest of Quebec; nor did the troops engaged in them afford any assistance to the northern armament. This, of itself, under such commanders as Wolfe and Saunders, seconded by the happy star of Britain, which every where prevailed in the present year, was sufficient to perform far more than had been expected, and to overcome obstacles of art and nature, that, at first sight, appeared unsurmountable.

Admiral Saunders arrived the latter end of June, with his whole embarkation, at the isle of Orleans, a few leagues from Quebec. As he had discovered some excellent charts of the river St. Lawrence in vessels taken from the enemy, he experienced none of those difficulties with which the navigation of this immense stream is said to be attended. The island of Orleans extends quite up to the basin of Quebec, and its most westerly point advances to a high promontory on the continent, called Point Levi. Both these were at present occupied by the French, but not with such powerful guards as their importance required. The first operation of general Wolfe's troops was to

A. D. dislodge the enemy, and to secure these posts, without the command of which the fleet could not have lain in safety in the harbour of Quebec. This city now appeared full to view, at once a tempting and discouraging sight: no place is more favoured by nature, and there is none of which nature seems more to have consulted the defence: it consists of an upper and lower town, the former built on a lofty rock, which runs with a bold and steep front along the western banks of the river St. Lawrence: at the termination of this ridge, the river St. Charles, from the north-west, and the St. Lawrence join their waves, which renders the ground on which Quebec stands a sort of peninsula. On the side of St. Lawrence is a bank of sand, which prevents the approach of large vessels to the town; an enemy, therefore, who attacks it, must either traverse the precipice which I have mentioned, or cross the river St. Charles. If he attempts the former, he must overcome a dangerous rock, defended by the whole force of the besieged, which the importance of the post would draw thither. The difficulty of approaching the place, by Charles River, is not less considerable, as all the country to the northward, for more than five miles, is rough, broken and unequal, full of rivulets and gullies, and so continues to the river of Montmorenci, which flows by the foot of a steep and woody hill. Between the two rivers the French army was posted, their camp strongly fortified, and their forces, amounting to twelve thousand men, commanded by Mr. Montcalm, a general of tried bravery and conduct, General Wolfe, having seized the west point of the isle of Orleans, and that of Levi, erected batteries on the high grounds, which fired continually on the town. Admiral Saunders was stationed in the north channel of the isle of Orleans, opposite the Falls of Montmorenci, while admiral Holmes proceeded up the river St. Lawrence, beyond Quebec, which not only diverted the enemy's attention from the quarter on which the attack was intended, but prevented their attempts against the batteries already erected by the English. But, notwithstanding this advantageous position, to undertake the siege of a city skilfully fortified, well supplied with provisions and ammunition, and defended by an army far superior to that of the besiegers, was a design so bold and adventurous, that even the sanguine temper  
of

of general Wolfe began to despair of its success: yet, what- A. D.  
ever it was possible to perform, he was determined to at- 1759.  
tempt. He caused the troops, therefore, to be transported  
over the north channel of the river St. Lawrence to the  
north-east of Montmorenci, with a view, after he had crossed  
the latter, of moving towards the enemy's flanks, and en-  
ticing them to an engagement. But his endeavours in this way  
proved ineffectual, Mr. Montcalm having chosen his situa-  
tion with too much judgment to abandon it imprudently.  
Meanwhile the fleet had been exposed to the most imminent  
danger. A violent storm had caused several transports to run  
foul of each other; many boats foundered, and some large  
ships lost their anchors. The enemy, taking advantage of the  
confusion produced by this disaster, sent down seven fire-ships  
from Quebec at midnight, which must have been attended with  
the most fatal consequences to the whole expedition, had not  
the English sailors resolutely boarded these instruments of de-  
struction, run them fast a-ground, and prevented them from  
doing the smallest damage to the British Squadron.

The general, despairing of being able to decoy the enemy to  
an engagement, and sensible that the approach of winter would  
put an end to all military operations in that northern climate,  
came at last to the resolution of forcing the French entrench-  
ments. The best dispositions were made for this purpose both  
by sea and land; but the design was disappointed by an accident  
which could neither be foreseen nor prevented: the English  
grenadiers, who led the attack, had orders to form themselves  
on the beach; but, instead of attending to this necessary in-  
junction, they rushed with an impetuous ardour towards the  
enemy's entrenchments in the most tumultuous confusion: they  
were met by a violent and steady fire, which prevented them  
from being able to form, and obliged them to take shelter be-  
hind a redoubt, which the French had abandoned on their ap-  
proach. There they were forced to continue till night came on,  
when it was necessary to make a retreat, which could not be  
effected without considerable loss.

This check is said to have had a strong effect on the mind and  
health of general Wolfe, who saw all his own measures mis-  
carry, while those of other commanders in North America,  
during

A. D. during the same year, had been attended with extraordinary success. About this time he sent home a letter, couched in terms of despondency, but which displayed a spirit that would continue the campaign to the last possible moment. As it seemed necessary to abandon all farther prospects of gaining any advantage on the side of Montmorenci, admiral Holmes's Squadron, which had returned to assist in the late unsuccessful attack, was again ordered to move up the river for several days successively. This had a better effect than before; for, though Montcalm kept his situation, he detached Mr. de Bougainville with 1500 men to watch the motions of the English admiral. Admiral Saunders, who still remained in his first position, was ordered to make a feint with every appearance of reality, as if the troops had intended to land below the town, and attack the French entrenchments on the Beauport shore. While the enemy were amused by these movements, the general embarked his troops aboard the transports the 12th July at one in the morning, and proceeded three leagues farther up the river than the intended place of landing: then he put them into boats, and fell down silently with the tide, unobserved by the French centinels posted along the shore: the ships of war followed them, and, by a well-conducted navigation, arrived exactly at the time concerted, to cover their landing. When they were put on shore, a hill appeared before them extremely high and steep, having a little winding path, so narrow that two men could not go abreast, and even this strongly entrenched and defended by a captain's guard. This small body was speedily dislodged by the English light infantry; after which the whole army ascended the hill, and at day-break appeared regularly formed in order of battle.

Montcalm could hardly believe the advices that were brought him, so impregnable did he imagine the city to be on this side: but his own observation soon convinced him of the English movements, and that the high town might be attacked by their army, while the low town might be destroyed by their fleet. It was thus become necessary, notwithstanding all his disinclination to such a measure, to decide the fate of Quebec by the event of a battle: accordingly he quitted Beauport, passed the river St. Charles, and formed his troops opposite to the English army. The success of this engagement, conducted with the most

most deliberate wisdom, united with the most heroic bravery, put A. D. Great Britain in possession of the capital of French America. It 1759. is foreign to my design to describe the judicious disposition, animated behaviour, and steady persevering courage of the British troops: these were the immediate cause of the reduction of Quebec; but the matter could not have been brought to this issue, had not the marine co-operated with an unanimity, ardour, and perseverance, that can never be enough celebrated. When the English entered the place, they found the fortifications in tolerable order, but the houses almost totally demolished. Five thousand men were left to defend the garrison, and the remainder returned to England with the fleet, which failed soon, lest it should be locked up by the frost in the river St. Lawrence.

If we turn our attention to the affairs of the East Indies, we shall find the British arms equally triumphant. The French were unsuccessful in all their attempts by land, particularly in the siege of Madras: they had still, however, a considerable superiority of land-forces in India, and they had strained every nerve to enable the fleet under Mr. d'Aché to cope with that of admiral Pocock. The former was augmented to eleven<sup>a</sup> sail of the line, besides frigates and store-ships, an armament hitherto unknown in the Indian seas. The English commander no sooner had intelligence of their arrival in those parts, than he sailed to the coast of Coromandel, and determined, by the most unremitting exertions of vigilance, to pursue, and give them battle. This resolution shows the ardour and spirit of the English navy at this period, as their enemies had a superiority of 192 guns, 2365 men, besides a great advantage in the size of their ships<sup>b</sup>. In the morning of the second of September the French fleet were descried from the mast-head: admiral Pocock immediately threw out the signal for a general chase; but, the wind abating, he could not approach near enough to engage, though

<sup>a</sup> These were;

		Guns.	Men.			Guns.	Men.
The Zodiaque,	—	74	660	The Illustre,	—	64	600
Minataur,	—	74	660	The Fortune,	—	64	600
The Count of Provence,	74	660		The Avenger,	—	64	500
The Centaur,	—	70	660	The Duke of Orleans,	60	500	
The Active,	—	64	600	The St. Louis,	—	60	500
				The Duke of Bourgogne,	60	500	

<sup>b</sup> See a list of the English vessels, p. 131.

he

A. D. he crowded all the sail he could carry: during several days his  
 1759 endeavours to bring the French fleet to an engagement, which they always declined, were equally fruitless. At length they totally disappeared, and the admiral stood for Pondicherry, on a supposition that they intended to sail thither. His conjecture was well founded; for on the eighth day of September he observed them standing to the southward, and on the tenth, about two in the afternoon, Mr. d'Aché, seeing no possibility to escape, made the signal for battle. The cannonading began without farther delay, and both squadrons engaged with equal impetuosity: but the French directing their cannon at the masts and rigging, while the English fired only at the hulls of the ships, the former sustained such a loss of men, and found their vessels in so shattered a condition that they were glad to sheer off, with all their canvas set. The loss on the side of the English was not inconsiderable, there being in the whole 369 men killed and wounded: but that on the side of the French must have been far greater, as their ships could hardly keep the sea, and they were obliged to make the best of their way to the island of Mauritius, in order to be refitted. Soon after this engagement admiral Cornish arrived from England with four ships of the line, and confirmed the dominion of the English over the Indian seas.

The French, being equally unsuccessful in Asia, Africa, and America, sought in vain to repair their misfortunes: no sooner was a fleet put to sea than it was either taken or destroyed: they were active to no purpose; for, while they built and armed vessels with the greatest speed and diligence, they only laboured for the English, whose fleet was continually augmented by captures from the enemy. But neither the loss of their possessions, nor the destruction of their fleets, nor the complaints of twenty millions of people exhausted by oppression, could check the fatal ambition of the French court. The ministry seemed to derive courage from despair, and the greater misfortunes they sustained, the more daring were the projects which they had in agitation. All their ports were now filled with preparations for an invasion of Great Britain. Men of war, transports, and flat-bottomed boats were got ready with the utmost diligence: they talked of a triple embarkation. Mr. Thurot, who,

who, from being captain of a merchant vessel, had successively A. D. become a commander of a privateer, and now a commodore in 1759. the French service, commanded a squadron of men of war and several transports at Dunkirk, which, it was believed, were intended against Scotland. The design against England was to be carried on from Havre de Grace and some other ports of Normandy, where a great number of flat-bottomed boats had been prepared for the purpose of transporting troops. The third embarkation, destined against Ireland, was to be made at Vannes in the Lower Brittany. The land-forces were commanded by the Duc d'Aguillon, while a powerful squadron under Mr. de Conflans was to cover and secure their landing. In order to counteract these machinations, the English ministry ordered a squadron under commodore Boyce to be stationed before Dunkirk: admiral Hawke was sent with a large fleet to block up the harbour of Brest, while a smaller fleet kept a watch upon that of Vannes. As to Havre, from which the danger seemed most imminent, rear-admiral Rodney was dispatched, with orders immediately to proceed to the bombardment of that place. He accordingly anchored in the road of Havre in the beginning of July, and made a disposition to execute his instructions. The bomb-ketches were placed in the narrow channel of the river leading to Honfleur; and, having begun the bombardment, continued to throw their shells for above two days without intermission. The town was set on fire in several places, the boats overfet or reduced to ashes, and, at the expence of nineteen hundred shells and eleven hundred carcasses, the French preparations at Havre were totally destroyed.

While the danger threatening England from the northern coast of France was thus happily removed, the honour of the British flag was effectually maintained by the gallant admiral Boscawen, who commanded in the Mediterranean. The French had assembled there a considerable armament under the com-

i It consisted of the following ships:

L'Océan,	—	80 guns.
Le Redoubtable,	—	74 —
Le Centaur,	—	74 —
Le Souverain,	—	74 —
Le Guerrier,	—	64 —
Le Teméraire,	—	74 —
Le Fantôme,	—	64 —

Le Modeste,	—	64 guns.
Le Lion,	—	64 —
Le Triton,	—	64 —
Le Fier,	—	50 —
L'Oriflamme,	—	50 —
Le Chimère,	—	26 —
La Mineure,	—	24 —
La Gracieuse,	—	24 —

VOL. IV.

T

mand

A. D. mand of Mr. de la Clue, which some believed to be destined 1752 for America, while others conjectured, that it was designed to reinforce the Squadron at Brest, and to co-operate with it in the intended descent on the English coast. At present Mr. de la Clue continued to lie in the harbour of Toulon, before which admiral Boscawen took his station with fourteen ships of the line<sup>k</sup>, besides frigates and fire-ships.

Boscawen, having in vain displayed the British flag in sight of Toulon, and tried every other art to bring the enemy to an engagement, ordered three ships of the line, commanded by the captains Smith, Barker, and Harland, to advance and burn two French vessels lying close to the mouth of the harbour. They prepared for executing their orders with the utmost alacrity, but met with a warm reception from several batteries, which had not been before perceived; and, the wind unfortunately subsiding into a calm, they sustained such considerable damage as made it convenient for the English admiral to put into Gibraltar to refit his shattered ships. Mr. de la Clue seized this opportunity of sailing, in hopes of passing the Gut of Gibraltar unmolested during the absence of the English fleet. But Boscawen had previously detached two frigates, of which one cruized off Malaga, and the other hovered between Estepona and the fortress of Ceuta, in order to observe the motions of the enemy. On the 17th day of August the Gibraltar frigate made the signal at the mast-head for the enemy being in sight; upon which the English admiral without delay hove up his anchors, and put to sea. At day-light he descried seven large ships, part of Mr. de la Clue's squadron, from which five ships of the line and three frigates had been separated in the night. Having made the signal to chase, and to engage in line of battle a-head, his foremost ships came up with the rear of the enemy about half after two. The admiral himself did not wait to return the fire of the

<sup>k</sup> These were;

The Namur,	—	90 guns.	The Intrepid,	—	64 guns.
Prince	—	90 —	Edgar,	—	64 —
Newark,	—	80 —	America,	—	64 —
Culoden,	—	74 —	St. Alban's,	—	60 —
Warspight.	—	74 —	Jersey,	—	60 —
Conqueror,	—	74 —	Portland,	—	60 —
Swifsure,	—	79 —	Guernsey,	—	50 —

Sternmost,



sternmost, but employed every effort to come up with the Ocean, A. D. which Mr. de la Clue commanded in person; and about four 1759. o'clock he ran athwart her hawse, and poured into her a furious broadside, which was returned with equal vivacity. This dispute, however, was not of long continuance; for the French admiral being wounded in the engagement, and the next in command perceiving that Boscawen's vessel had lost her mizen-mast and top-sail yards, went off with all the sail he could carry. Mr. Boscawen shifted his flag from the *Namur* to the *Newark*, and joined some other ships in attacking the *Centaur*, which was obliged to strike. The pursuit continued all night, and Mr. de la Clue, finding himself at day-break on the coast of Portugal, determined rather to burn his ships than allow them to fall into the hands of the victors. When he reached the Portuguese shore, he put his ship under the protection of the Fort Almada-na, to which the English paid no regard. He himself landed with part of his men; but the count de Carne, who succeeded to the command of the Ocean, having received a broadside from the *America*, struck his colours, and the English took possession of this noble prize, deemed the best ship in the French navy. Meanwhile captain Bentley brought off the *Temeraire*, little damaged, and having on board all her officers and men; while rear-admiral Broderic burnt the *Redoubtable*, and took the *Modeste*. The scattered remains of the French fleet got with difficulty into the harbour of Cadiz, where they were soon after blocked up. Nothing was wanting to complete the glory of this victory; for it was obtained with the loss of only fifty-six men killed, and 196 wounded, and not one officer lost in the action.

After the memorable naval engagement off Cape Lagos, the French met with a disaster by land equally calamitous. The important battle of Minden deprived them of all hopes of again getting possession of Hanover, or of putting their affairs in such a situation in Germany as might afford them the prospect of any other than an ignominious peace. They were under the unhappy necessity, therefore, of trying a last effort on an element which had hitherto been extremely unpropitious to all their designs. Their sole hopes now centered in their fleets at Brest and Dunkirk, of which the former was blocked up by admiral Hawke, and the latter by commodore Boyce. They still expected, how-

A. D. ever, that the winter storms would compel the English fleets to 1759 take refuge in their own harbours, and thus afford them an opportunity to cross the sea unopposed, and to execute the object of their destination against the British coasts. In this expectation they were not wholly disappointed: on the 12th of October, a violent gale of wind; which gathered into an irresistible storm, drove the English squadrons off the French coast. Thurot, a French adventurer, availed himself of this accident to obtain his release from Dunkirk, without being discovered by commodore Boyce, who, upon the first information of his departure, sailed immediately in pursuit of him: but Thurot had the good fortune or dexterity to elude his vigilance, by entering the port of Gottenburg in Sweden, where he was laid up till after Christmas by the severity of the weather, and want of necessaries to enable his ships and men to keep the seas.

Admiral Hawke's squadron had taken refuge, during the violence of the storm, in the harbour of Torbay. When its fury began to subside, the French admiral Conflans, perceiving no enemy on the coast, immediately put to sea. But the same day that he sailed from Brest, the English admiral sailed from Torbay. The two squadrons were the most powerful of any employed

ENGLISH FLEET.

	Guns.	Men.
Royal George, —	100	880
Union, —	90	770
Duke, —	90	750
Namur, —	90	780
Mars, —	74	600
Warspight, —	74	600
Hercules, —	74	600
Torbay, —	74	700
Magnanime, —	74	700
Resolution, —	74	600
Hero, —	74	600
Swiftsure, —	70	520
Dorsetshire, —	70	520
Burford, —	70	520
Chichester, —	70	520
Temple, —	70	520
Revenge, —	64	480
Essex, —	64	480

	Guns.	Men.
Kingslon, —	60	400
Intrepid, —	60	420
Montague, —	60	420
Dunkirk, —	60	420
Detance, —	60	420

FRENCH FLEET.

	Guns.	Men.
Le Soleil Royal, —	80	1200
Le Tonnant, —	80	1000
Le Formidable, —	80	1000
L'Orient, —	80	1000
L'Intrepide, —	74	815
Le Glorieux, —	74	815
Le Thesée, —	74	815
L'Heros, —	74	815
Le Robuste, —	74	815
Le Magnifique, —	74	815
Le Juste, —	70	800
Le		

played in the course of the war, and worthy to be entrusted A. D. with the fate of the two leading kingdoms in Europe. Their 1759- forces were nearly equal, the English being, by some vessels, more numerous, but having no superiority in number of men, or weight of metal.

Sir Edward Hawke directed his course for Quiberon-bay on the coast of Bretagne, which he conjectured would be the rendezvous of the French squadron. But here fortune opposed his well-concerted measures; for a strong gale sprung up in an easterly point, and drove the English fleet a great way to the westward: at length, however, the weather became more favourable, and carried them in directly to the shore. The Maidstone and Coventry frigates, who had orders to keep a-head of the squadron, discovered the enemy's fleet in the morning of the 20th of November. They were bearing to the northward between the island of Belleisle and the main land of France. Sir Edward Hawke threw out a signal for seven of his ships, that were nearest, to chace, in order to detain the French fleet until they themselves could be reinforced with the rest of the squadron, which were ordered to form into a line of battle a-head, as they chased, that no time might be lost in the pursuit. These manœuvres indicated the utmost resolution and intrepidity; for at this time the waves rolled mountains high, the weather grew more and more tempestuous, and the sea, on this treacherous coast, was indented with sand and shoals, shallows and rocks, as unknown to the English pilots as they were familiar to those of the enemy. But Sir Edward Hawke, animated by the innate fortitude of his own heart and the warm love of his country, disregarded every danger and obstacle that stood in the way of his obtaining the important stake which now depended. Mr. de Conflans might have hazarded a fair battle on the open sea without the imputation of temerity; but he thought proper to attempt

		Guns.	Men.			Guns.	Men.
Le Superbe,	—	70	800	Le Solitaire,	—	64	750
Le Dauphin,	—	70	800	Le Brilliant,	—	64	750
Le Dragon,	—	64	750	L'Eveille,	—	64	750
Le Northumb.	—	64	750	Le Bizarre,	—	64	750
Le Sphinx,	—	64	750	L'Inflexible,	—	64	750

The French had five frigates, and ten joined H. Hawke between Ushant and Belleisle.

a more

A. D. a more artful game, which, however, he did not play with the  
 1759. address which his situation required. As he was unwilling to risk  
 a fair engagement, he could have no other view but to draw  
 the English Squadron among the rocks and shoals, that, at a proper  
 time, he might take advantage of any disaster that befel them :  
 but, fluctuating between a resolution to fight and an inclination  
 to fly, he allowed the British ships to come up with him, and  
 then crowded his sail when it was too late to escape. At half  
 an hour after two the van of the English fleet began the engage-  
 ment with the rear of the enemy. The Formidable commanded  
 by the French rear-admiral Mr. du Verger, behaved with un-  
 common resolution, and returned many broadsides poured into  
 her by the English ships as they passed to bear down on the  
 van of the French. Sir Edward Hawke reserved his fire,  
 and ordered his master to carry him along-side of the French  
 admiral. The pilot observed, that he could not obey his  
 orders without the most imminent risk of running upon a  
 shoal : the brave admiral replied, " You have done your duty  
 " in pointing out the danger ; you now are to obey my com-  
 " mands, and lay me along-side the *Soleil Royal*." While  
 the pilot was preparing to gratify his desire, the *Thesée*, a  
 French ship of seventy guns, generously interposed itself be-  
 tween the two admirals, and received the fire which Hawke  
 had destined for a greater occasion. In returning this fire,  
 the *Thesée* foundered in consequence of a high sea that en-  
 tered her lower-deck ports : the *Superbe* shared the same fate,  
 the *Heros* struck her colours, and the *Formidable* did the same  
 about four in the afternoon. Darkness coming on, the enemy  
 fled towards their own coast. Seven ships of the line hove  
 their guns overboard, and took refuge in the river *Villaine* :  
 about as many more, in a most shattered and miserable condi-  
 tion, escaped to other ports. The wind blowing with redoubled  
 violence on a lee shore, Sir Edward made the signal for anchoring  
 to the westward of the small island *Dumet*, where he continued  
 all night in a very dangerous riding, continually alarmed by  
 hearing guns of distress. When morning appeared, he found  
 the French admiral had run his ship on shore, where she was  
 soon after set on fire by her own men. Thus concluded this  
 memorable action, in which the English sustained little loss  
 but

but what was occasioned by the weather. The *Essex* and *Re-A. D.* solution unfortunately ran on a sand-bank called *Lefour*, where 1759. they were irrecoverably lost, in spite of all the assistance that could be given; but most of their men and some part of their stores were saved. In the whole fleet no more than one lieutenant and thirty-nine seamen and marines were killed, and two hundred and two wounded. The loss of the French in men must have been prodigious. All the officers on board the *Formidable* were killed before she struck. They had, besides, four of the best ships in their navy destroyed, one taken, and the whole of their formidable armament, the last hope of the French marine, shattered, disarmed, and distressed.

It would be unjust to pass over a circumstance which characterizes the spirit that distinguished the English navy at this happy period. Admiral Saunders happened to arrive from his glorious *Quebec* expedition a little after *Hawke* had failed. Notwithstanding the length of the voyage, and the severity of the duty in which he had been so long employed, he lost not a moment in setting sail, with a view to partake the danger and honour of the approaching engagement. Fortune did not favour the generosity of his intentions. He was too late to give assistance; but such a resolution was alone equal to a victory.

Under such commanders it was impossible that the English should not maintain the ascendant over their enemies. Accordingly, in the words of a celebrated writer, who ought not on this subject to be suspected of partiality, "the English had never such a superiority at sea as at this time." But, continues he, "they at all times had the advantage over the French. The naval force of France they destroyed in the war of 1741; they humbled that of *Lewis XIV.* in the war of the Spanish succession; they triumphed at sea in the reigns of *Louis XIII.* and *Henry IV.* and still more in the unhappy times of the league. *Henry VIII.* of England had the same advantage over *Francis I.* If we examine into past times, we shall find, that the fleets of *Charles VI.* and *Philip de Valois* could not withstand those of the kings *Henry V.* and *Edward III.* of England. What can be the reason of this continual superiority? Is it not that the sea, which the French can

" live

A. D. "live well enough without, is essentially necessary to the Eng-  
 1759. "lish, and that nations always succeed best in those things for  
 "which they have an absolute occasion? Is it not also because  
 "the capital of England is a sea-port, and that Paris knows  
 "only the boats of the Seine? Is it that the English climate  
 "produces men of a more steady resolution, and of a more  
 "vigorous constitution, than that of France, as it produces the  
 "best horses and dogs for hunting?" Fearful lest he had gone  
 too far in suggesting a reason which is doubtless the true one,  
 he returns to his natural scepticism, and concludes in a flattering  
 strain; "but from Bayonne even to the coasts of Picardy and  
 "Flanders, France has men of an indefatigable labour; and  
 "Normandy alone formerly subdued England."

The events above related compose the principal operations of  
 the British navy during the present year. But besides the actions  
 of whole squadrons, there were a great many captures made  
 by single ships, attended with circumstances highly honourable  
 and advantageous. The Favourite of twenty guns, commanded  
 by captain Edwards, carried into Gibraltar a French ship of  
 twenty-four guns, laden with the rich productions of St. Do-  
 mingo, valued at 40,000*l*. A French privateer belonging to  
 Granville, having on board two hundred men, and mounted  
 with twenty cannon, was taken by the Montague captain Par-  
 ker, who soon after made prize of a smaller vessel from Dun-  
 kirk, mounted with eight guns, and having on board sixty men.  
 About the same period, that is in the month of February, cap-  
 tain Graves of the Unicorn brought in the Morris privateer of  
 St. Malo, carrying two hundred men and two and twenty  
 guns. The Vestal captain Hood, belonging to admiral Holmes's  
 Squadron in the West Indies, engaged a French frigate called  
 the Bellona, greatly superior to the Vestal in men and weight  
 of metal, and, after an obstinate engagement, which lasted  
 above two hours, took her, and brought her safely into port.  
 The English frigates the Southampton and Melampe, command-  
 ed by the captains Gilchrist and Hotham, descried in the even-  
 ing of the 28th of March, as they were cruising to the north-  
 ward, the Denaë, a French ship of forty guns and three hun-

dred and thirty men. The *Melampe* came up with her in the A. D. night a considerable time before the *Southampton*, and with 1759-  
 admirable gallantry maintained the combat against a ship of double her own force. As they fought in the dark, captain Gilchrist was obliged to ly by until he could distinguish the one from the other. At day-break he bore down on the *Danaë* with his usual valour, and, after a brisk engagement, in which she had forty men killed, and many more wounded, compelled her to surrender. This victory, however, was clouded by a misfortune which happened to the brave Gilchrist. He received a wound in the shoulder, which, though it did not deprive him of life, rendered him incapable of future service. On the 4th of April another remarkable exploit was achieved by his Majesty's ship *Achilles*, commanded by the honourable captain Barrington. The *Achilles*, which mounted sixty guns, encountered to the westward of Cape Finisterre, a French ship of equal force, called the *Count de St. Florentin*, under the command of the *Sieur de Montay*. After a close engagement of two hours, during which the French captain was slain, and one hundred and sixteen of his men killed or wounded, the *Count de St. Florentin* struck her colours. She was so much damaged that it was very difficult to bring her into Falmouth. The *Achilles* had but twenty-five men killed or wounded, and had sustained no hurt but in her masts and rigging. On the 27th of March captain Faulkner of his majesty's ship the *Windfor*, mounting sixty guns, discovered off the rock of Lisbon four large ships to leeward, and gave them chase. As he approached they formed the line of battle a-head, at the distance of about a cable's length asunder. He closed with the sternmost ship, which sustained his fire about an hour; and then, upon a signal given, the other three edged off, and the ship engaged struck her colours. She proved to be the *Duke de Chartres*, pierced for sixty guns, but having only 24, with a complement of three hundred men, about thirty of whom were killed in the action. She belonged, as well as the other three that escaped, to the East India company, was loaded with sixty tons of gunpowder, and an hundred and fifty tons of cordage, with a large quantity of other naval stores. The *Windfor* had, in this engagement, but one man killed and eighteen wounded.

A. D. About the same time captain Hughs of his majesty's frigate the 1759. *Tamer*, took and carried into Plymouth two privateers, called *le Chasseur*, and *le Conquerant*, the one from Cherburgh and the other from Dunkirk. A third, called the *Dispatch*, from *Morlaix*, was brought into Penzance by the *Diligence* sloop; while the *Basque* from *Bayonne*, furnished with two and twenty guns, fell into the hands of captain Parker of the *Brilliant*. Captain *Atrobus* of the *Surprise* took the *Vieux*, a privateer of *Bordeaux*; and a fifth from Dunkirk, struck to captain Knight of the *Liverpool*. In the month of May a French frigate called the *Arethusa*, mounted with two and thirty guns, and commanded by the marquis of *Vaudreuil*, submitted to two English frigates, the *Venus* and the *Thames*, commanded by the captains *Harrison* and *Colby*. The engagement was warm; the loss on the side of the English inconsiderable. The enemy had sixty men killed and wounded. In the beginning of June an armed ship, belonging to Dunkirk, was brought into the Downs by captain *Angel* of the *Stag*; and a privateer of force, called the *Countess de la Serre*, was subdued and taken, after an obstinate engagement, by his majesty's ship the *Adventure*, commanded by captain *Moore*. In the beginning of October the *Florissant*, a French ship of 74 guns, was engaged near the chops of the channel by captain *Porter* of the *Hercules*. The English vessel having lost one of her top-masts and rigging, the *Florissant* took advantage of this misfortune to sheer off, and escaped behind the isle of *Oleron*.

While the English cruizers were attended with continual success in Europe, several armed ships of the enemy and rich prizes were taken in the West Indies. About the same time that the *Velour* from *St. Domingo*, carrying twenty guns and above one hundred men, and loaded with a rich cargo, was taken by the *Favourite* sloop of war, commanded by captain *Edwards*, two French frigates and two Dutch ships, laden with French commodities, fell into the possession of cruizers detached from admiral *Coates's* Squadron stationed at *Jamaica*. Captain *Collingwood*, commanding his majesty's ship the *Crescent*, off *St. Christopher's* attacked two French frigates, the *Amethyste* and *Berkeley*: the former escaped, but the latter was conveyed into the harbour of *Basseterre*.

These



These particular losses, combined with the general destruction **A. D.** of the French squadrons by Boscawen, Hawke, Saunders and 1759. Pocock, in a great measure, ruined the French navy. In the course of the year the English had enriched their marine with twenty-seven ships of the line, and thirty-one frigates of French construction. They had destroyed eight ships of the line and four frigates, whereas the English navy had lost, during all the various operations of the present year, no more than seven men of war and five frigates. In reviewing the captures of merchantmen, the balance is not so much in our favour. Notwithstanding the courage and vigilance of the English cruizers, the French privateers swarmed to such a degree, that in the course of the present year, they took two hundred and ten British vessels, chiefly, however, coasters and small craft, that did not chuse to confine themselves and wait for a convoy. On the other hand, we took one hundred and sixty-five merchant vessels from the enemy; of which, as it appears from some examples above given, many contained very valuable cargoes.

While the naval power of France was falling to its ruin, her commerce was cut off in its source by the taking of Guadaloupe and Quebec. The French government, broken by repeated calamities, and exhausted by exorbitant subsidies to its German allies, was reduced to the lowest ebb of fortune. The monarch, however, still found a resource in the loyalty and attachment of his people. They acquiesced in the bankruptcy of public credit; when the court stopped payment of the interest on twelve different branches of the national debt; they declared against every suggestion of accommodation that was not advantageous and honourable; and they sent in large quantities of plate to be melted down and coined into specie, for the support of the war.

The liberal supplies granted by the British parliament, which met in November, formed a striking contrast with the indigence of our rivals. For the service of the ensuing year they voted seventy-three thousand seamen, including eighteen thousand three hundred and fifty-five marines; and they allotted three millions six hundred and forty thousand pounds for their maintenance. The sums destined to other purposes were no less ample; the whole amounted to fifteen millions five hundred and three thousand five hundred and sixty-four pounds. Of this immense

A. D. supply not less than two millions three hundred and forty-four thousand four hundred and eighty-six pounds were paid to foreigners, for supporting the war in Germany, exclusive of the money expended by twenty thousand British troops in that country, and the charge of transporting them, with the expence of pontage, waggons, and other contingencies, and the exorbitant article of forage, which alone amounted, in the course of the last campaign, to one million two hundred thousand pounds.

The comparative expence of our naval preparations, and of the German war, affected, with equal astonishment and concern, many disinterested and dispassionate men, whose imaginations were less heated than those of the bulk of the people with the enthusiastic ardour of victory. Amidst the triumphs of glory and success concealed murmurs were heard, which, in a free nation, were speedily re-echoed with increased force. Men formed themselves into parties according to their different notions upon this subject, and the dispute between the naval and continental schemes came to be the common topic, not only of public assemblies but of private conversation. The abettors of the naval interest asserted, that the insular situation of Great Britain, as well as the continued experience of many ages, clearly pointed out the course which England ought to pursue in her wars with France. They pretended not that the former kingdom ought never, in any case, to take part in the disputes of the continent; but this, they thought, ought always to be as an auxiliary only. She might even engage with success in a continental war against France, provided she had a concurrence in her favour of the neighbouring powers of the continent. This was the grand principle of king William, and the foundation of that alliance, at the head of which, in defence of the liberties of Europe, he acted the greatest part that can be allotted to man. It was on the same principle that, in conjunction with the powers of the empire, we carried on the war with so much honour and success against France, under the duke of Marlborough. But to engage in a continental war with that kingdom, not only unassisted but opposed by the greatest part of those states with which we were then combined, is an attempt never to be justified by any comparative calculation of the

the populousness, the revenues, or the general strength of the A. D. two nations. They asserted still farther, that the theatre we 1759 had chosen for that war was the most unfortunate that could possibly be imagined. Germany has at all times proved the firmest bulwark against French ambition. What, therefore, could France herself more heartily desire than to see the swords of the Germans turned against each other, and England co-operate with all her power in embittering the hostilities which have already desolated that country. In carrying on a war there, France has many advantages: she supports her armies in a great measure by pillaging those whom, in every view, it is her interest to weaken: she is not very remote from her own frontiers, from which her armies may be recruited and supplied without great expence: even when unsuccessful, she is brought still nearer her own territories, supports her troops with still greater facility, and exhausts still less the natural wealth of her people. If she was obliged to take refuge at home, would the English continue so frantic as to follow her into her own dominions? To Great Britain, on the other hand, every thing is unfavourable in such a war. The utmost success with which her arms can be attended, will only carry the English to a greater distance from their resources; and, by going a certain length, the transport of provision, artillery, ammunition, and the infinite impediments of a large army, must become altogether impracticable. Upon this plan, victory itself cannot save us, and all our successes will only serve to accumulate new distresses, new difficulties, and new charges. As to the king of Prussia, what does he give us in return for the immense subsidies which are paid him? Instead of assisting our armies, is he able to defend himself? Besides, he is the worst ally we could have chosen, on account of his long and intimate connection with our enemies, and the general lightness of his faith in deserting every engagement which forms an obstacle to his ambition. He is looked upon as the protector of the Protestant religion: but has he not desolated the first Protestant electorate? Has he not divided the reformed states of Germany, and turned their swords against each other? And do not his writings sufficiently testify not only his indifference to the Protestant cause, but his total disregard to all religion whatever? Had England kept herself

A. D. herself clear of the inextricable labyrinth of German politics, 1759. she might, without exhausting her own vigour by attacking France on her strong side, have been, before this time, in possession of all the French colonies together: even had the French, therefore, got possession of Hanover, (which could not have suffered more by this event than it has already done in the course of the war), England, while her own power was entire, and while she held all the commercial resources of France in her hands, must not only have recovered the Hanoverian dominions to their lawful sovereign, but have procured full indemnification to them for what they had suffered in our quarrel.

The advocates for continental measures were obliged to acknowledge the exorbitant expence of a German war; but they affirmed, that, if it had cost England much, it had cost France still more, as the number of French troops to be paid exceeds the difference between French and English pay. They observed, that her subsidies to German princes greatly exceeded ours, although she had not derived so much advantage from all her allies together as England had done from the victory of the king of Prussia at Rosbach: that the German war had brought the finances of France to that deplorable condition which all Europe had witnessed: that her chief strength and attention, being engaged in this quarter, were in a great measure withdrawn from her navy, her commerce, and her colonies; which had enabled England to deprive her of the best part of her colonies, to render her commerce equally precarious and unprofitable, and to give such a blow to her navy as, perhaps, she might never be able to recover. But had England, instead of exhausting the French resources by diverting their efforts to Germany, allowed that country to receive laws from her rival, the continental war would have soon terminated, and France, strengthened by victory, by conquest, and by alliance, would have preserved the whole force and revenue of her mighty monarchy entire, to act against Great Britain.

These reasonings will be interesting as long as the great system of European politics continues in any measure the same, and as long as the measures of the British court are liable to be warped by the same motives as formerly. I would therefore observe, that taking for granted the facts alledged by the partizans of our German

German allies, (many of which require proof), and supposing A. D. that France had expended even more than Great Britain in prosecuting the German war, the principal question would still be undecided. It would be proper still farther to inquire, whether England or France could maintain the same number of troops, and make the same efforts in Germany, at the smallest expence? Whether, on the plan of a continental war alone, the revenues and resources of France or England would be soonest exhausted? And which of the two kingdoms could, with the smallest trouble and expence, augment its navy, and prosecute successful enterprizes in distant parts of the world? These queries need only be proposed; their solution is obvious, and it shows, in the fullest light, the impropriety of England's carrying the war into the continent of Europe, while France possessed any species of foreign commerce, or a single foot of land in Asia, Africa, or America.

But notwithstanding the force of evidence, and the clamour of party, the court remained firm in its first resolution. The continental system prevailed more than ever; and although the supplies granted for maintaining the navy were liberal beyond example, yet, the strength and attention of the nation being diverted to a different channel, our marine enterprizes appeared to languish at a time when past success ought to have caused them to be pushed with the utmost vigour, and fewer exploits were achieved at sea in 1760 than are recorded in the memoirs of the preceding year.

The British navy at this time amounted to 120 ships of the line, besides frigates, fire-ships, sloops, bombs, and tenders. Of these capital ships seventeen were stationed in the East Indies, twenty for the defence of the West India islands, twelve in North America, ten in the Mediterranean, and sixty-one either on the coast of France, in the harbours of England, or cruising in the English seas for the protection of commerce. Considering these mighty preparations, it is remarkable, that the return of the little squadron commanded by Thurot (which, as was already mentioned, had taken refuge the preceding year in the harbour of Gottenburg in Sweden) should have caused a general alarm over the three kingdoms. This inconsiderable armament originally consisted of five frigates, on board of which

were

A. D. were 1270 land-soldiers. They had sailed from Gottenburg to 1760. Bergen in Norway, and during that voyage had suffered so much by storms, that they were obliged to send back one of their largest vessels to France. It was not till the fifth of December that they were able to sail directly for the place of their destination, which was the northern coast of Ireland. In this voyage their ill fortune continued to pursue them. For near three months they were obliged to ply off and on among the western isles of Scotland, during which time they suffered every possible hardship: their men thinned and disheartened, suffering by famine and disease, one ship irrecoverably lost, and the remaining three so shattered, that they were obliged to put into the isle of Ilay. Here this enterprising adventurer, though oppressed with misfortune, and steeled by such hardships as too often extinguish every generous principle of humanity, behaved with the utmost justice and moderation, paying handsomely for the cattle and provisions which he had occasion to use, and treating the natives with unusual courtesy and kindness.

As soon as the weather permitted, Thurot quitted this island, and pursued his destination to the bay of Carrickfergus in Ireland, where, on the 21st of February, he effected a descent with 600 men. They advanced without opposition to the town, which they found as well guarded as the nature of the place, which was entirely open, and the circumstances of colonel Jennings, who commanded only four companies of raw undisciplined men, would allow. A vigorous defence was made, until the ammunition of the English failed; and then colonel Jennings retired to the castle of Carrickfergus, which, however, was in all respects untenable, being unprovided in provisions and ammunition, and having a breach in the wall of near fifty feet wide: nevertheless, they repulsed the assailants in their first attack, having supplied the want of shot with stones and rubbish. At length the colonel surrendered, on condition that his troops should be ransomed by exchanging them for an equal number of French prisoners; that the castle of Carrickfergus should not be demolished, nor the town burned or plundered. This last circumstance, however, was not strictly observed. The magistrates of Carrickfergus refused such supplies of wine and provisions as the French officers demanded, and thus, by their own imprudence

dence, caused the town to be subjected to a contribution, which, A. D. however, was not immoderate. Thurot, having by this time 1760- got notice of the defeat of Conflans's expedition, and hearing that a considerable body of regular troops were assembled, and preparing to march to the assistance of the inhabitants of Carrickfergus, embarked, and set sail for France, after gaining great reputation by the exploits of a squadron, which deserves to be considered as little better than a wreck of the grand enterprize against the British coasts.

But this gallant adventurer had not left the bay of Carrickfergus many hours, when he perceived, near the coast of the isle of Man, three sail that bore down on him. These were English frigates, the *Æolus* of thirty-six guns, commanded by captain Elliot, the *Pallas* and *Brilliant*, each of thirty-two guns, under the command of the captains Clements and Logie, who had been dispatched by the duke of Bedford, lord-lieutenant of Ireland, in quest of the French squadron. At nine in the morning of the 28th of February, captain Elliot came up with the *Belleisle*, commanded by Thurot, which was superior to the *Æolus* in strength of men, number of guns, and weight of metal; but both ship and men were in a bad condition. The engagement was hardly begun, when the *Pallas* and *Brilliant* attacked the other two ships of the enemy. The action was maintained with great spirit on both sides for an hour and a half, when captain Elliot's lieutenant boarded the *Belleisle*, who immediately struck her colours, the gallant Thurot having fallen in the action. The English took possession of their prizes, and conveyed them into the bay of Ramsay in the isle of Man. In this engagement three hundred of the French were slain or disabled; whereas our loss did not exceed forty killed and wounded. The name of Thurot had become so terrible to all the sea-ports of Britain and Ireland, that the service performed on this occasion was deemed essential to the quiet and security of these kingdoms. The thanks of the house of commons of Ireland were voted to the conquerors of Thurot as well as to lieutenant-colonel Jennings, the commanding officer at Carrickfergus; and the defeat and capture of this petty squadron was celebrated with the most hearty and universal rejoicings. Such was the fate of the last branch of the grand armament which

A. D. had so long been the hope of France, and the terror of Great Britain.

In North America the affairs of the French had taken such a turn as afforded them a happy prospect of future success. While the operations of the war there were intrusted to the land forces alone, England was unfortunate, and France triumphant: but no sooner did our squadrons appear on the coast, than every thing returned to its former situation, and Britain was as victorious as before. The garrison left for the defence of Quebec amounted originally to 5000 men, a number much too small, considering both the nature of the place, and the number of French forces which still remained in Canada. The fortifications of Quebec were weak and incomplete; without any kind of out-works; and the town had been reduced, during the late siege, almost to a ruin. Mr. Levi had collected at Montreal 6000 experienced militia of Canada, with 300 Indians, besides ten battalions of regular troops amounting to about 5000 men more. With this force he took the field on the 17th of April; and, while his provisions and ammunition fell down the river St. Lawrence under a convoy of six frigates, the French army arrived in ten days march at the heights of Abraham, three miles distant from Quebec. General Murray, who commanded the garrison, had it in his option either to remain within the city, or to march out and try his fortune in the field. As his troops were habituated to victory, and provided with a fine train of artillery, he was unwilling to keep them shut up in a place which appeared to him scarcely tenable. He determined, therefore, to lead them against the enemy; a resolution, which, considering the immense inequality of numbers, (for, although the garrison originally consisted of 5000, he had not now above 3000 effective men), favoured more of youthful temerity than of military discretion. At first, however, fortune seemed to favour his designs. The English army, having marched out of the city, and descended from the heights of Abraham, attacked the enemy's van with such impetuosity, that it was obliged to give way, and to fall back on the main body. This advantage brought them full on the main army of the French, which by this time had formed in columns. The fire became so hot, that it stopped the progress of our troops; and the French, wheeling to  
right



right and left, formed a semicircle which threatened to surround A. D. them, and to cut off their retreat. Near a third of the English 1760. army were now killed or wounded, and nothing could be thought of in this situation but to make proper movements to secure their return to Quebec. This they effected without losing many men in the pursuit; and the severe misfortune, occasioned by their own temerity, roused the governor and troops to the most strenuous efforts in defence of the place. The French lost no time in improving their victory. They opened the trenches on the very night of the battle: but, being deficient in artillery, they had performed nothing of consequence before the 15th of May, when the besieged were reinforced by the arrival of the British fleet. Then the enemy understood what it was to be inferior at sea; for, had a French squadron got the start of the English in sailing up the river, Quebec must have reverted to its former owners.

On the 9th of May, to the great joy of the garrison, an English frigate anchored in the bay, and told them that lord Colville who had sailed from Halifax with the fleet under his command, on the 22d of April, was then in the river St. Lawrence. He had been retarded in his passage by thick fogs and contrary winds. About the same time commodore Swanton, arriving with a small reinforcement from England, and hearing that Quebec was besieged, sailed up the St. Lawrence with all expedition. On the 15th he anchored at Point Levi, and early next morning ordered captain Schomberg of the Diana, and captain Deane of the Lowestoffe to slip their cables, and attack the French fleet, consisting of two frigates, two armed ships, and a considerable number of smaller vessels. They were no sooner in motion than the French ships fled in the utmost disorder. One of their frigates was driven on the rocks above Cape Diamond; the other ran ashore, and was burned at Point au Tremble, about ten leagues above the town, and all that remained were taken or destroyed.

Mr. Levi had the mortification to behold, from the heights of Abraham, this action, which at one stroke put an end to all the hopes he had conceived from his late victory. He was persuaded that these frigates, by the boldness of their manner, preceded a considerable reinforcement, and he therefore raised the

A. D. siege in the utmost precipitation, leaving behind him a great quantity of baggage, tents, stores, magazines of provisions and ammunition, with thirty-four pieces of battering cannon, ten field-pieces, six mortars, and a great number of scaling-ladders, intrenching tools, and other implements necessary in a siege.

This event, which was entirely owing to the seasonable assistance of the fleet, was equally important in itself and in its consequences. While it secured the possession of Quebec, it gave an opportunity to general Murray to march to the assistance of general Amherst, who was employed in the siege of Montreal, the second place in Canada for extent, commerce, and strength. Here the whole remaining force of the French in North America was collected under the command of Mr. Vaudreuil, an enterprising and artful general, who neglected no means of protracting the siege. At length he was obliged to yield to the united armies, and on the 8th of September, 1760, surrendered his garrison to be sent to France, on condition that they should not serve in the present war, and yielded up the inhabitants of his government as subjects to the king of Great Britain.

The French had not neglected to send relief to a place, which was the last object of their hopes for regaining possession of Canada. They had dispatched three frigates, with twenty ships of burden, containing a reinforcement of troops and military stores for the garrison of Montreal. But when the commander of this expedition understood, that the fleet under lord Colville had anticipated his arrival in the river St. Lawrence, he attempted to land his whole embarkation in the bay of Chaleurs, that they might endeavour, if possible, to join the principal army by land. But here they were discovered by captain Byron with three of his majesty's ships; their armament was taken or destroyed, and their whole design disconcerted. Thus, by the bravery of our troops, and the uncommon spirit, vigilance, and activity of our navy, every attempt of the enemy was frustrated, and the quiet possession of all Canada confirmed to Great Britain.

In the East Indies the British arms were attended with equal success. After raising the siege of Fort St. George in February 1759, the English army possessed themselves of the important town and fortress of Conjeveram, as well as of the city Masulipatam,

patam, both on the Coromandel coast. This coast joins to the A. D. rich province of Bengal, where the French interest had been 1760. totally ruined by the conduct and gallantry of colonel Clive.

Encouraged by these advantages, a body of 1200 men, Europeans and Seapoys, advanced farther, and attempted to dislodge an army of French and their confederate Indians, encamped under the cannon of a fort near Wandewash. They were repelled with the loss of between three and four hundred killed and wounded. But colonel Coote, at the head of the principal body of English troops on that coast, compensated for this disaster by investing and taking Wandewash in three days. Soon after, he obtained a complete victory over general Lally, who commanded an army twice as numerous as that of the English, and consisting of 2200 Europeans and 10,000 blacks. After this decisive engagement, which, excepting the battle of Plaissey, was more important in its consequences than any fought in India during the war, colonel Coote undertook the siege of Chillum, which surrendered in two days. He then prosecuted his march to Arcot the capital of the province, the fort of which being silenced, the garrison surrendered themselves prisoners of war. After the reduction of Arcot all the inferior places, such as Permacoil and Allumparva, submitted. The important settlement of Carical was reduced by the sea and land forces, commanded by rear-admiral Cornish and major Monson; and colonel Coote formed the blockade of Pondicherry by land, while the harbour was beset by the English squadron. This town was the only important settlement which now remained to our enemies in India.

During all this time admiral Pococke had, with his usual skill and intrepidity, seconded the efforts of the troops. He had more than once compelled Mr. d'Aché, the greatest admiral that France could boast of, and who alone supported the declining reputation of her marine, to take shelter under the walls of Pondicherry. Pococke had reduced the French ships to a very shattered condition, and killed a great many of their men; but, what shews the singular talents of both admirals, they had fought three pitched battles in the course of eighteen months, without the loss of a ship on either side.

The

.A D. The British squadrons in the West Indies were commanded by admiral Holmes on the Jamaica station and Sir James Douglas in the Leeward islands. The active vigilance of these commanders not only enabled them to protect the islands from insult or invasion, but prompted them to annoy the enemy. Rear-admiral Holmes, having in the month of October received intelligence, that five French frigates were equipped at Cape François on the island of Hispaniola, in order to convoy a fleet of merchantmen to Europe, he stationed the ships under his command in such a manner as gave them an opportunity to intercept this fleet. The principal French ship was the *Sirenne* commanded by commodore M<sup>c</sup>Cartie, an Irish officer of considerable reputation. After two sharp engagements she struck to the *Boreas*, while the other four frigates bore away, with all the sail they could crowd, for the west end of Tortuga, to shelter themselves in Port au Prince. They were pursued by the *Lively* and *Hampshire*; the former obliged one of the French frigates to submit, after a warm engagement of an hour and a half. The *Hampshire* stood for the other three, and, running between the *Duke of Choiseul* and the *Prince Edward*, engaged them both at the same time. The first, having the advantage of the wind, made her retreat into Port au Paix; the other ran ashore about two leagues to leeward, and struck her colours. At the approach of the *Hampshire*, the enemy set her on fire, and she blew up. The *Fleur de Lys*, that had run into Fresh-Water bay, a little to leeward of Port au Prince, shared the same fate; and thus by the gallantry of the captains Norbury, Uvedale, and Maitland, and the prudent disposition of admiral Holmes, two large frigates of the enemy were taken, and three destroyed.

Immediately after this event, advice being received by admiral Holmes, that the enemy's privateers swarmed about the island of Cuba, he ordered the boats of the *Trent* and *Boreas* to be manned, that they might proceed under the direction of the lieutenants Millar and Stuart, to the harbour of Cumberland in that island. There they met with the *Vainqueur* of ten guns, sixteen swivels, and ninety men, the *Mackau* of six swivels and fifteen men, and the *Guespe* of eight guns and eighty-five men. The boats, after surmounting many difficulties, rowed up to the *Vainqueur*, boarded and took possession of her under a close fire.

The

The Mackau was taken without resistance; but, before they A. D. could reach the Guespe, the enemy set her on fire, by which 1760. she was destroyed.

The same enterprizing courage distinguished the officers of the squadron commanded by Sir James Douglas off the Leeward islands. The captains Obrien and Taylor, cruising near the Grenades, were informed that the Virgin, once a British sloop, with three French privateers, had taken refuge under the guns of three forts on one of these islands. They sailed thither in order to attack them; and their enterprize was crowned with success. Having demolished the forts, they took the four ships after a warm engagement, which lasted several hours. They next entered another harbour on the same island, where they had intelligence of three more ships; they demolished the fort on this harbour, and carried off the three prizes. In returning to Antigua they fell in with thirteen victuallers, who immediately surrendered. At the same time eight privateers were taken by the ships which commodore Douglas employed in cruising round the island of Guadaloupe.

While the English were carried forward with a continual tide of prosperity in distant parts of the world, no action of importance was achieved in the British seas by the naval force of that kingdom. Admiral Rodney still maintained his station off the coast of Havre de Grace, to observe the French movements towards the mouth of the Seine. The admirals Boscawen and Hawke alternately commanded the powerful squadron which still remained in the bay of Quiberon, to interrupt the navigation of the enemy, to watch and detain the French vessels which had run into the mouth of the river Villaine after the defeat of Conflans; and to divert the efforts of the French from other quarters, by employing a great number of their forces on that part of the coast.

Meanwhile a numerous body of forces were assembled, and a great number of transports collected at Portsmouth. The troops were actually embarked with a good train of artillery; generals were nominated to the command of the enterprize; and the eyes of the whole nation were fixed upon this armament, which had been prepared at an immense expence, and the destination of which remained a profound secret. But, to the

**A. D.** the astonishment of all those who were not admitted behind the  
 1760. curtain, the whole summer was spent in idleness and inaction, and upon the death of the late king, in the month of October following, the enterprize was entirely laid aside.

The seeming inutility of these mighty preparations occasioned loud clamours in the nation. These were still farther increased by the inactivity of the powerful squadrons in the British seas. It was said, that with either of these, or with the armament prepared at Portsmouth, we might have reduced the island Martinico in the West Indies, Mauritius on the coast of Africa, or Minorca in the Mediterranean, all of which were objects equally important to our power and commerce. It was asked what advantage we derived from those squadrons which were so well provided in all necessaries by the liberality of the supplies, but which were condemned to inactivity, or employed in useless parade? This question, however, was not unanswerable. The armament at Portsmouth might be intended to intimidate the French into proposals of peace; to alarm the coast of Bretagne, and thereby make a diversion in favour of Germany; or to transport troops into Flanders, in order to effect a junction with the hereditary prince of Brunswick, who, at the head of twenty thousand men, had crossed the Rhine, and was at first as successful as finally unfortunate in that daring expedition.

Nor were the squadrons on the French coast altogether unnecessary. While admiral Rodney hovered near the mouth of the Seine, he perceived, on the 5th of July at noon day, five large flat-bottomed boats, with their colours flying, as if they had set the English squadron at defiance. These boats were dispatched by way of experiment, to try whether it were possible for vessels of this newly invented construction to escape the vigilance and efforts of an English fleet. The French had prepared above an hundred of them, which then lay at Caen in Normandy. The ten which now sailed, stood backwards and forwards on the shoals, intending to amuse Mr. Rodney till night, and then to proceed under cover of darkness. He perceived their drift, and gave directions that his small vessels should be ready to sail in the night for the mouth of the river Orne, in order to cut off the enemy's retreat, while he himself with the larger ships stood for the steep coast of Port Bassin. The dis-  
 position

position was judicious, and attended with success. The flat-A. D. bottomed boats having no way to escape, ran ashore at Port Bassin, where the admiral destroyed them, together with the small fort which had been erected for the defence of this harbour. Each of these vessels was one hundred feet in length, and capable of containing four hundred men. The disaster which befel them taught the French minister of the marine not to build any further hopes upon such awkward machines. The remainder were ordered to be unloaded at Caen, and sent to Rouen to be laid up as useless.

This was not the only service which Rodney's squadron performed. In the month of November, captain Ourry of the *Acteon* chased a large privateer, and drove her on shore between Cape Barfleur and La Hogue; and his cutters scoured the coast, and took or destroyed forty vessels of considerable burden, which carried on a great fishing near Dieppe.

Besides the purposes above-mentioned, which were answered by admiral Boscawen's fleet, it effectually prevented any vessels from sailing from the harbours of Brest or Rochfort, with the design to reinforce the French in North America, which might have protracted the war there to another campaign. The enterprising spirit of this English admiral, impatient of continuing so long in a state of inaction how advantageous soever to the interests of his country, prompted him to employ his men in the execution of some actual service. He exercised them, therefore, in taking a small island near the river Vannes, which he ordered them to cultivate and plant with vegetables for the use of the seamen infected with scorbutic disorders, arising from the constant use of salt provisions, from the sea air, and from a want of proper exercise.

Sir Edward Hawke, who relieved Mr. Boscawen in September, pursued the same plan. Sensible of the inconveniencies to which a fleet on that station is exposed for want of fresh water, which must be carried to them by transports hired on purpose, he detached lord Howe in the *Magnanime*, with the ships *Frederick* and *Bedford*, to reduce the little island Dumet, which abounded in that great necessary of life. This island, about three miles in length and two in breadth, was defended by a small fort mounted with nine cannon, and garrisoned with one

A. D. company of the regiment of Bourbon, who surrendered with 1760. little or no resistance after the ships had begun the attack.

We have not interrupted the history of the British squadrons by relating the exploits of particular cruizers, several of which conferred the highest honour on the English navy. On the 2d of April captain Skinner of the Biddeford, and captain Kennedy of the Flamborough, both frigates, having sailed from Lisbon, fell in with two large French frigates, convoy to a fleet of merchant ships, which the English captains immediately determined to engage, notwithstanding the great inferiority of their strength. The enemy did not decline the battle, which began about half an hour after six in the evening, and raged with great fury till eleven. By this time the Flamborough had lost sight of the Biddeford, and the frigate with which the former was engaged bore away with all the sail she could carry. Captain Kennedy pursued her till noon the next day, when he entirely lost sight of her; by which means she got into Lisbon with the loss of several men besides the lieutenant of marines, and considerably damaged in her hull and rigging. In three days he was joined by the Biddeford, who, after a most severe conflict, had compelled her antagonist to fly, and had chased her till she was out of sight. Soon after the action began, captain Skinner, while standing upon the arm-chest to inspect the several posts, and to animate his men by his example, was unfortunately killed. He was an officer equally brave and bountiful, and as much beloved for his gentleness and humanity as respected for his skill and courage by those who served under him. The command devolved upon the honourable lieutenant Knollis, who maintained the battle with great spirit, even after he was wounded; and a second shot through his body deprived him of life. Notwithstanding these disasters, the crew of the Biddeford, though deprived of their officers, their main top-mast shot away, the ship disabled in her rigging, and the enemy's fire which continued exceedingly hot, discovered no signs of fear or of disinclination to the service. The master of the ship now assumed the command, and every man aboard acted as if on his personal bravery alone the fortune of the engagement had depended. While the master kept the quarter-deck, and took care of the posts there, the purser was stationed



on the main-deck, and kept up a brisk and well-directed fire. A. D. Numbers of the wounded men returned with cheerfulness to 1760 their posts, after the surgeon had dressed their wounds. Their cool determined valour prevailed over a ship double their own in strength. The enemy's fire began to slacken, one gun becoming silent after another, till the enemy did not discharge four guns in a quarter of an hour. It was believed they were going to strike; but it proved, that they were preparing for flight; for a little after, about ten at night, the engagement having lasted three hours, they bore away with all the sail they could crowd. The *Biddeford* took the opportunity to pour a broadside into her enemy, and a volley of small arms nearly at the same instant. But, when she attempted to chase, the sailors found they had no command of their ship, the rigging being cut to pieces, and the masts and yards shattered and disabled.

The spirit of enterprize, a consciousness of their own superiority, and a contempt of the French, seem to have been communicated to the meanest seaman of Great Britain at this happy period. - As an example of this kind, the bravery of five Irishmen and a boy, belonging to the crew of a ship from Waterford, has been much celebrated. The ship, in her return from Bilbao, being taken by a French privateer off Ushant, the captors removed all the hands but these five men and a boy, who were left to assist nine Frenchmen in navigating the vessel. These daring Hibernians immediately formed a plan of insurrection, which they executed with success. Four of the French mariners being below deck, three aloft among the rigging, one at the helm, and another walking the deck, Brian, who headed the enterprize, tripped up the heels of the French steersman, seized his pistol, and discharged it at him who walked the deck; but, missing the mark, he knocked him down with the butt-end of the piece. At the same time hallooing to his confederates below, they assailed the enemy with their broad swords, and, soon compelling them to submit, came upon deck, and shut the hatches. The Irish being now in possession of the quarter-deck, the French who were aloft called for quarter, and surrendered without opposition. As neither Brian nor any of his associates could read or write, or knew the least principle of navigation, they steered the ship northward at a venture, and the first land

A. D. they made was the neighbourhood of Youghall in the county of 1760. Cork.

The captures from the French, within the course of this year, consisted of royal ships of war, privateers, and armed merchantmen. The royal ships were six, mounting in all 176 guns. The privateers and armed merchantmen amounted to 110, which carried 848 carriage-guns, 240 swivels, and 6389 men. The English navy suffered little from the French during this period, but sustained great damage from the weather. The *Conqueror*, a new ship of the line, was lost in the channel off the island of St. Nicholas; the crew and guns were saved. The *Lyme* of twenty guns foundered in the Cattegat in Norway, and fifty of the men perished. In the West Indies a tender belonging to the Dublin commanded by commodore Sir James Douglas, was lost in a gale of wind, with 100 chosen mariners. But these losses, great as they were, seemed inconsiderable, compared to that of the *Ramillies*, a magnificent ship of the second rate, belonging to the squadron which admiral Boscawen commanded on the coast of France. In the beginning of February a series of stormy weather obliged the admiral to return from the bay of Quiberon to Plymouth, where he arrived with much difficulty. The *Ramillies*, having overshot the entrance to the sound, and being embayed near a point called the Bolt-head, about four leagues higher up the channel, was dashed in pieces among the rocks, after her anchors and cables had given way. All her officers and men, (one midshipman and twenty-five of the seamen excepted), amounting to 700, perished.

The number of merchant vessels taken by the French amounted to above 300, chiefly, however, coasters and coalliers of very inconsiderable value. Nor would it have been at all surprising if the French had taken not only more numerous but more valuable prizes. While their own commerce was in a great measure destroyed, and they had no merchant ships at sea but some coasters, and a few vessels, under convoy from the West Indies, the trading fleets of England covered the ocean. Every year her commerce was augmenting; the money which the war carried out was returned by the produce of her industry; the sinking fund amounted annually to above three millions, and, in the year

year 1760, 8000 vessels were employed by the traders of Great A. D.  
Britain. 1760.

But, notwithstanding this happy flow of prosperity, if we compare the naval and military transactions of the present year with those of the preceding, they will appear extremely inconsiderable. Excepting the reduction of Montreal, which was a natural consequence of our prior conquests in Canada, no additional acquisitions of great consequence had been made by the British arms. The English strength and wealth were employed in the war of Germany; but our operations, undertaken upon national principles, and tending to the interest of Great Britain, began gradually to languish. It was hoped, therefore, that after a general war of five years, carried on upon a larger scale, and attended with greater expence, and more surprising revolutions of fortune, than any war of equal duration that had ever taken place among the nations of Europe, it was now full time to give tranquillity to the four quarters of the globe, all of which had been shaken by our commotions. The posture of affairs was now much altered from what had taken place during the first periods of hostility. The ambition of France, which had inflamed the fuel of dissension, had been crowned with success in the beginning of the war. Admiral Byng behaved disgracefully in the Mediterranean, Minorca was taken, and the battle of Hastenbeck seemed to decide the fate of the electorate of Hanover. The duke of Cumberland was shut up at Closterseven, and the Canadians obtained considerable advantages over the English in North America. But now all was changed. The French had not reaped the fruits which they expected from their success in Germany, and had been obliged to abandon some part of their conquests; their interest was totally ruined in North America; in the East Indies, where they had formerly so many flourishing settlements, they were confined to one town; and the principal source of their wealth was cut off by the loss of Guadaloupe, Gorée, and Senegal, and the destruction of their commerce and shipping. The misfortunes which France had already experienced in carrying on a naval war against Great Britain, induced her, as early as the year 1758, to signify her pacific intentions to the English ministry, who declined listening at that time to any proposals of negotiation. In the following

year.

A. D. year the court of London was not so decisively bent on continuing the war; but it was not till 1761 that they began to think seriously of laying down their victorious arms. Had France been equally sincere in the wishes for accommodation which she publicly professed, matters might then have been amicably adjusted. But she had by this time discovered an after game, which remained for her to play, notwithstanding all her bad fortune. She had alarmed the pride and jealousy of the court of Spain, whose rich and extensive American possessions seemed now to lie at the mercy of the English colonies, and whose honour was deeply wounded in the disgrace inflicted on the first prince of the house of Bourbon. If the whole strength of the Spanish monarchy, augmented by continual secessions during a long peace, could be drawn into the vortex of hostility, France expected to be able still to retrieve her affairs. While she publicly declared for peace, her secret hopes were all centered in war; she treated of friendship with a spirit of enmity; and, the false principles upon which she negotiated being discovered by the penetration of the British ministry, these allowed not the prospect of a treaty to amuse them into a neglect of the naval and military operations which had been previously concerted.

The parliament which assembled the 18th of November, 1760, had voted 70,000 seamen for the service of the ensuing year, including 18,355 marines, and a sum not exceeding 4 pounds monthly *per man* for their maintenance, the whole amounting to 3,640,000 pounds. No material alteration was made in the disposition of the several squadrons which constituted the navy of Great Britain. That in the bay of Quiberon was commanded by Sir Edward Hawke and Sir Charles Hardy. Admiral Saunders was stationed in the Mediterranean. The rear-admirals Stevens and Cornish commanded in the East Indies, rear-admiral Holmes at Jamaica, Sir James Douglas at the Leeward islands, and lord Colville at Halifax in Nova Scotia. Besides these, single ships cruized in different parts, in order to protect the British merchantmen, and squadrons were occasionally equipped under various commanders.

1761. The scene of action, in the year 1761, opened in the East Indies. After the defeat of the French near Wandewash, the taking of the city Arcot, and the reduction of the fortresses of Chittepue

Chintapat and Carriacul, the French were blocked up in Pondicherry, a town of near four miles in circuit, elegantly built, strongly fortified, and defended by the whole force which remained to the enemy on the coast of Coromandel. The periodical rains which fall on that coast rendered a regular siege impracticable; so that the blockade, which had been commenced by the fleet under admiral Stevens and the land forces under colonel Coote, was continued with the best disposition, and the most extraordinary patience, for full seven months. On the 26th of November, 1760, four batteries were raised, at some distance, to enfilade the streets of Pondicherry, whilst others were advanced nearer, in order to play upon the works. The works of the besiegers suffered much from storms, which ruined the batteries and approaches: but these were repaired with great alacrity, and the enemy was reduced to the most extreme distress. They lived on camels, elephants, dogs, and cats. Even this wretched provision was so scarce, that it was purchased at an immense price: five pounds had been paid for the flesh of a dog.

In the midst of this distress their hopes were suddenly revived by a dreadful misfortune which happened to the English fleet. On the first of January, 1761, one of those terrible tempests, so destructive and so frequent in the Indian seas, obliged admiral Stevens to slip his cables and put to sea. The rest of the British squadron were driven from before the walls of Pondicherry. The Duke of Aquitaine and the Sunderland foundered in the storm, and their crews perished. The Newcastle, the Queenborough, and Protector fire-ship, were driven on shore and destroyed; but the men were happily saved, together with the guns, stores, and provisions. Many other ships sustained considerable damage. This unexpected disaster elevated to the highest pitch the spirits of the garrison, and general Lally, seeing the port clear, lost not a moment to send an express to the French agent in the neighbouring neutral settlements, in order to obtain a supply of provisions. This letter was intercepted by admiral Stevens, and is published in the appendix\*, as it discovers the singular character of this daring adventurer. As the

\* Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. 8.

A. D. admiral imagined, that Lally had made the same solicitations by  
 1761. other messengers; he immediately dispatched letters to the Dutch and Danish settlements, mentioning the good condition of the greater part of his fleet, and assuring them that he would make prize of such vessels as he found infringing the neutrality by attempting to supply the enemy. He was sufficiently in a condition to make good his threats; for, in four days after the storm, he had, with incredible diligence and celerity, repaired the damage of his ships, and appeared before Pondicherry with eleven sail of the line and two frigates, all fit for service. The siege was now carried on with redoubled ardour. By the 15th of January a battery was raised within point blank; a breach was effected in the curtain; the west face and flank of the north-west bastion were ruined, and the guns of the enemy entirely silenced. The principal of the Jesuits came out with two civilians, and proposed terms of capitulation in the name of the inhabitants. General Lally disdained to capitulate, but sent out a paper, full of invectives against the English for breach of treaties relative to India: the obstinacy of the governor made the proposal of the inhabitants be disregarded; so that the city of Pondicherry, with a garrison of near 2000 European soldiers, a vast quantity of military stores, and great riches, was, without any formal surrender, abandoned to the discretion of the besiegers.

After the reduction of Pondicherry on the coast of Coromandel, a body of English forces was embarked for an expedition against Mahie, a settlement on the coast of Malabar, which the French had lately fortified at a very considerable expence. The place was attacked with so much vigour, that the French governor thought proper to surrender it about the beginning of February, by which means the English obtained the command of the whole peninsula of India, the most extensive as well as the most profitable sphere of commerce in the world.

These important successes had not, since the commencement of the war, been chequered by any considerable misfortune attending the British arms in the east. We must not, however, omit to mention the achievements of the count d'Estaing, who in the year 1759 had made himself master of the English fort of Gombroon in the Gulf of Persia, and taken two frigates, with  
 three

three other vessels belonging to the company. He performed A. D. this with four ships under Dutch colours, one of which carried 1761. sixty-four guns, and another twenty-two, with a land force of 150 Europeans, and about 200 Caffres. In the succeeding year the fort of Natal on the coast of Africa surrendered to him at discretion, and he found two ships in the road. He afterwards sailed to Sumatra, where the English carried on a great trade in pepper, and, before the end of the following April, reduced Tappanapoli and Bencoolen or Marlborough fort, which last, though in a good state of defence, was ingloriously abandoned by the English garrison, after they had burnt a vessel richly loaded, (the Denham Indiaman), that lay in the harbour. The activity and enterprize of Mr. d'Estaing would deserve commendation, if his character had not been strongly marked with perfidy and cruelty. He had surrendered himself at the siege of Madras, and had engaged not to serve against the English until he should be regularly exchanged; so that, when he attacked Gambroon, he was a prisoner on parole. When he became master of that place, he paid no regard to the terms on which it had surrendered. He promised to prevent thefts and disorders; but the houses were set on fire, and the factory given up to the licentious pillage of the Arabs.

After the expulsion of the French from North America, the English found in the Cherokees a cruel and barbarous and not an unwarlike enemy. They defended themselves with a savage heroism against the superior arts of a civilized nation, nor could they be reduced to the necessity of accepting a peace from their conquerors, until the English had penetrated with great courage and perseverance into their country, destroyed fifteen of their towns or villages, and burnt or cut down the greatest part of their harvest.

While the continent of North America was thus reduced to a state of undisturbed obedience, the British squadrons were still carrying on their conquests in the West Indies. On the fourth of June Sir James Douglas sailed from Guadaloupe with the Dublin, Belliqueux, Sunderland, and Montague, four ships of the line, and a considerable body of land forces under the command of lord Rollo, destined for an expedition against the island of Dominica. This island, though one of those called neutral,

A. D. had been occupied and fortified by the French. Its extent is  
 1761. about ten leagues in length, and eight in breadth; it is well watered by rivers plentifully supplied with fish; produces abundant pasture for cattle, and is very fruitful in coffee, cocoa, tobacco, and cotton. It is situated within ten leagues of Martinico, the capital of the French sugar-islands, which, in case of an invasion, it could easily supply with men and provisions; a circumstance which rendered it of great importance to France, and an object worthy the ambition of the British ministry.

The armament under lord Rollo and Sir James Douglas arrived within a league of Roseau, the capital of Dominica, on the sixth of June; and the fleet having anchored, a lieutenant of the navy, accompanied by a land officer, was immediately dispatched with a manifesto, signed by the commodore and general, requiring the inhabitants of the neutral island of Dominica to surrender, and take the oaths of allegiance to his majesty king George. The manifesto being read to the people of Roseau, some of the principal inhabitants set off in a boat, and went on board the English fleet. Their behaviour and conversation discovered no dislike to the British government: on the contrary, they seemed very well pleased that his majesty's forces had come to take possession of the island. But when they were put on shore in the afternoon, they, as well as the rest of the inhabitants, were encouraged by the French governor, Mr. Longprice, to stand on the defensive, and to declare they would not tamely surrender, while they had arms in their hands. As soon as this determination was known, the ships anchored as near as possible to the shore, and the necessary dispositions were made for landing the troops. This was effected, about five in the evening, under cover of the shipping. They formed quickly on the beach; and, while the main division took possession of the town, the corps of grenadiers, consisting of the companies of the fourth and twenty-second regiments, seized a flanking battery, and part of the adjoining entrenchment, which had been abandoned. But the enemy continued to annoy the British troops by their musquetry from behind bushes and trees, and by their cannon fired from a battery which overlooked the town. By this means the troops might have suffered greatly during the night; the enemy, perhaps, might have been reinforced



forced before morning, and, fortified in a strong post with four A. D. entrenchments on a steep hill, might have been enabled to make 1761. a vigorous defence. Lord Rollo, therefore, judged it best to order them to be immediately dislodged by the grenadiers supported by the battalions; which service was performed with so much order and rapidity, that, before night, the French were driven successively from all their entrenchments, and the battery above them, where colonel Melvill immediately took post with his grenadiers. Lord Rollo continued at their advanced post during the night, having established a communication, by proper guards, with the rest of the troops who possessed the town. Next day he established his head-quarters at Roseau, where he received the submission of the inhabitants, who came to lay down their arms, and take the oaths of allegiance to his Britannic majesty.

While this important conquest was acquired by the assistance of part of the squadron belonging to the Leeward islands, the remainder were employed in protecting the British traders, and scouring those seas of the Martinico privateers, of which they took a great number. Nor was the squadron stationed off Jamaica less vigilant, or less alert: rear-admiral Holmes who commanded there, planned his cruizes with judgment, and executed them with success. Having received intelligence in the beginning of June, that several ships of war belonging to the enemy had sailed from Port Louis, he immediately made such a disposition of his squadron as was most likely to intercept them. He himself in the Hampshire fell in with the *St. Anne*, and chased her to leeward down upon the *Centaur*. The French captain, perceiving this last ship, and dreading the danger of being between two fires, hauled up between them, and ran close in shore, until he was becalmed about a league to the northward of Donna Maria bay. The *Centaur* chased, and got up along-aside; upon which the Frenchman, who had fired his stern-chace, struck his colours, and surrendered a very fine ship, pierced for sixty-four guns, loaded with coffee, sugar, and indigo, and manned with near 400 sailors and marines.

Earlier in the same year the French were foiled in an attempt to regain a footing on the coast of Africa. They were too sensible of the advantages attending the lucrative trade of this coast,

A. D. to remain satisfied under a total exclusion from it. In order to recover some part of what they had lost, they sent two frigates to surprize James-fort at the mouth of the Gambia. The little garrison there, received them with such resolution, that one frigate was forced on shore, and lost; and the other sailed off, after having sustained considerable damage. There had been two more frigates appointed by the French to act on this service. But these had been intercepted by Sir Edward Hawke's squadron, stationed in the bay of Quiberon.

This unimportant capture, and that of a few merchantmen of little value, did not justify to the nation the inactivity in which the British squadron on the coast of France had been allowed to remain. Something of greater consequence was expected from such a powerful armament under the direction of such naval commanders as Sir Edward Hawke and Sir Charles Hardy. But in the month of March, to the general surprize and indignation of the public, the two admirals returned to Spithead, and another squadron, with a great body of land forces on board, was afterwards sent to occupy their station. This squadron consisted of the Sandwich, ninety guns; the Valiant, Temeraire, Torbay, Dragon, and Swiftsure, seventy-four guns each; the Prince of Orange, seventy guns; the Hampton-court and Essex, sixty-four guns each; the Achilles, sixty guns; and several frigates, bomb-ketches and fire-ships, with upwards of an hundred transports, carrying 900 soldiers under the command of major-general Hodgson. The expedition was intended against Belleisle, the reduction of which, it was imagined, would be attended with inconsiderable difficulties and many advantages. This island is between twelve and thirteen leagues in circumference, and the largest of all the European islands belonging to the French king. It contains only one city called La Palais, three country towns, 103 villages, and about 5000 inhabitants, who live by the natural fertility of the soil, and the curing and vending of pilchards. There are three harbours in this island, Palais, Lauzion, and Goulfard, every one of which labours under some considerable defect. But, although the harbours are bad, small privateers might issue from thence greatly to the molestation of the French coasting trade, and the fleet of England might ride, between these harbours and the continent of France, in a well-protected

protected road. The real advantages, however, arising from A. D. this conquest, were not the only inducements to undertake it. 1761. Nothing could wound more cruelly the pride of France than the acquisition of what might be regarded as a part of her coast; and, at the same time, the jealousy of Spain would be less alarmed by our advantages in this quarter, than by those which we might obtain by pushing our conquests in the West Indies.

The fleet sailed from Spithead on the 29th of March in three divisions, commanded by commodore Keppel, Sir Thomas Stanhope, and captain Barton. On the 6th of April a westerly wind enabled them to approach the coast of France, and the commodore detached several frigates, with orders to station themselves in such a manner as might intercept the enemy's communication with the continent. Next morning the fleet passed along the southern shore of the island, and came to an anchor in the great road, about 12 o'clock at noon. The commanders agreed, that the descent ought to be made on the south-east extremity of the island, near the Point Lomaria. But, in order to amuse the enemy, a feint was made to attack the citadel of Palais, while two large ships conveyed the troops to the intended landing-place, and silenced a battery which the enemy had there erected. The flat-bottomed boats were now approaching the shore, and about 260 had actually landed under the command of major Purcel and captain Osborne, when the enemy, suddenly appearing on the heights, poured in such a severe fire as threw them into the utmost confusion, and intimidated the rest of the troops from landing. Captain Osborne, at the head of 60 grenadiers, advanced with great intrepidity so near as to exchange several thrusts with the French officer. But the handful of men which he commanded were soon overpowered by numbers. He himself, as well as major Purcel and two sea-officers, were shot, and the attempt ended with the loss of above 500 killed, wounded, or taken prisoners. This discouraging check was succeeded by tempestuous weather, which did considerable damage to the large vessels, and staved or overfet 20 flat-bottomed boats.

These disasters did not dispirit the English commanders. They determined to examine the whole coast, in order to find a place more favourable for another attack. As soon as the weather afforded

A. D. afforded them the prospect of making a second trial, they pitched  
 1761. ed on a place near the above-mentioned point of Lomaria, where the excessive steepness and difficulty of the rocks had rendered the enemy less attentive than elsewhere. On the 22d of April, in the morning, the troops were disposed in flat-bottomed boats, and rowed towards different parts of the island; which distracted the French operations, and obliged them to divide their forces. Meanwhile captain Paterfon, at the head of Beauclerk's grenadiers, and captain Murray, with a detachment of marines, landed near Lomaria, mounted the precipice with astonishing intrepidity, and sustained the whole fire of the enemy, until they were reinforced by the approach of the greatest part of the English troops. The French then retired before the bayonets of the British soldiers, leaving many of their wounded companions and several field-pieces. Nor was the action without loss on our side. Forty men were killed, and many more wounded, among whom were colonel Mackenzie and captain Murray of the marines, and captain Paterfon of Beauclerk's grenadiers, who lost his arm in the engagement.

The whole army being now landed, Mr. de St. Croix ordered all his out-posts to repair to a camp under the walls of the town of Palais, where he determined to make a vigorous defence, his forces, when joined by the militia of the island, amounting to four thousand men fit for service. On the 23d of April the English troops were formed into columns, and began their march towards the capital of the island. Next day general Hodgson ordered a detachment of light horse to take post at Sauzon; and, on the 25th, a corps of infantry took possession of a village called Bordilla; and the whole army intrenched itself in that neighbourhood. The tempestuous weather rendering it impossible to bring on shore the artillery and implements necessary in a siege, the French governor seized this opportunity to erect six redoubts for defending the avenues of Palais, the citadel of which had been planned and fortified with admirable skill by the celebrated Vauban. General Hodgson, compelled by necessity to defer his military operations, published a manifesto, addressed to the inhabitants, offering them the free enjoyment of their religious and civil rights, provided they would submit themselves to the protection of the English government;

an assurance which had considerable effect on the natives, but A. D. produced no alteration on the resolution of the governor, who, 1761. when summoned to surrender, declared he was determined to defend the place to the last extremity. About the latter end of April some mortars being brought up, began to play upon the town, and the besiegers broke ground on the 2d of May. The day after, in the evening, the enemy attacked the trenches with great vigour, and threw the piquets on the left in confusion. Notwithstanding the efforts of general Crawford, who performed every thing that could be expected from the bravery and conduct of an experienced officer, the works of the besiegers were destroyed, several hundreds of their men were killed, and the general with his two aid-du-camps fell into the hands of the enemy. The French did not attempt to push the advantage any farther, by attacking the piquets on the right, who had prepared to give them a warm reception. They retired after their first success, and allowed the British to repair the damage which they had sustained. This was done in less than twenty-four hours, and a redoubt was also begun on the right of the works to prevent a second surprize.

From this time the siege was carried on with the utmost vigour; and the besieged gave such continual proofs of their courage and activity, as confirmed the reputation of Mr. de St. Croix for a gallant officer, consummate in the art of war. The engineers being unanimously of opinion that the works could not be properly advanced until the French redoubts should be taken, the general made the disposition for that purpose on the 13th. The attack began at day-break, with four pieces of cannon and thirty cohorns, which poured a terrible fire into the redoubt on the right of the enemy's flank. This opened a way for a detachment of marines, sustained by part of Loudon's regiment, to advance to the parapet, and, with fixed bayonets, to drive the French from the works, and take possession of the post. The other redoubts were successively reduced by the same detachment reinforced by Colvill's regiment, and the enemy were compelled, after great slaughter, to take shelter in the citadel. Such was the ardour of the assailants, that they entered the streets of Palais pell-mell with the fugitives; and  
having

A. D. having taken possession of the town, they released the English  
1761. prisoners above-mentioned.

The defence being now confined intirely to the citadel, which could have no communication either with the rest of the island or with the continent of France, it was evident that the place must soon be obliged to surrender for want of provisions. But Mr. de St. Croix determined to sell it as dearly as possible, and to maintain his own honour at least, if he could not the possession of the citadel of Palais. On the part of the English nothing was neglected. Parallels were finished, barricadoes made, batteries constructed, an incessant fire from mortars and artillery was maintained day and night, from the 13th of May till the 25th. Then the fire of the enemy began to abate; by the end of May a breach was made in the citadel; and, notwithstanding the indefatigable industry of the governor in repairing the damage, the fire of the besiegers increased to such a degree, that the breach became practicable by the 7th of June, and the place was apparently no longer tenable. Then Mr. de St. Croix capitulated upon terms<sup>b</sup> not unworthy of his noble defence, and the garrison marched out with the honours of war.

Thus was the whole island of Belleisle reduced under the English government after a defence of two months, in the course of which we lost eighteen hundred men killed and wounded. The loss most regretted was that of Sir William Williams, a young gentleman of great talents and expectations, who had already made a distinguished figure in parliament. He was the third gentleman of fashion, whom, in this war, the love of glory had brought to an honourable death in hostile expeditions against the coast of France.

Having particularized the successful operations of the British squadrons in the taking of Belleisle, Dominica, and Pondicherry, as well as in defeating the projects which the French meditated against our settlements on the coast of Africa, we shall mention the exploits performed by single cruisers in the course of the year, many of which confer the highest honour on the British flag. Captain Elphinstone, commander of the Richmond frigate, of 32 guns and 220 men, stationed on the coast of Flanders, being inform-

<sup>b</sup> See Appendix, No. 9.

ed that a French frigate called the *Felicité* had made a prize of A. D. an English merchantman, sailed in quest of the enemy; and 1761. coming in sight of her, about eleven at night on the 23d, a severe engagement began next day, about ten in the morning, near Gravesande; which is but eight miles distant from the Hague. The vicinity of the place induced the young prince of Orange, as well as the ambassadors of England and France, to set out, in order to view the combat, in the issue of which, as the ships were exactly of equal force, the honour of the two nations was materially interested. About noon both ships ran ashore, along-side of each other; and in this situation the fight continued with great obstinacy, till the French abandoned their quarters, their ship being much damaged, the captain slain, and above 100 men killed or wounded. The *Richmond* soon floated, without sustaining any considerable hurt, having obtained the victory at the expence of three men killed, and thirteen wounded. The French ambassador loudly exclaimed against this attack as a violation of the Dutch neutrality, and demanded signal reparation for the insult and injury which his countrymen had sustained. But the Dutch at that time did not think it convenient to urge their remonstrances with vehemence, and they were answered in such a manner by the British ambassador as prevented any difficulties arising between the two courts.

On the 23d of the same month captain Hood, commanding the *Minerva* frigate of 32 guns and 220 men, cruising in the chops of the channel, descried a large ship of two decks steering to the westward. This was the *Warwick* of 60 guns taken from the English, the most boasted capture the enemy had made in the course of the war. She had formerly carried 60, but was now mounted with only 36 guns, and commanded by Mr. le Verger de Belair. Her crew amounted to about 300 men, including a company of soldiers intended as a reinforcement to the garrison of Pondicherry. Notwithstanding her superiority, captain Hood gave chase, and, the wind blowing a fresh easterly gale, he came up with her at 20 minutes past ten. His attack was warmly returned; the fire on both sides was terrible. Several masts of both ships were shot away, and they fell foul of one another, while the sea ran very high; so that the crews were greatly incumbered by their broken masts and shattered

A. D. rigging. The high sea separated them, and the Warwick fell 1761. to leeward. About a quarter after eleven the Minerva's bowsprit was carried away, and the fore-mast soon followed it. This misfortune made captain Hood almost despair of coming up with the enemy, who had got three leagues to leeward. However, he cleared his ship with incredible activity, and, bearing down, renewed the attack about four o'clock. In three quarters of an hour the enemy struck, having thirteen men killed and thirty-five wounded. The loss of men was equal on board the Minerva, and all her masts were destroyed: nevertheless, her prize was conveyed in triumph to Spithead. On the 8th of the same month captain Hood had taken the Ecureil privateer belonging to Bayonne, of 14 guns and 122 men.

On the 13th of March another French ship called the Entreprenant, built for 44 guns, but mounted with 26, having 200 men on board and a rich cargo, bound for St. Domingo, was encountered near the Land's-end by the Vengeance frigate commanded by captain Nightingale. The Vengeance was mounted with 26 guns, nine and four pounders, and carried 200 men. There was a great disparity in the size of the ships and in the weight of metal. But the English captain, as usual, gave chase, and got up with the enemy at five o'clock in the afternoon. The action was maintained on both sides with uncommon fury, and continued for near an hour, during which time the Vengeance being set on fire, the Entreprenant ran her bowsprit upon the taffrail of the English frigate, with an intention to board her. In this design, however, the French miscarried through the skill and activity of captain Nightingale, who found means to clear himself, and stood to leeward, in order to repair his rigging. The ship was no sooner in proper condition than he ranged close up again to the enemy, whose fire was still directed against the rigging of the English frigate, which, after this second attack had lasted above an hour, being again disabled, allowed the enemy to sheer off, and bear away. But the English a second time repaired their damage, wore ship, ran up within pistol-shot, and began a third attack more furious than any of the preceding. The engagement continued an hour and an half before the Entreprenant called for quarters. She had 15 men killed, and 24 wounded.



wounded. The Vengeance had an equal number wounded, but A. D. only six men killed. 1761.

These losses did not complete the misfortunes of the French navy, during the present year, in the British seas. In April, a French frigate called the *Comete*, of 32 guns, and 250 men, just sailed from Brest, was taken by captain Deane of the Bedford man of war, and conveyed safely into Portsmouth. About the same time captain Bograve of the Albany sloop of 16 guns and 125 men, came up with the Pheasant frigate, of equal force, after a chase of 28 hours. The French captain, having thrown his guns overboard, struck as soon as the Albany came along-side of him, and the prize was carried into Spithead. In the course of the same month a large East India ship, fitted out from France, with 28 guns and 350 men, fell in with the *Hero* and the *Venus*, commanded by the captains Fortescue and Harrison, and, being taken without opposition, was carried into Plymouth.

The same spirit of enterprize and activity distinguished the cruizers belonging to the Squadron commanded by vice-admiral Saunders in the Mediterranean. In the beginning of April the *Oriflamme*, a French ship of 40 guns, being off Cape Tres Forcas, was descried by the *Isis* of 50 guns, commanded by captain Wheeler. The English captain gave chase, and came up with the enemy about six in the evening; but the Frenchman, having the advantage of the wind, maintained a running fight till half past ten, during which captain Wheeler unfortunately was shot. The command devolved on lieutenant Cunningham, who perceiving it to be the enemy's intention to reach, if possible, the neutral coast of Spain, ordered his men to board her, which was done with great bravery; and, her commander in a short time submitting, she was brought into the bay of Gibraltar. The number of her killed and wounded amounted to 45: the loss of the *Isis* did not exceed four killed, and nine wounded. The next action in those seas was much more destructive to the British sailors. The *Thunderer*, captain Proby, in company with the *Modeste*, *Thetis*, and *Favourite* sloop, cruized off the coast of Spain, with a view to intercept the *Achilles* and *Bouffon*, two French ships of war, which lay in the harbour of Cadiz. These were descried on the 16th of July by the

A. D. British ships, which gave them chase. The Thunderer came up 1761. with the Achilles about midnight, and, after a short but warm action of half an hour, obliged the enemy to strike. The French had, on this occasion, fired their guns with more effect than usual; for in the English ship 40 men were killed, and upwards of 100 wounded: among the latter was the captain. The Thetis pursued the Bouffon, but could not bring her to an engagement till seven next morning. The engagement was maintained on both sides with great impetuosity for the space of half an hour, when the Modeste ranging up, and thus putting the French ship between two fires, compelled her to submit. The victors carried their prizes, which had been much damaged in their rigging, and suffered great loss in their crews, into the bay of Gibraltar,

These advantageous captures were preludes to one of the most remarkable and glorious actions that distinguished the whole war. On the 10th of August captain Faulkner of the Bellona, a ship of the line, and captain Logie of the Brilliant, a frigate of 30 guns, sailed from the river Tagus for England, and on the 14th discovered three sail standing in for the land, one of the line of battle, and two frigates. These vessels had no sooner descried captain Faulkner, than they bore down upon him until within the distance of seven miles, when seeing the Bellona and the Brilliant through the magnifying medium of a hazy atmosphere, they concluded they were both two-decked ships, and, dreading the issue of an engagement, resolved to avoid it by flight. The English captains, judging them to be enemies by their crowding sail to escape, immediately chased, which continued all night. At five in the morning they approached so near as to discern the Courageux, a 74 gun ship, and two frigates of 36 guns, the Malicieuse and the Hermione. The French captain now perceived, that one of the English vessels was a frigate; and the Bellona, being one of the best constructed ships in the English navy, lay so flush in the water, that she appeared at a distance considerably smaller than she really was. The Frenchman, therefore, no longer declined the engagement, but hoisted a red ensign in the mizen-shrouds as a signal for his two frigates to close with and attack the Brilliant. At the same time he took in his studding sails, wore ship, and stood for the Bellona, while captain Faulkner

Faulkner advanced with an easy sail, manned his quarters, and A. D. made every necessary disposition for an obstinate engagement. 1761.

Both commanders had a fair opportunity to measure their strength and abilities. The wind was gentle, the sea calm; the ships were of equal rates, their guns and weight of metal the same. The *Courageux* had 700 men; the *Bellona* 550. While the vessels came up with each other, the fire was suspended on both sides till they were within pistol-shot. The engagement then began with a dreadful fire of muskets and artillery. In less than ten minutes all the *Bellona's* braces, shrouds, and rigging, were tore and shattered, and her mizen-mast went by the board, with the men on the round top, who saved their lives with much difficulty, by clambering into the port-holes. Captain Faulkner, apprehensive that the enemy would seize the opportunity of his being disabled, to sheer off, gave orders for immediate boarding; but the *Courageux*, by falling athwart the bow of her enemy, rendered this altogether impracticable. In this position the English ship might be raked fore and aft with great execution. The haul-yards, and most of the other ropes by which she could be worked, were already shot away. But captain Faulkner made use of the studding sails with such dexterity as to wear the ship quite round; and his officers and men, perceiving this change of position, flew to the guns on the other side, now opposed to the enemy, from which they poured a terrible discharge, which continued twenty minutes without intermission or abatement. The fire became so intolerable that the French hauled down their ensign, and called for quarter. The damage done to the rigging of the *Bellona* was considerable; but she had suffered very little in the hull, and the number of the killed and wounded did not exceed forty. The *Courageux*, on the other hand, appeared like a wreck on the water. Nothing was seen but her fore-mast and bowsprit; her decks were torn up in several places, and large breaches were made in her sides. Above 220 of her men were killed, and half that number of wounded were brought on shore at Lisbon, to which place the prize was conveyed.

During the action between the larger ships, captain Logie of the *Brilliant* had displayed the most signal courage and address. He could not attempt to board, or expect to make prize of two ships,

A. D. ships, each of which was of equal strength with his own. But 1761. he so managed his attack and defence as to keep the two French frigates continually employed, and to prevent either of them from giving the smallest assistance to the *Courageux*. Finally, he obliged them both to sheer off, and to consult their safety by flight, after they had suffered considerably in their masts and rigging.

In all the engagements which we have described the advantage was continually on the side of the English. The French neither managed their ships with that facility, nor fought their guns with that dexterity and skill, which appeared in all the operations of their opponents. Their awkwardness in working ship may be ascribed to inexperience; but their inferiority in managing their guns, it is impossible to refer to any such cause. The French sailors are regularly taught the practical part of gunnery, an advantage which the English, in general, have little opportunity to acquire. But even here the British seamen shewed themselves, on every occasion, superior to the enemy; a superiority owing, not to their education or discipline, but to that bravery and resolution which never forsake them in the moment of danger, but allow them to remain in full possession of their faculties at a time when the French are rendered incapable, through fear, of any vigorous exertion either of mind or body.

In the course of the year 1761 the French lost 117 privateers and armed merchantmen, which mounted 698 carriage-guns and 239 swivels, and carried 5576 men, exclusive of four Indiamen, of which the cargoes were valued at near 400,000 pounds, and many unarmed merchant-ships. Their royal navy was deprived of six ships of the line and eight frigates, which together carried 636 guns and 6240 men. In the course of the same year the English lost 814 merchantmen, a proportion of three to one, which arose from the inattention of the English vessels to the orders of the convoys sent to protect them, from the immense numbers of them which covered the seas, and from the enemy's venturing the whole remains of their strength in privateers fitted out in order to interrupt our commercial navigation. Among all the vessels that were taken we find but one of any considerable value, the *Ajax* East Indiaman, captain Lindsey from Bengal, valued at 200,000 pounds. Excepting the  
Warwick,

Warwick, which was retaken, the royal navy lost but one small A. D. vessel, the Speedwell cutter of eight guns; and the captain was 1761. honourably acquitted by a court-martial, who were unanimously of opinion, that the said cutter, being taken in the harbour of Vigo, was an illegal capture. There is a circumstance which shews in a clearer light than the number of captures, the general result of the naval advantages obtained by Great Britain. Notwithstanding the various exchanges made by cartel ships in the course of the year, we still retained in our possession upwards of 25,000 French prisoners; whereas the number of English prisoners in France did not exceed 1200.

Notwithstanding many spirited exertions of the English navy 1762. in the year 1761, it is obvious, that the naval as well as the military operations of Great Britain had continued gradually to languish during the course of two years. The French, like ruined gamesters, had little more to lose, and the smallness of the stake produced a degree of phlegm and indifference in the victors, which deprived them of their wonted activity. Besides this, all their external glory could not alleviate their domestic sufferings. Great Britain groaned under a burden of an hundred millions, without enjoying any other consolation than that of seeing her opponent as much indebted, and more exhausted, than herself. Had the parties, therefore, been left to their own strength and resources, there would speedily have been an end of the contest. But France, by a dexterity of negotiation, of which there is hardly an example in history, acquired, at the end of a most ruinous war, such a powerful and hearty assistance as afforded her the fairest hopes of retrieving all her misfortunes. We have already hinted at the partiality of Spain in the cause of our enemies, and the motives of her uneasiness at the unexampled success of the British arms. These were heightened by the intrigues of the French ambassador at the court of Madrid; so that while our artful and ambitious rival was negotiating a treaty at London, and seemed desirous of procuring the blessings of peace by the most humiliating concessions, her minister at the Spanish court was employed in such measures as, instead of extinguishing the flames of war, tended to spread them more widely, and to make them rage with redoubled fury. Every concession on the part of France was a new incentive

A. D. tive to the animosity of Spain. When the negotiation of the 1762. peace, therefore, seemed nearest to a conclusion, it was precisely at that time the farthest removed from an happy issue; for then was the moment for Spain to interpose, and, at one explosion, to blow up the whole basis of the treaty. Along with a very agreeable plan for an accommodation, Mr. Buffy, the French agent at London, delivered a private memorial, signifying, that, in order to establish the peace upon the most solid foundation, it might be proper to invite the king of Spain to guaranty and confirm it; and for this purpose it would be necessary finally to adjust the differences which subsisted between the crowns of Spain and England. He condescended on three points which had been disputed between these crowns, the restitution of the captures which had been made on the Spanish flag, the privilege of the Spanish nation to fish on the banks of Newfoundland, and the demolition of the English settlements made in the bay of Honduras.

When these unexpected proposals were made, the manly spirit of Mr. Pitt rejected, with the utmost scorn, the idea of negotiating the disputes of his nation with Spain, a power with which we were actually at peace, through the medium of an enemy humbled and almost at our feet. He called on the Spanish ambassador to disavow this extraordinary memorial, which was equally insolent and irregular, as matters of such high moment, relating to the interests of Spain, ought not to have been proposed by a French agent, commissioned to negotiate a particular and distinct business, when the Spaniards had an ambassador residing in London, from whom no intimation of these matters had been previously received. But the Spaniard, when thus called upon, instead of disavowing, openly acknowledged and justified the step taken by Mr. de Buffy. He declared, that the kings of France and of Spain were united not only by the ties of blood but by a mutual interest. He magnified the humanity and greatness of mind which his most Christian majesty demonstrated in the proposition which had so unjustly given offence. He insisted much on the sincere desire of peace, the only motive which influenced the conduct of the two monarchs, and concluded haughtily, that, if his master had been governed by any other principles, "his Catholic majesty, giving full scope to

" his

“ his greatness, would have spoken from himself, and as be- A. D.  
 “ came his dignity.” 1762.

Mr. Pitt had penetration enough to see through the veil that covered this hostile declaration. He perceived, that there was a perfect union of affections, interests, and councils between the two courts; that Spain must inevitably coincide with all the measures of France; and that, if she deferred to declare war, it was only for her own convenience, and especially because she waited the arrival of her flota from America. Totally possessed with this idea, the minister determined to act with a magnanimity becoming the dignity of his nation.

Great Britain was singularly circumstanced at this period of time. She had carried on a continental war against France, Austria, the Empire, Russia, in a word, all the great northern powers on the continent. She had destroyed the marine, the commerce, and the colonies of France. The interference of Spain alone was wanting to set her at war with all the great powers of Europe; and Spain is precisely that country against which she can at all times contend, with the fairest prospect of advantage and honour. That extensive monarchy, though vigorous at the extremities, is exhausted at the heart; her resources lie at a great distance; and whatever power commands the ocean, may command the wealth and commerce of Spain.

The situation of Great Britain, as well as the character of the minister, soared above the timid policy which commonly prevails in modern courts. There was not only a great man, but a great occasion, which is often wanting to a great man to display the full force of his mind. Mr. Pitt asserted, with the magnanimous patriotism of an ancient Roman, that, despising useless ceremonies and insignificant forms, we ought to consider the evasions of the Spanish court as a refusal of satisfaction, and that refusal as a sufficient declaration of war; we ought therefore, from prudence as well as from spirit, to secure to ourselves the first blow by interrupting the Spanish resources in their arrival to Europe, and by the same early and effective measures, which had reduced France to a dependence on Spain, disable Spain from giving assistance to France. This procedure was suited to the offended majesty of the British empire, and would teach Spain and every other power the danger of presuming to dictate in our affairs, or

A. D. to intermeddle with a menacing mediation, as insidious as it was  
 1762. audacious. He would allow our enemies, whether secret or declared, no time to think and recollect themselves.

The sentiments of Mr. Pitt shocked the delicacy of his colleagues in administration. They talked of the chimerical heroism of unnecessarily entering on a war, and of seeking new enemies, while no mention was made of new allies, nor indeed of any new resource whatsoever. To plunge into such measures could not fail to alarm and scandalize all Europe. The Spanish king's partiality in favour of France was still doubtful; but had we *real cause* not only for suspicion but complaint, the law of nations and of reason requires, that recourse should be had to expostulation, and demands of satisfaction. If these failed of success, then is the time to take up arms, after employing the forms universally acknowledged among civilized nations as necessary to distinguish lawful war from lawless violence and oppression. This unseasonable opposition transported the minister beyond the bounds of moderation. He affirmed, "That this  
 " was the time for humbling the whole house of Bourbon; that,  
 " if this opportunity were let slip, it might never be recovered,  
 " and, if he could not prevail in this instance, he was resolved  
 " to sit no longer in that council; that being called to the ministry by the voice of the people, to whom he was accountable for his conduct, he would not remain in a situation which  
 " made him responsible for measures which he was not permitted to guide." Accordingly he resigned the seals the 9th of October, and his colleagues continued to negotiate by means of lord Bristol, ambassador at the court of Madrid, for near two months longer. Mr. Wall, the prime minister of Spain, was repeatedly solicited, in moderate and inoffensive terms, to disclose the nature of the treaty, which, as the French industriously circulated, had taken place among all the different branches of the house of Bourbon. As often as the question was proposed, it was artfully avoided. At length, lord Bristol being instructed to make the demand with greater force, Mr. Wall entered into a long and bitter complaint against England, accused her of insolence and ambition, of a boundless desire of conquest and dominion, and of having shown to the world, by the haughtiness of her late proceedings, that she intended to drive the  
 French



French from all their possessions in the new world that she **A. D.** might have an easier task in seizing the Spanish dominions in 1762. those parts; that he would be the man to advise the king of Spain not to suffer his territories to be invaded, without arming his subjects in their defence. As to the question which had been so often put to him, he gave no other reply, but that the king his master had thought proper to renew his family compacts; and then, as if he had gone farther than he was authorized, he suddenly changed the discourse, and continued his declamatory invective against Great Britain. This was the happy effect of the measures of the English ministry, whose forbearance and good breeding were repaid by insult and reproach. At length their patience forsook them; they perceived that longer moderation would be construed into fear, and they sent orders to lord Bristol to renew his instances concerning the treaty with becoming firmness, while at the same time he signified, that a refusal to disclose its contents, or to disavow an intention to take part with our enemies, would be considered as an aggression on the part of Spain, and an absolute declaration of war. The demand was made in the precise terms of the order, and then the pride of Spain tore asunder that veil which her policy had so long thought proper to assume. Her fleet was by this time safe in the harbour of Cadiz. She was now secure as to her interest, and could give full scope to her resentment. Mr. Wall, therefore, replied to the English requisition in these memorable words: “ That the spirit of haughtiness and discord, which  
 “ dictated this inconsiderate demand of the English ministry,  
 “ and which, for the misfortune of mankind, still reigns so  
 “ much in the British government, is what has made the declaration of war; that in that moment the war was declared,  
 “ when the king’s dignity was attacked; and that the English  
 “ ambassador might return how and when he thought proper.”

The earl of Bristol quitted Madrid the 17th of December; and soon after the Spanish ambassador left London. Europe was thus plunged into a new war by the very means which had been used to draw her out of an old one. A mere punctilio, if we can possibly believe Mr. Wall, was the motive which weighed with his master and himself, and prompted their humane magnanimity to involve one half of Europe in discord and mis-

A. D. ry. But whoever diligently attends to the measures of the Spanish court from the memorial presented by Mr. de Buffly to the final answer of Mr. Wall, will perceive, that their motives to hostility were of a nature more serious and important. The insult offered to the king's honour in the question proposed by lord Bristol, might have been easily done away. Spain might have required England to disavow the proceedings of her ambassador, a request which, upon sufficient security of the pacific intentions of the former, the latter would readily have granted. But the insult to the king's honour was held out as a pretence for coming to a rupture at a time which seemed to suit the interests of Spain. The real cause of the war was her partiality for the French, her uneasiness at seeing the eldest branch of the house of Bourbon reduced to extremity, and her jealousy of the growing power of England, whose renown offended her pride, and whose naval greatness threatened the safety of her distant dominions. It appeared, however, to Mr. Wall, to be below the dignity of the Spanish monarch to avow reasons of disgust, in which fear seemed to have any share. He therefore directed the count de Fuentes his ambassador at London, to carry on the farce, and, before he left the English court, to publish a paper or manifesto, in which he assigns, as the only cause of the rupture, the insulting manner in which the affairs of Spain had been treated during Mr. Pitt's administration. He declares to the British king, to the English nation, and to the whole universe, that the horrors of war, into which the Spaniards and English are going to plunge themselves, must be attributed only to the immeasurable ambition of him who held the reins of the government, and who appears still to hold them, although by another hand; that, if the respect due to royal majesty had been regarded, explanations might have been had without any difficulty: the ministers of Spain might have said frankly to those of England what the count de Fuentes, by the king's express orders, declares publicly, *viz.* that the much-talked-of treaty is only a convention between the members of the family of Bourbon, wherein there is nothing that has the least relation to the present war; that there is an article for the mutual guaranty of the dominions of the two sovereigns, but it is specified therein, that that guaranty is not to be

be understood but of the dominions which shall remain to France A. D. 1762.  
after the present war shall be ended.

This extraordinary paper, which may be called the king of Spain's declaration of war against the right honourable William Pitt, Esq; was evidently intended for the ignoble purpose of sowing dissensions among the subjects of Great Britain. It was answered in every article with the utmost moderation, perspicuity, and force, in a memorial published by lord Egremont, who succeeded Mr. Pitt as secretary for the southern department. It is obvious, that the Spanish manifesto, whilst it pretends to set forth the purport of a treaty dated the 15th of August, does not deny the existence of any other treaty, which might more offensively concern the interests of Great Britain; nor does it say the least word that can explain the intentions of Spain, or the farther engagements that she may have contracted with France.

When the terms of this famous treaty came to be disclosed, it was found to contain articles sufficient to alarm not only Great Britain, against whose interests it was particularly levelled, but all the other powers of Europe. It was rather an act of incorporation, than of alliance among the kings of France, Spain, the two Sicilies, the duke of Parma, and all the branches of the Bourbon house. It contained stipulations hitherto unheard of in any treaty. By the 23d and 24th articles, the subjects of the several branches of that august family are admitted to a mutual-naturalization, and to a general participation of reciprocal privileges and immunities. They appear, by the 26th article, to disclose to one another their alliances and negotiations. By the 17th and 18th they formally engage not to make, or even to listen to any proposal of peace from their common enemies, but by mutual consent, being determined in time of peace, as well as in time of war, to consider the interests of France and Spain as the same, to compensate their several losses and advantages, and to act as if the two monarchies formed only one and the same power. There are but two restrictions to the extent of this scheme. The direct trade to America forms an exception to the absolute community of interests, and in the 8th article it is provided, that France shall not be intitled to the assistance of Spain, when she is involved in a war in consequence of her engagements by the treaty of Westphalia, unless some maritime power

A. D. power take part in those wars. This article plainly points at the  
 1762. object against which the whole treaty was more immediately directed. It indicates, that the direct and immediate tendency of the whole is to affect England, and insinuates to the other powers of Europe, that their connection with England is the circumstance which is to provoke the resentment, and call forth the activity of Spain.

Excepting these two restrictions, the family-compact produced that intire union between the French and Spanish monarchies, which was so much dreaded on the death of Charles II. and which it was the great object of the treaty of partition, and the war of the grand alliance, to prevent. France acquired by negotiation and intrigue what she could never acquire by force of arms, and, at the close of an unfortunate war, obtained an advantage greater than any she could have expected from the most fortunate issue of her affairs.

England was never placed in a more critical situation. She had to contend not only against all the great continental powers, but against the principal naval strength of Europe. When war was declared in January 1762, the Spaniards had at Ferrol 11 ships of the line ready to sail, and their whole fleet amounted to 100 ships of war<sup>c</sup>.

The French, upon the conclusion of the family-compact<sup>d</sup>, felt themselves animated with new vigour. The shattered remains of their navy became of consideration when united with that of Spain. The spirits of the people, long sunk in despondency, revived, and great exertions were made to put their fleet once more on a respectable footing. The government tried every re-

<sup>c</sup> LIST of the SPANISH FLEET.			1 Ship of	—	50 guns.
1 Ship of	—	86 guns.	3	—	30 —
1 —	—	84 —	7	—	26 —
2 —	—	80 —	3	—	24 —
1 —	—	76 —	8	—	22 —
1 —	—	74 —	5	—	20 —
7 —	—	70 —	5	—	18 —
29 —	—	68 —	4	—	16 —
1 —	—	64 —	BOMB KETCHES.		
1 —	—	62 —	4 of	—	16 guns
6 —	—	60 —	1 —	—	14 —
—	—	58 —	Four fire-ships.		

<sup>d</sup> See Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. 10.

source; private merchants contributed the last farthing for A. D. equipping privateers, and several communities engaged to fit 1762. out men of war at their own expence.

Great Britain enjoyed peculiar and sufficient advantages to excite her activity, and to balance the combination of all her enemies. The uniform tenor of success on our side made the people believe themselves invincible; and this belief, combined with the solid experience acquired in such a variety of services, and so many sharp conflicts by sea and land, inspired an enthusiasm of disciplined valour, which indeed rendered it almost impossible to resist them. The prospect of a Spanish war, while it held forth the hopes of immense plunder, conspired with the prevailing propensities, and roused to the most vigorous exertions of public and private strength. Nor had the parliament, which met the 3d of November, 1761, been wanting in liberality to second the generous ardour of the nation. They went through the estimates with diligence, and granted such liberal supplies as greatly exceeded those of all former years. 70,000 seamen, including 19,061 marines, were voted for the service of the year 1762; the land forces were maintained at the number of 67,676, besides the militia of England, the two regiments of fencible men in North Britain, the provincial troops in North America, and 67,177 German auxiliaries to support the war of Westphalia. For the payment of the sea and land forces, of subsidies to our German allies, and of the deficiencies of the grants of former sessions, they voted the sum of 18,617,895 l. 2 s. 8 d. of which 12,000,000 were borrowed on remote funds, at four *per cent. per ann.* with an addition of 1 *per cent. per ann.* for 99 years.

When war was declared against Spain, his majesty granted a commission, empowering the admiralty to issue letters of marque, for privateers to act against the subjects of that kingdom. At the same time he communicated the measure which the treaty between Spain and France had compelled him to take, in a speech to both houses of parliament. Such ample supplies were already granted, that no farther demand was made on this account; and so immensely had the power of England increased in the course of three reigns, that an union, the suspicion of which had alarmed all Europe in the time of the grand alliance, was beheld without the smallest symptom of fear or despondency.

The

A. D. The king of Great Britain disclaimed not only to take any illiberal advantages of his enemies, but even to retort their wrongs. 1762. Although his Catholic majesty detained the British ships in his ports, and laid restraints on the British subjects within his dominions, the subjects of Spain were left at entire liberty, and the merchantmen which had arrived in English harbours, before they had been apprized of the declaration of war, were allowed to depart in safety. This magnanimity became the dignity of the British nation. It is the part of fear to snatch at every pitiful advantage. But had Britain descended so low, it would have been unworthy of the grand scene of action and glory, which was now ready to open in remote parts of the earth.

The failure of the expedition against Martinico in 1759 did not discourage our administration from making this island the object of another attempt. Martinico still furnished a considerable resource to the declining commerce of France. It is the largest of all the Caribbee islands, advantageously situated between Barbadoes and Guadaloupe, and to windward of Antigua and St. Christophers. It extends 20 leagues in length, and is about 130 miles in circumference, indented by a great number of creeks and harbours, diversified with hill and dale, shaded with wood, watered by many streams, and produces a very considerable quantity of sugar, indigo, coffee, cotton, ginger, aloes, and pimento. Here the governor-general of all the French islands in the West Indies resides, and here is established the sovereign council, whose jurisdiction extends over the French Antilles, and even to the settlements of that crown in the islands of St. Domingo and Tortuga. In a word, Martinico is the most populous and flourishing of all the French settlements across the Atlantic. Its towns and harbours are strongly fortified; the country itself is rendered extremely difficult of access by woods, rivers, rocks, and ravines; defended by a body of regular troops, besides a disciplined militia consisting of 10,000 white natives, and four times that number of negroes, whom they can arm in cases of emergency. The acquisition of Martinico would, in case of a peace, furnish us with a place of the utmost importance, either to retain or to exchange; and, if Spain was unchangeably determined on a war, it would put us on a respectable footing in that part of the world where the Spaniards are most vulnerable,

nerable, and where, every wound affecting the vitals of the A. D. state, they feel with quickest sensibility. 1762.

The plan for prosecuting this important conquest had been laid down by Mr. Pitt; the preparations had been made, the officers appointed, and every necessary order given for carrying the whole design into execution. Upon a change of administration the project was not abandoned. As every thing, which had been the object of war in North America was by this time completely acquired, it was easy to draw a considerable part of the army from that quarter. A draught of eleven battalions was ordered from New York, and also to assemble the different bodies of troops that were scattered among the Leeward islands. Rear-admiral Rodney sailed from England in October, and took on board his transports four battalions at Belleisle. The general rendezvous was in the island of Barbadoes, where the united armaments from England and North America amounting to eighteen battalions and as many ships of the line, besides frigates, bombs, and fire-ships, arrived in the month of December. The land-forces alone fell little short of 12,000 men, and, taking the military and naval together, it was such an armament as had never before been seen in that part of the world. The fleet proceeded from Barbadoes the fifth day of January, and on the eighth anchored in St. Anne's bay on the eastern coast of Martinico, after the ships had silenced some batteries which the enemy had erected on that part of the island. In the course of this service, the *Raisonable*, a ship of the line, was, by the ignorance of the pilot, run upon a reef of rocks, from which she could not be disengaged; but the crew were saved as well as the stores and artillery. General Monkton, who commanded the land-forces, judged this an improper place for a disembarkation, and therefore detached the brigadiers Haviland and Grant under a strong convoy to the bay of Petite Anse, where a battery was cannonaded and taken by the seamen and marines. The detachment then effected a landing, and marched to the ground opposite to Pigeon Island, which commands the harbour of Fort Royal; but, the roads being found impassable for artillery, general Monkton thought it improper to land the main body there, and proceeded to a creek called Cas Navires, where the whole forces were disembarked on the

A. D. 16th, without the loss of a man, the fleet having been stationed so properly, and directing their fire with such effect, that the enemy was obliged in a short time to abandon the batteries erected to defend this inlet.

When the landing was effected, the difficulties were far from being at an end. The inhabitants of Martinico seemed determined to defend the island to the last extremity. Every pass was guarded and fortified. The detachment which had first landed, were attacked in the night by a body of grenadiers, freebooters, negroes, and mulattoes; but these met with so warm a reception, that they were compelled, after sustaining considerable loss, to retire with precipitation.

The general determined to attack the town and citadel of Fort Royal although his march thither was incumbered with difficulties and dangers, there being many ravines and gullies, very deep, and difficult of access, well covered with batteries and redoubts, and defended by the slaves as well as natives in arms. Besides the difficulties of the approach, the town and citadel are overlooked, and commanded by two very considerable eminences called Morne Tortueson and Morne Garnier. Whilst the enemy kept possession of these, it was impossible to attack the town. They were protected like the other high grounds in this island by natural ravines, strengthened by every contrivance of art. The Morne Tortueson was first to be attacked. To favour this operation, a body of regular troops and marines were ordered to advance on the right, along the sea-side, towards the town, in order to take the redoubts, which lay in the lower grounds. A thousand sailors in flat-bottomed boats rowed close to the shore to assist them. On the left, towards the country, a corps of light infantry, properly supported, was to get round the enemy's left, whilst the attack in the centre was made by the British grenadiers, and the main body of the army, under the fire of batteries which had been erected on the opposite side with great labour and perseverance, the cannon having been dragged upwards of three miles by the seamen, across the enemy's line of fire, to which they exposed themselves with amazing indifference.

The attack, which was planned with so much judgment, was executed with equal spirit and resolution. The British troops succeeded



succeeded in every quarter. The enemy were successively driven A.D. 1762. from post to post; some fled into the town; others mounted to Morne Garnier; while the English standard was displayed at Morne Tortueson. But nothing decisive could be effected against the town until the French were driven from the former eminence. It was three days before proper dispositions could be made for this purpose. During this interval the enemy's whole force sallied out of the town, or descended from the hill, and attacked the English in their advanced posts. But they were repelled with singular bravery; and, the ardour of the British troops hurrying them forward, they improved a defensive advantage into an attack, passed the ravines, mingled with the enemy, scaled the hill, seized the batteries, and posted themselves on the summit of Morne Garnier.

All the situations which commanded the town and citadel were now secured, and the English in the morning of the 28th, began to play their artillery; which the governor no sooner observed than he ordered the chamade to be beat, and surrendered the place by capitulation. On the 4th of February the gates were delivered up to the English, and next morning the garrison, to the number of 800, marched out with the honours of war. On the 7th Pigeon Island, which was strongly fortified, and counted one of the best defences of the harbour, surrendered at the first summons, and obtained a capitulation similar to that of the citadel. Deputations were sent from different quarters of the island by the inhabitants, desiring the same terms. But the governor-general, Mr. de la Touche, retired with his forces to St. Pierre the capital, which he meant to defend with uncommon vigour. It is probable, however, that when he arrived there, his opinion was altered by the advice of the inhabitants. They saw the English masters of all the rest of the island; they reflected on the favourable capitulation which the island of Guadeloupe had obtained, and the good faith with which the terms of this capitulation had been observed. Although they changed masters, they changed neither laws nor religion; their property was more secure than under the ancient government, their commerce more free and unrestrained, and they were furnished with all necessaries from the dominions of Great Britain; whereas formerly they depended for subsistence upon the most precarious

A. D. and hazardous methods of supply. These considerations had  
 1762. great weight with the inhabitants of St. Pierre, who persuaded the governor to send two deputies with proposals of capitulation. On the 14th the terms were settled, and the agreement signed. On the 16th the English commander took possession of St. Pierre, and all the posts in that neighbourhood, while the governor-general, the lieutenant-governor, the staff-officers, and about 320 grenadiers were embarked in transports to be conveyed to France. These signal successes were obtained at the small expence of 400 men, including a few officers killed and wounded in the different attacks. Fourteen French privateers were found in the harbour of Port Royal, and a much greater number, from other parts of the island, were delivered up to admiral Rodney, in consequence of the capitulation with the inhabitants, who in all other respects were very favourably treated\*.

The surrender of Martinico, which was the seat of government, the principal mart of trade, and the centre of all the French force in the Caribbees, naturally drew on the surrender of all the dependent islands. While general Monkton was regulating the capitulation of St. Pierre, commodore Swanton sailed with a small squadron to the fertile island of Granada, which was given up without opposition. St. Lucia and St. Vincent, the right to which had so long been disputed between the two nations, followed its example. By these acquisitions, the English colonies at Antigua, St. Christopher's, and Nevis, as well as the ships trading to these islands, were secured against the hostilities of the enemy; the commerce of Great Britain acquired an annual addition to the amount of at least a million sterling, and the British nation became undisturbed possessors of that chain of innumerable islands, which forms an immense bow, extending from the eastern point of Hispaniola almost to the continent of South America.

The consequences of this important conquest were still more important than the conquest itself. It opened a way for humbling effectually the pride of Spain. In the course of a few months, more decisive strokes were struck against that haughty monarchy than during ten years of the former Spanish war. In

\* See Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. 14.

that war Great Britain acquired wealth and honour ; but in this A. D. she displayed such a scene of national glory as Europe had never <sup>1762</sup> before beheld. As these events, however, did not immediately follow upon the reduction of Martinico, it is proper here to pause, and to contemplate the effects of that formidable alliance concluded in the 1761, among the different members of the house of Bourbon.

The kings of France and Spain imagined they had acquired such an ascendant over all their neighbours by forming this league, that they might henceforth neglect with impunity the observance of those rules which the most ambitious and despotic princes commonly prescribe to themselves in the execution of their boldest designs. This evidently appeared in their conduct towards Portugal, the ancient and natural ally of Great Britain. Portugal possessed gold without possessing industry or ingenuity. England furnished the Portuguese with all the conveniencies of life, and received specie in return. The balance of trade was supposed to bring annually into Great Britain about a million sterling. This commercial connection was strengthened by the strongest political ties. The two kingdoms were so situated, that they had little to fear from one another, while they might mutually impart many reciprocal advantages. The harbours of Portugal afforded protection as well as supplies to the English fleet, while the English fleet defended the lucrative commerce of the Portuguese with their American colonies. The natural and inveterate antipathy between Spain and Portugal made it necessary for the latter to look out for some powerful distant ally. None is so advantageous in that view as England, which in her turn might derive great advantages from Portugal, in prosecuting a war against any of the southern powers of Europe.

The united monarchs, unwilling to trust the issue of the war to hostilities committed against England on her own element, determined to wound her through the sides of this ally. They were strongly invited to this measure by the present unhappy circumstances of Portugal. That kingdom was altogether unprovided in the means of defence. The military spirit, by which the Portuguese had formerly distinguished themselves, was totally extinct. The nobles were overwhelmed in ignorance, bigotry, and oppression spiritual as well as temporal. There

A. D. was neither skill, discipline, nor order among the troops, nor 1762. indeed any appearance of a regular army, and the frontier places were ill fortified, worse garrisoned, and almost entirely destitute of ammunition and artillery. In this condition Portugal received a fatal blow from an earthquake in 1756. The weakhy and flourishing city of Lisbon was levelled with the ground, near 30,000 of the inhabitants were buried in her ruins, and those who remained with the court itself were reduced to the utmost distress and misery. As if this earthquake, which had overturned their capital, had also shaken and distracted the frame of their government, and the temper of their minds, the most dreadful distempers broke out in the state. A series of horrid crimes and cruel punishments succeeded to this national calamity. Two of the most noble and wealthy families of Portugal, having engaged themselves in a sacrilegious attempt on the life of their sovereign, were cut off at once with little distinction of age or sex, by a bloody and dreadful exertion of justice. Many others, who were accused or suspected, suffered death, or exile, or imprisonment. Among these, and partly from the same causes, one of the most considerable religious orders for wealth, influence, and policy, was stripped of its possessions, and entirely driven out of the country.

This being the unfortunate situation of Portugal, the house of Bourbon hoped that kingdom would be an easy conquest, notwithstanding all the succours it could possibly receive; which would not only be a great loss to the commerce of Great Britain, and a considerable inconvenience to her in carrying on the war, but would afford a valuable deposit, to be exchanged at the peace, for the farther acquisitions England might make at the expence of France or Spain. Full of these ideas, his Catholic majesty gave orders for providing magazines and artillery, and for strengthening his fortified places on the side of Portugal. The Spanish army, supplied with able engineers from France, overspread the Portuguese frontiers; the commerce of corn between the two kingdoms was prohibited, and every thing threatened a sudden invasion. In the midst of these hostile preparations the French and Spanish ministers presented a joint memorial to the court of Lisbon, the purport of which was to persuade his most Faithful majesty to desert his ancient alliance, and

and to co-operate with the two crowns against Great Britain. A.D. 1762. The memorial insisted largely on the tyranny which Great Britain exerted upon all powers, especially the maritime; and upon Portugal among the rest; on the particular insult which had been offered to her jurisdiction by admiral Boscawen's attack on Mr. de la Clue's squadron in a Portuguese harbour. The memorial concluded with a declaration, that as soon as his most Faithful majesty had taken his resolution, which they doubted not would be favourable, that the king of Spain would march his troops into Portugal, in order to garrison the harbours and defend them against the hostile attempts of the English. An answer was required in four days, and any delay beyond that time was to be considered as a negative.

Such insolent proposals were never made to an independent kingdom. His Portuguese majesty answered in a moderate and humble strain, but with becoming firmness. He took notice of the misfortunes of his country, which prevented her from taking part in an offensive war; he offered his mediation between the contending parties; but was resolved at all events to preserve his faith to England inviolate; which ought not, he observed, to give the smallest offence, as his alliance with that crown was ancient and merely defensive. This answer drew on a reply, in which the ministers of the united kingdoms denied that the alliance between England and Portugal was purely defensive, and for this unheard-of reason, "that the defensive alliance was converted into an offensive one by the situation of the Portuguese dominions, and the nature of the English power. The English squadrons," said they, "cannot in all seasons keep the sea, nor cruise on the principal coasts for cutting off the French and Spanish navigation, without the ports and the assistance of Portugal; that these islanders could not insult all maritime Europe, if the whole riches of Portugal did not pass into their hands; which furnishes them with the means to make war, and renders the alliance between the two courts truly and properly offensive." They conclude most insultingly, "That the king of Portugal ought to be glad of the necessity which they laid upon him to make use of his reason, in order to take the road of his glory and of the common interest." The king replied with sufficient spirit; the

A. D. the two ministers took leave and retired the 27th of April; and 1762. immediately after, war was declared by France and Spain against Portugal.

The advantages which Portugal possessed in herself for balancing this powerful combination, consisted principally in the nature of the country, which is so extremely barren and uncultivated as to make it very difficult for any considerable army to subsist in it. The badness of the roads, and the frequency and steepness of the mountains, made it no less difficult to advance by rapid marches, and to improve the advantages of the campaign with proper expedition. Add to this, that towards the frontiers of Spain the only roads are narrow and difficult defiles, which may be maintained by a small body of forces against a very powerful invasion. But notwithstanding these circumstances, the whole hopes of Portugal centered in the assistance from England. The greater her own weakness, the more conspicuous were the magnanimity and resources of Great Britain, who, at the close of so expensive and ruinous a war, made such astonishing efforts in protecting her allies. She sent a squadron of ten ships of the line to Lisbon, besides frigates. With these she sent officers, troops, artillery, military stores, provisions and money; every thing that could enable the Portuguese to exert their natural strength, and every thing which could supply that strength where it was deficient.

The Spaniards could entertain no hopes of depriving the English of the use of the Portuguese ports by attacking them by sea; so that they reposed their whole confidence in the bravery and good fortune of their troops. It belongs not to our design to give a particular account of the military operations in this effeminate country, which could hardly furnish out a faint image of war. The inaccessible and difficult nature of the

† List of Sir Edward Hawke's Squadron which sailed from St. Helen's for Lisbon, June 25th.

Royal George,	—	100 guns.	Nassau,	—	64 guns.
Prince's Amelia,	—	80 —	Essex,	—	64 —
Prince,	—	90 —	Achilles,	—	60 —
Ocean,	—	90 —	Launceston,	—	40 —
Magnanime,	—	74 —	Æolus,	—	32 —
Prince of Orange,	—	70 —	Tamar,	—	28 —
Lancaster,	—	66 —			

country,

country, joined to the spirit and activity of the British troops, A. D. were sufficient to defend the Portuguese dominions with very 1762. feeble efforts on the part of the natives. After a campaign of above five months the Spaniards had got possession of no advanced posts in which they could maintain themselves during the winter. The heavy rains, which begin to fall in October, and the want of provisions for men and horse in an enemy's country, made them fall back to the frontiers of Spain, where every thing had been provided for them in great abundance.

Thus did the arms of Great Britain save Portugal, by undertaking to defend her cause within her own territories. The same power protected this useful ally not only against present but future dangers, by the operations carried on in remote parts of the earth, where the success of the British squadrons compelled the House of Bourbon to accept terms of accommodation, in which the interests of Portugal were not neglected.

While the English troops were employed in taking possession of Martinico and the dependent islands, a French fleet appeared to windward of the former, and sent an officer on shore to obtain information. They continued cruizing to windward for two days, and even approached within cannon-shot of Trinity, as if they had intended to make a descent; but afterwards they changed their course, and bore away for the harbours of Dominica. Admiral Rodney being informed of their arrival in those parts, got under sail with his squadron, and beat up to windward in quest of the enemy; they did not wait his approach, but made haste to take refuge in their own harbours. While Rodney's fleet commanded the Caribbees, Lord Colville's squadron was stationed at Halifax in Nova Scotia, in order to protect the coast of North America, and the new conquests in the gulf and river of St. Lawrence. Sir Charles Saunders was reinforced in such a manner as enabled him to give law in the Mediterranean, and either to prevent a junction of the French and Spanish fleets, or if that should be found impracticable, to give them battle when joined. For the defence of the British coast, and in order to answer the emergencies of war, a powerful squadron was kept in readiness at Spithead; another rode at anchor in the Downs, under the command of Admiral Moore; and from these two

A. D. were occasionally detached into the channel, and all round the 1762. island, a number of light cruizers, which acted with such vigilance and activity, that not a ship could venture from any of the French sea-ports without running the most imminent risk of being taken; and scarce a day passed in which some privateer of the enemy, either French or Spanish, was not brought into the harbours of Great Britain. Rear-admiral Cornish had the direction of the fleet in the East Indies, admiral Pocock who had acquired so much glory there, being called to a more dangerous and important command, the consequences of which we are now going to relate. The whole of these squadrons, combined with detached cruizers in different parts, amounted to more than 240 ships of war; a force which, considering the disciplined valour and naval experience of our seamen, was fit to contend against the maritime strength of the whole world united.

The rupture with Spain, which was rendered incurable by the invasion of Portugal, brought on the execution of a plan which had been long in agitation, upon the presumed probability of such an event. It is said that admiral Knowles was the first who laid before his royal highness the duke of Cumberland a scheme for the reduction of the island of Cuba, in which the whole trade and navigation of the Spanish West Indies centers, and without which it cannot be carried on. The duke approved of the plan, and recommended it to the ministry. But after they had considered the draughts and plan, which his royal highness put into their hands, lord Anson, the first lord of the admiralty, produced his own, which had been made out upon more accurate information; and after maturely considering both plans, lord Anson's was adopted. However, the duke of Cumberland had so much merit in this affair, that he was permitted to appoint his favourite lord Albemarle commander in chief of the land forces, and his brothers, major-general and commodore Keppel, to important commands in an expedition which, it was imagined, would be equally lucrative and honourable.

Nothing indeed could be so proper at this time as an attempt against the Spanish West Indies. The French were now expelled from every place in North America, except their settlement  
of



of Louisiana, which was deemed of little importance. They A. D. had lost their West India islands; so that hardly any thing re- 1762. mained to be done in that part of the world but an expedition against those of Spain. But it shewed great wisdom in the British administration, who determined on this measure, that they fixed their eyes at once on the capital object. The failure of an armament in a subordinate attempt is a bad preparative for a greater; as the former, even though successful, is far from being decisive. The plan of the war of 1740, in which we began with smaller attempts, and so proceeded to more considerable, was mean and ignoble, because the success in the first of those attempts did nothing to insure success in the second; nor were both together of any consequence in deciding the fortune of the war. But the plan now adopted was great and just; for by beginning with the Havannah we aspired at a conquest, which being obtained, would enable us to terminate the war with honour, as it entirely intercepted the enemy's resources; and if we chose to prosecute our advantage, the acquisition of the Havannah might put us in possession of the whole Spanish America.

The fleet destined to extend the British empire in the west, sailed from Portsmouth the 5th of March, under the command of admiral Pocock, whose valour and conduct had contributed so much towards that sovereignty which his country possessed in the East Indies. They sailed for the island of Hispaniola, where they were happily met at Cape Nicholas, the north-west point of the island, by a detachment from the fleet at the Caribbees, under the command of that gallant and able officer Sir James Douglas. The junction happened on the 27th of May; and the united squadrons consisted of 19 sail of the line, 18 smaller ships of war, and about 150 transports, having on board above 10,000 land-forces and marines. A supply of 4000 men had been ordered from New York, which, it was supposed, would arrive time enough to bear part in their military operations.

There were two choices before the admiral for his course to the Havannah. The first and most obvious was the common way to keep to the south of Cuba, and fall into the tract of the galleons. But this, though by much the safest, would prove

A. D. by far the most tedious passage; and delays, above all things, 1762. were dangerous, as the fleet had been so late in sailing from England, that it would be extremely difficult to arrive before the hurricane season, which would put an end to all naval and military operations. He therefore resolved to run along the northern shore of the island of Cuba, pursuing his course from east to west, through a narrow passage not less than 700 miles in length, called the Old Straits of Bahama. This passage, through almost the whole of its extent, is bounded, on the right and left, by the most dangerous sands and shoals, which has caused the navigation to be avoided by single and small vessels. There was no pilot in the fleet whose experience could be depended on to conduct them safely through it. The admiral, however, being provided with a good chart of lord Anson's, resolved to trust to his own vigilance and sagacity to carry through those straits a fleet of near 200 sail. So bold an attempt had never been before made; but the success of the expedition depending entirely on dispatch, made it prudent to hazard it. At the same time no precaution was omitted, which could remove the imputation of temerity. A vessel was sent to reconnoitre the passage, and make soundings; some frigates followed: sloops and boats were stationed on the right and left, on the shallows, with well-adapted signals both for the day and the night. The fleet moved in seven divisions, and being favoured with a fair wind and good weather, got through this perilous passage on the 5th of June without accident or interruption,

Two days before the accomplishment of this hazardous navigation, the Echo and Alarm frigates, which had been ordered a-head of the fleet, descried four vessels which proved to be the Thetis, a Spanish frigate of 18 guns and 65 men, and the Phoenix of 22 guns, and 175 men, and two brigs, bound to Suga in the Straits, for a cargo of timber for the use of the ships at the Havannah. The English frigates gave them chase, and obliged them to strike in three quarters of an hour. This, though a small success, was an auspicious beginning of the expedition against the Havannah. This place, the object of their long voyage and of so many anxious hopes and fears, was now before them.

them. Though St. Jago, situated on the south-east side of the A. D. island be denominated the capital of Cuba, yet the Havannah is <sup>1762,</sup> superior to it in wealth, size, and importance. The harbour upon which it stands is, in every respect, one of the best in the world. It is entered by a narrow passage, upwards of half a mile in length, which afterwards expands into a large basin, sufficient to contain 1000 sail of the largest ships, having almost throughout six fathoms water, and perfectly secured from every wind. In this bay the rich fleets from the several parts of the Spanish West Indies assemble, in order to set out together on their voyage to Europe, Great care had been taken to fortify a place which, besides being extremely populous, wealthy, and flourishing in itself, is the centre of the richest commerce of the world. The entrance into the harbour is secured on one side by the Moro fort, built upon a projecting point of land, all of solid mason-work, having a ditch 70 feet deep from the edge of the counterescarp, and more than 40 feet of that depth sunk in the rock: on the other it is defended by a fort called the Puntal, which joins the town. The Havannah itself, which is situated to the west of the harbour, and opposite to the Moro fort, is surrounded by a good rampart, flanked with bastions, and strengthened by a ditch.

The Spaniards, sensible that, upon a rupture with Great Britain, their West Indies were the fairest mark for the attack of the enemy, maintained a powerful fleet in those parts, and had actually a considerable squadron of ships of the line in the harbour of the Havannah<sup>s</sup>. But so little confidence did they repose in their shipping for resisting the efforts of the English armament, that the only use which they made of it was to sink three of their largest vessels behind an immense boom which they had thrown across the mouth of the harbour. Their chief

<sup>s</sup> List of Spanish ships at the Havannah:

Tiger,	—	70 guns.	Asia,	—	64 guns.
Reyna,	—	70 —	America,	—	60 —
Soverano,	—	70 —	Europa,	—	60 —
Infante,	—	70 —	Conquistador,	—	60 —
Neptune,	—	70 —	San Genaro,	—	60 —
Aquilon,	—	70 —	San Antonio,	—	60 —

hope

A. D. hope was in the strength of the place, and the difficulties attending all military operations which are drawn out to any considerable length in this unhealthy climate. These circumstances encouraged don Juan de Prado, governor of the Havannah, to determine on a vigorous defence. He was assisted by the activity of the marquis del Real, commodore of the fleet, and by the counsels and experience of the viceroy of Peru, and the governor of Carthagena, who happened to be then in the place, on their way to their respective governments.

On the 7th of June all things were in readiness for landing; and, in order to effect this with the least inconvenience, the admiral, with the greatest part of the fleet, bore away to the westward, that the enemy's attention might be drawn towards this quarter, while the earl of Albemarle and the whole army were landed under the direction of commodore Keppel, between the rivers Bocanao and Coxemar, about six miles to the eastward of the Moro-castle. A body of Spaniards appeared on the shore; but, some sloops being ordered to scour the beach and the woods with their cannon, the troops passed the river Coxemar in great order, without the smallest opposition. The first attempt was to drive the enemy from a small redoubt on the top of the hill Cavannos which overlooked the Moro. This was effected on the 10th, and at the same time three bomb-ketches, being anchored on shore, began to throw shells into the town, under cover of the ships Stirling-castle and Echo.

The principal body of the army, destined to act against the Moro, was divided into two corps, one of which, commanded by general Elliot, advanced a considerable way into the country, towards the south-east of the harbour in order to cover the siege, and to secure the parties employed in watering and procuring provisions. The other, conducted by general Keppel, was immediately employed in the attack on the fort, and a detachment headed by colonel Howe, was encamped to the westward of the town, partly with a view to cut off the communication between it and the country, and partly to make a diversion in favour of the grand operation.

The seamen having landed fascines, stores, and artillery with great expedition, the engineers, under the direction of Mr. Mackellar,

kellar, whose abilities were equally distinguished at Louisbourg A. D. and the Havannah, began to erect batteries of bombs and cannon, 1762. while a body of pioneers were employed in cutting parallels, and forming a line with fascines to secure the troops from the fire of the enemy. The hardships sustained in this service are almost inexpressible. The thinness of the earth made it extremely difficult to cover the approaches. It was necessary to cut roads for communication through thick woods. The artillery was to be dragged a great way over a rough rocky shore. During this fatigue the supplies of provision were not plentiful, and water was to be brought from a great distance. Many men dropped down dead with heat, thirst, and fatigue. But the spirit and ardour of the troops, the unanimity and conduct of the commanders by sea and land, overcame every difficulty. On the 29th, 2000 chosen Spaniards, with a numerous body of negroes and mulattoes landed in two divisions, to the right and left of the Moro, with an intention to destroy the works of the besiegers. They were repulsed by the piquets and advanced posts with great bravery, and compelled to retreat in confusion, leaving behind them 200 of their number killed or taken.

The cannonading began, on the 1st of July, from two batteries bearing twelve cannon, six large mortars, three small ones, and twenty-six royals. The enemy had seventeen pieces of artillery on the front attacked. The fire was for a considerable time pretty near on an equality, and kept up with great vivacity on both sides. At length that of the enemy began to fail. Their attention was divided in consequence of an attack made upon the north-east face by three ships of the line, the Cambridge, Dragon, and Marlborough, commanded by the captains Goostrey, Hervey, and Barnet. These ships, having laid their broadsides against the fort, kept up one of the warmest firings ever seen, for seven hours, without intermission. But the Moro, situated upon a high hill, had great advantages, and the fire from the opposite fort of Puntal galled them exceedingly. They were obliged to retire in a very shattered condition, after losing above 100 men, among whom was captain Goostrey of the Marlborough, a brave and experienced officer.

When

A.D. 1762. When the Spaniards were released from the fire of the ships, they redoubled their activity against the batteries, and on both sides a constant unremitted fire was kept up for several days. During this sharp and doubtful contention the merlons of the grand battery unfortunately took fire on the 3d of July. The flames became too powerful for opposition, and the labour of 600 men, for seventeen days, was destroyed in a few hours. This stroke was felt the more severely, because the other hardships of the siege were become scarcely supportable. Sicknests had reduced the army to almost half its number. Three thousand seamen were at one time unfit for service, and near double that number of soldiers. The scarcity of water, and the total want of wholesome provisions, exasperated the disease. The army was ready to perish by these calamities; and, if the hurricane season came on before the place were reduced, the destruction of the fleet was inevitable.

The unconquered spirit of the commanders could hardly maintain the languishing activity of the troops, when Sir James Douglas who had parted from the admiral, in order to steer his course for Jamaica, arrived with the fleet from that island, carrying many conveniencies for the siege. This favourable circumstance with the hopes of a considerable reinforcement from New York, which arrived a few days afterwards, restored the vigour of the men, and roused them to every effort. New batteries arose in the place of the old, the fire of which soon became equal, and afterwards superior to that of the enemy; the cannon of the fort was silenced, the upper works demolished, and a lodgement at length made in the covered way. Notwithstanding this advantage, the immense ditch cut in the solid rock formed an obstacle that was very difficult to surmount. To fill it up was impossible, and the work of mining would have been impracticable, if fortunately a thin ridge of rock had not been left to cover the extremity of the ditch, which would otherwise have been open to the sea. On this narrow ridge the miners passed wholly uncovered, and with very little loss made a lodgement at the foot of the wall. While they formed a mine for throwing the counter-scarp into the ditch, another sap was carried on along the glacis. In the night of the 21st a serjeant and twelve men scaled

led the wall by surprize; but, the garrison being alarmed before A. D. any additional troops could sustain them, they were obliged to 1762. retreat.

The governor of the Moro now plainly saw, that the place must be speedily reduced, unless some bold measure were tried for its immediate relief. Accordingly, next day at four in the morning, he ordered a sally to be made from the town by 1500 men, composed chiefly of the country militia and negroes, divided into three detachments, who attacked the besiegers in as many different places. Meanwhile a warm fire was kept up from the fort of Puntal, and the shipping in the harbour. But the English guards, though surprized, defended themselves with great resolution, the posts attacked were speedily reinforced, and the enemy were driven precipitately down the hill, without being able to destroy any part of our approaches. The English lost fifty men killed or wounded, and the Spaniards had 400 killed or taken prisoners.

On the 30th of the month, about two in the morning, a floating battery was towed into the harbour, and fired with grape-shot and small arms into the ditch, though without any great interruption to the miners; and the close fire of the covering party soon compelled the enemy to retire. This was the last effort for the relief of the Moro: for on that day the mines did their work. A part of the wall was blown up, and fell into the ditch, leaving a breach which, though very narrow and difficult, the engineer judged practicable. Orders were immediately given for the assault. Lieutenant-colonel Stuart commanded the attack. The troops hoping to see an end of all their hardships, entered on this most dangerous service with the greatest resolution. The enemy who were drawn up to receive them, when they had passed the breach, were terrified at the determined valour which appeared in their countenances, and fled on all sides. In vain don Lewis de Velasco the governor, whose bravery and conduct had excited during the whole siege the admiration of his enemies, endeavoured, with romantic courage, to defend the colours of Spain. He fell, as well as his second the marquis Gonsales, while attempting to no purpose to rally his troops. About 400 of the garrison laid down their arms, and were

A. D. made prisoners: as many were slaughtered on the spot; others  
 1762. ran to the boats, and were drowned in attempting to escape to the town.

The Moro-fort thus came into the possession of the English after a vigorous struggle of 40 days from the commencement of the operations against it. This advantage was not immediately followed by the surrender of the Havannah. The governor seemed still determined to defend that place, the fire of which was immediately turned against the fortress which had been lost, while a ship of the line was sent down into the harbour, in order to batter it with more effect. Meanwhile lord Albemarle ordered a line of batteries to be erected along the hill of the Cevannos, which commanded almost the whole eastern side of the city. Batteries were likewise erected on the western side of the town, which had hitherto been only guarded. When these preparations were perfectly ready to take effect, his lordship, by message, represented to the governor the irresistible force of the attack which he was ready to make on the place, but which, in order to prevent unnecessary effusion of blood, he was willing to suspend, that the Spaniards might have time to capitulate. This representation was made on the 10th of August, but to no purpose, the governor returning for answer, that he was determined to defend the place, committed to him, to the last extremity. Next morning at day-break, forty-five cannon and eight mortars, erected on the batteries at Cevannos, began to play against the town and the Puntal with such continued and irresistible fury, that this fortress was silenced before ten. In another hour the north bastion was almost disabled. About two in the afternoon white flags were displayed from every quarter of the town, and in a little time after a flag of truce arrived at the head quarters with proposals of capitulation. The established religion and the ancient laws were to be preserved, and private property was secured to the inhabitants. The garrison, which was reduced to 700 men, were to have the honours of war, and to be conveyed to Old Spain, together with the Spanith commodore, the governor of the Havannah, the viceroy of Peru, and the governor of Carthagena. The Spaniards struggled hard to save twelve ships of the line which lay in the harbour;



hour; but this was a capital point, and wholly inadmissible. A. D. 1762. They likewise made powerful attempts to have the harbour declared neutral during the war; but this would have destroyed, in a great measure, the importance of the conquest. It was debated for two days, when hostilities were on the point of being renewed; which made the enemy recede from their demand; and the English took possession of the place the 14th of August<sup>a</sup>.

The acquisition of the Havannah united in itself all the advantages that can be obtained in war. The enemy lost a whole fleet; they were deprived of a wealthy establishment commanding a rich and extensive territory; and they ceded a port which commanded the only passage by which their ships could conveniently sail from the bay of Mexico to Europe. While this port is in the hands of an enemy, who are masters at sea, the court of Madrid can receive no supplies of treasure from the West Indies, except by beating up to windward from Carthagena, which would expose them to infinite trouble as well as danger from the English squadrons, or by surrounding Cape Horn, or passing through the Straits of Magellan from the South Sea, a voyage of intolerable length, and subject to equal inconveniences. The reduction of the Havannah, while it distressed the enemy in the most essential manner by stopping the sources of their wealth, opened an easy avenue to the conquerors for reaching their American treasures. In no former war had Great Britain acquired such immense sums at the expence of her enemies. Her success in the East Indies is said to have brought into England near six millions since the commencement of hostilities; and, in the conquest now made, she obtained, besides an immense quantity of artillery, small arms, ammunition, and warlike stores, about three millions sterling in silver, tobacco, and valuable merchandize, collected, on account of the king of Spain, in the magazines of the Havannah. In this calculation of national profit we must not omit the capture of the *Hermioné*, a register ship, the value of which fell little short of a million sterling. If it had not been for these extraordinary pecuniary supplies, with which the war was attended, it would have been difficult to

<sup>a</sup> See Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. 12.

A. D. carry it on to such an amazing extent. The money which was  
 1762. brought into the kingdom invigorated commerce, and urged the  
 hand of industry. The remittances for foreign subsidies were in  
 a great measure paid by bills on merchants settled abroad, who  
 had received the value of these draughts in the produce of British  
 manufactures. The trade of England increased gradually  
 every year, and such a scene of national prosperity, during the  
 course of a long, expensive, and bloody war, was never exhibited  
 by any people in the world.

In the expedition against the Havannah, the spirit, unanimity,  
 and perseverance of the army and navy were eminently conspicuous.  
 Never indeed was there a period of such cordial co-operation between  
 the land and sea forces, or such a punctual attention to orders. One  
 captain only, of the name of Campbell, having neglected to perform  
 his duty in leading the squadron which attacked the More, was obliged  
 to quit the service.

As it is our plan to give an account of the more important  
 enterprizes, which succeeded through the co-operation of the navy,  
 before we proceed to relate the exploits purely naval, which distinguished  
 the year 1762, we must now carry the reader's attention to the expedition  
 against the Philippine islands, which is one of the best conducted,  
 most splendid, and most important of all the successes which adorn  
 the annals of this glorious war. The design of this expedition, which,  
 if successful, would give as severe a wound to the interests of Spain  
 in the East Indies, as she had received, by the taking of the Havannah,  
 on the side of America, was suggested by the following accident.  
 After the memorable defence of Madras in 1759, colonel Draper's  
 bad state of health obliged him to leave that country. He embarked  
 in company with the honourable captain Howe, then commander of  
 the *Winchelsea*, for Canton in China, a place with which the  
 inhabitants of the Philippines carry on a considerable traffic. Here  
 the colonel employed himself in acquiring a minute knowledge of  
 the present state of the Spaniards in these islands, and discovered  
 that, confiding in their remote distance from Europe, they were  
 persuaded, that no attempt against them would ever be deemed  
 practicable. This had lulled them into such a perfect

fect security, that they had totally neglected the keeping up of A. D.  
a regular military force for their own defence. 1762

Colonel Draper communicated his ideas on this subject to Lord Anson and Lord Egremont, upon the first rumours of a war with Spain. His information met with that attention which it deserved. He was desired to give a memorial in writing, explaining his plan at full length, and assured, that, if a Spanish war became unavoidable, the undertaking should be recommended to his majesty.

The motives to the execution of this enterprize were many and powerful. The Philippines or Manillas form a principal division of that immense Indian Archipelago, which consists of above 1200 islands, extending from the nineteenth degree of north latitude, almost in a continued chain, to the shores of New Guinea and the great southern continent. The Philippines, which form the northermost cluster of these islands, are, some of them, among the largest, and all of them, naturally, among the richest islands in the world. They were added to the Spanish monarchy, in its meridian glory, under Philip II. and, being happily situated for commerce, they were used as the centre of communication for the Asiatic and American trade. They may receive European goods by the way of the Cape of Good Hope, and connecting the traffic of China, Japan, and the Spice islands with that of Europe and America, unite all the extensive dominions of Spain in one commercial chain with the richest countries upon earth.

The principal island of the Philippines is called Manilla or Luconia, extending 300 miles in length, and 90, at a medium, in breadth. The soil is cultivated by the natives with uncommon industry for this part of the world; the Chinese, who, after the Tartar conquest in the last century, fled here in great numbers, are the artizans, and the Spaniards enjoy the government, and best part of the commerce. The rest of the Philippine islands, as far as the Spanish power prevails in them, are under the government of Luconia, the capital of which is Manilla, situated on the south-east of the island, and lying upon a very fair and spacious harbour. Here the large vessels or galleons annually arrive, and from this place they sail for Aca-  
pulco

A. D. pulco in America, loaded with money or goods to the value of 1762. near a million sterling. In the war of 1739, the taking one of these galleons was considered as the most brilliant success which attended the British squadrons. But now they were to aim at an higher object; not at a particular cargo, but at the principal mart of commerce which supplied this cargo; and which, when put in our possession, would enable us to destroy the intercourse of any other European state with the empires of China and Japan, while it procured the highest respect for the British flag all over those wealthy and extensive regions:

The grandeur of this design was sufficient to rouse the most vigorous efforts of administration. But the additional weight of Spain, in the scale of the enemies of Great Britain, required all the exertions of her strength nearer home. It was impossible, therefore, to spare ships or troops for undertaking a conquest so distant and precarious, however advantageous and splendid. But, fortunately, the preceding events of this glorious war naturally paved the way for those which were to follow. The success of one expedition not only suggested the idea but facilitated the execution of another. By the fortune of our arms in the east, we were become arbiters of the great peninsula of India; the French were expelled; the Dutch humbled; and there was nothing in those parts to resist the British force, or even to afford employment to all the troops that were kept on foot. Nothing, therefore, was demanded from Great Britain, but a light frigate to carry colonel Draper to Madras, where alone suitable preparations might be made for this important enterprise. He arrived there the latter end of June, 1762, and was appointed brigadier-general and commander in chief of the land-forces to be employed in the expedition. The squadron commanded by vice-admiral Cornish, a brave and able officer, consisted of several ships of the line<sup>1</sup>, besides frigates. The troops allotted for this expedition consisted of one regiment

<sup>1</sup> These were the Norfolk, Panther, America, Seaford frigate, Ellisabeth, Grafton, Argo frigate, Lenox, Weymouth, Seaborse frigate. The Falmouth was left at the request of the president and council of Madras, to convoy the Essex Indiaman which had on board the treasure for the China cargoes; but she arrived time enough to have her share in the expedition.

with a company of the royal artillery, reinforced with 600 sepoys, A. D. one company of Caffres, one of Topazes, one of pioneers, with 1762. several hundreds of unarmed Lascars, for the use of the engineers and the park of artillery. The admiral supplied a fine battalion of 550 seamen, and 270 marines. The whole force amounted to no more than 2300 effective men; an inconsiderable number, but of tried valour, inured to toil and hardship, and rendered equal by their disciplined bravery to the strength of a great army. The 79th regiment, which was the only regular body of troops employed on this service, had been the first who checked the progress of the French in India; their valour had given the happy turn to the war under colonel Coote; they were inured to the climate, and accustomed to victory; and their arms were worthy to extend the glory of Great Britain to the remotest verge of Asia.

The enterprize was no sooner resolved upon, than the admiral detached captain Grant of the Seahorse to the entrance of the Chinese sea, with instructions to intercept all vessels bound for Manilla, that the enemy, who were even ignorant of the declaration of war, might receive no intelligence of any design formed against them. The success of the enterprize depended much on expedition, not only in order to prevent the enemy from being roused from their security, but in order to take advantage of the wind; for if the north-west Monsoon should set in with any violence before the fleet were well advanced on their voyage, the whole design would be defeated. Accordingly no time was lost. In the space of three weeks the troops were embodied and formed, and the stores got ready and shipped, notwithstanding a raging and perpetual surf, which in those climates is one of the greatest difficulties in any expedition, greatly embarrassing the embarkation, and rendering still more hazardous the debarkation of troops, especially in the face of an enemy.

The fleet sailed in two divisions the beginning of August, and on the 19th arrived at Malacca; a place formerly considered as the key of the Indian commerce, and still the centre of a very considerable trade. The Dutch, to whom it now belonged, although they looked with no very favourable eye on the progress of

of

A. D. of the English in those eastern regions, were afraid to discover  
 1762. any symptom of jealousy. The English fleet used Malacca as a port of their own, and supplied themselves not only with refreshments, but with every necessary not already provided for the siege of Manilla. In 39 days from Malacca they came in sight of Luconia; the weather having in general proved favourable, although the squadron was once separated in a storm.

The next in command to the vice-admiral was commodore Tiddeman; and the battalion of seamen and marines was under the captains Collins, Pitchford, and Ourry, who behaved during the whole service with equal gallantry and conduct. The officers subordinate to brigadier-general Draper were the lieutenant-colonels Monson and Scott, major Barker who commanded the artillery, and major Moore. Mr. Drake, and some other gentlemen in the East India company's service, were appointed to take care of the interests of their constituents, according to a convention made with the president and council of Madras, by which the East India company were to have a third part of the booty or ransom, and to be invested with the government of the conquered country. The land and sea forces agreed by common consent to participate in the distribution of their several captures, according to the rules established in the navy. The character of the commanders, as well as these wise precautions, prevented the least disagreement from arising between the army and marine, either in the conduct of the enterprise, or in the division of the fruits of their success.

The admiral having sounded the coast, discovered a convenient place for landing the troops, about two miles to the southward of Manilla. On the 24th of September, the proper dispositions being made, and the three frigates *Argo*, *Seahorse*, and *Seaford*, moored very near the shore, to cover the descent; three divisions of the forces were put on board the boats of the fleet, conducted by the captains Parker, Kempenfield, and Breton, and landed at the church and village of Malata. This was not performed without great difficulty, on account of violent surf, which dashed many of the boats to pieces. At the same time the enemy began to assemble in great numbers, both horse and infantry, to oppose the descent, but the captains  
 King,

King, Grant, and Peighin, who commanded the covering frigates, maintained such a warm fire of cannon to the right and left that they soon dispersed, and the general disembarked his troops without the loss of a single man. The days which immediately succeeded their landing were spent in seizing the most advantageous posts, in securing the communication with the navy, and in reconnoitring the roads and approaches to the town. They found it defended by some good works, constructed in a regular manner, and garrisoned by about 800 Spanish troops. The English forces were too few to invest the place, so as to prevent it from being supplied with provisions from the country, or from receiving assistance from the natives, a fierce and daring people, who, though unacquainted with the use of fire-arms and the regular discipline of war, were like all the inhabitants of the Indian isles, extremely formidable on account of their martial spirit, native intrepidity, and contempt of death. The governor of the place was a churchman and archbishop, who styled himself captain-general of the Philippines; and, however ill qualified by his profession for the defence of a town, attacked, seemed well fitted for this task by his spirit and resolution.

The day after the troops landed the enemy abandoned a small fort called the Pulverista, which proved an excellent place of arms for covering the landing of the stores and artillery. Colonel Monson, with an advanced party of 200 men, occupied the church of the Hermita, about 900 yards from the city. The head quarters were fixed in the curate's house, and secured by the seventy-ninth regiment, as a post of the utmost importance, both from its strength, and the commodious cover it afforded from the rains which had deluged the country, and rendered it impossible to encamp. The marines were left at the Malata, in the neighbourhood of the Pulverista, to preserve the communication with the fleets, and guard the stores and artillery, which, on account of the surf, were not landed without great danger and fatigue. The battalion of seamen were stationed between the seventy-ninth regiment and the marines; and a body of men was advanced within 300 yards of the town, and possessed themselves of the church of St. Jago, which they

A. D. maintained, notwithstanding its being exposed to the fire of the 1762. enemy.

Before batteries could be erected, the enemy, on the 26th of September, attempted a sally with about 400 men. They were commanded by the chevalier de Fayette, and having two field-pieces, advanced to the right of the English advanced posts, and began to cannonade. But colonel Monson at the head of the piquets, reinforced by a small body of seamen, soon drove them back into the town. Their retreat was so precipitate that they left one of their field-pieces on the glacis.

It was imagined that the evidence of their inferiority in this slight encounter would be an inducement to the governor to endeavour at obtaining advantageous terms by an early surrender. A summons was sent to him for this purpose; to which he returned such an answer as showed we had nothing to expect but what we were able to command. Indeed, had the valour of the garrison corresponded to the spirited declaration of the governor, the town would have had nothing to apprehend from an enemy, whose numbers obliged them to confine their operations to one corner of the place, leaving two thirds of it open to all manner of supplies. The front, to which the attack was directed, was defended by the bastions of St. Diego and St. Andrew; a ravelin which covered the royal gate, a wet ditch, covered way and glacis. The bastions were in good order, mounted with a great number of fine brass cannon; but the ditch had never been completed, the covered way was out of repair, and the glacis was too low.

While the works were going forward with great rapidity, some straggling seamen were murdered by the savages, which induced the governor to send out a flag of truce to apologize for this barbarity, and at the same time to request the release of his nephew, who had been lately taken in the bay by the boats of the fleet. His demand was complied with, and lieutenant Fryar was sent under a flag of truce, to conduct the prisoner to town. At that time a detachment of the garrison, intermixed with a body of Indians, sallied out to attack one of the posts of the besiegers; when the savages ignorant of the law of nations, and disregarding the sacred character of an officer under a safe conduct,



conduct, assaulted Mr. Fryar with the most brutal fury, mang- A. D.  
ling his body in a most shocking manner, and mortally wound- 1762.  
ing the Spanish gentleman, who endeavoured to protect his con-  
ductor. In their attack they were soon repelled by the British  
party who defended the post; their savage cruelty had exasper-  
ated the troops, and whenever they fell into the hands of the  
English soldiers, they found no mercy.

Meanwhile the indefatigable vigour and unconquerable spirit  
of our soldiers and seamen had raised three batteries for cannon  
and mortars, which played on the town with considerable effect.  
The navy which had hitherto assisted no otherwise than in co-  
vering the landing, and in furnishing men and stores, began now  
to take a direct part in the siege. On the 29th the admiral or-  
dered the *Elisabeth* and the *Falmouth* to lie as near the town as  
the depth of water would allow, and to enfilade the enemy's  
front in order to second the operations of the army. Although  
the shallows kept them at too great a distance to have all the  
effect which could have been wished, their fire did not fail to  
produce great confusion and terror among the inhabitants, and  
to add very considerably to the fatigue of the garrison.

The operations of the besiegers were for some days retarded  
by an event which threatened to destroy at once all the effects  
of their industry and courage. During the first days of October  
a deluge of rain poured down, accompanied by a mighty storm of  
wind. The squadron was in the greatest danger, and all com-  
munication with it and the army entirely cut off. The *South-Sea*  
*Castle* store-ship, which had lately arrived, and contained the  
greatest part of the tools and necessaries for prosecuting the siege,  
was driven on shore. The governor, or archbishop of the place,  
added to the advantage of these appearances in his favour, by  
calling in the aid of his ecclesiastical character. He gave out,  
that the angel of the Lord was gone forth to destroy the Eng-  
lish, like the host of Sennacherib of old; and this miserable  
superstition did not fail to raise the spirits of a fearful and cow-  
ardly garrison.

The circumstances of this storm, by an extraordinary species  
of good fortune, became favourable to the besiegers. The  
*South-sea Castle*, by being driven on shore without any consi-

A. D. 1762. derable damage, gave an easy and ready access to all the stores and provisions which she contained. In the situation in which she lay on shore, her cannon became a protection to the rear of the English camp; and, by enfilading the whole beach to the southward, she kept in awe a body of Indians who threatened an attack on the Pulverista and the magazine of the besiegers at the Malata. At the same time the confidence which the enemy derived from the natural helps arising from the storm, and in the supernatural ones added by their superstition, rendered them more remiss and languid in their defence; while the roaring of the sea, occasioned by the great surf, prevented them from hearing the noise of the English workmen, who were busy in the night in completing the several batteries, in finishing a parallel and communication from these to the advanced post at the church, on the left of which they established a spacious place of arms. All this was accomplished on the 3d, and, the battery being opened against the left face of St. Diego's bastion, the fire was so well directed by the skill of major Barker, that in a few hours twelve pieces of cannon, mounted on the face of the bastion, were totally silenced, and the enemy obliged to retire. In less than two days all their other defences were greatly impaired.

The Spaniards, seeing their fortifications no longer tenable, projected a sally disposed in two attacks upon the two most important posts of the English. The first was to be made upon the cantonment of seamen, who were known to have had the most considerable part in the management of the artillery during the whole siege. The second was to be made on the church of St. Jago, which had been of so much consequence in protecting the besiegers in their approaches, and which covered a flank of the army.

In the middle of the night preceding the 4th of October, 1000 Indians marched out upon the first attack. They were much encouraged by the incessant rains, which they hoped had rendered the fire-arms useless; while their own arms, consisting only of bows and lances, could suffer nothing from such accidents. Their approach was favoured by a great number of thick bushes, growing on the side of a rivulet, through which they  
passed

passed in the night, without being perceived by the patrols. A. D. When they arrived at the quarter of the seamen, they began 1762. the work of destruction with a more than hostile fury. The English, though surprized, maintained their ground with steadiness, and repelled the mad rage of the savages with manly persevering courage. Prudently satisfied with this advantage, they remained firm in their posts till day-break, when two piquets of the seventy-ninth regiment arrived to their assistance. The Indians, notwithstanding the weakness of their armour, advanced in the most resolute manner to the attack, fought with incredible ferocity, when repulsed, returned with redoubled fury to the muzzles of the English muskets, and died like wild beasts gnawing their bayonets. At length, however, they were obliged to retreat before the disciplined valour of the English, having lost 300 men in this daring and unequal attack.

The bad success of the first attempt did not discourage those who were ordered on the second. This began just as the former had been defeated, and appeared at first more favourable to the hopes of the Spaniards. The Seapoys, who defended the church of St. Jago, were far from possessing the firmness of the English sailors, and, being dislodged without difficulty, retired in confusion from their post. The enemy, who consisted not only of Indians but of a strong detachment from the Spanish garrison, immediately seized the church, climbed to the top, and from thence poured down a violent fire on our people, who maintained themselves with patience and resolution, until a detachment with ten field-pieces came to their relief. Then the Spaniards were compelled to give way, leaving 70 of their number dead on the spot. Nor were we freed from these resolute attacks without considerable loss. This, with the former action, cost the besiegers above 40 men, including captain Strahan of the seventy-ninth regiment, and lieutenant Porter of the Norfolk, two gallant officers who fell universally regretted.

This was the last effort of the garrison in its own defence. The unruly spirit of the Indians, impatient of repulse, and discouraged by repeated defeats, led them to return home. The fire of the garrison grew faint, and all the outworks of the enemy were now in a ruinous condition. The operations of the besiegers,

**A. D.** siegers, on the other hand, were so well directed, and carried 1762. on with such vigour, that on the 5th the breach appeared practicable. It was expected, that the garrison would demand a capitulation, when no law of honour, because there was no prospect of success, required a farther defence. But the besiegers had to do with the fullen obstinacy of Spaniards, who neglected all opportunities of obtaining favourable terms, and without taking proper measures for defending the breach.

The English general, not finding any desire of capitulation in the enemy, prepared without delay, and with the most judicious arrangements for the storm. On the 6th at four in the morning, the troops destined for this service, filed off from their quarters in small bodies to avoid suspicion, and gradually assembling at the church of St. Jago, concealed themselves in the place of arms, and on the parallel between the church and the battery. Meanwhile major Barker maintained a close fire upon every part of the enemy's works, from which we might apprehend any molestation. At day-break a large body of Spaniards were seen formed on the bastion of St. Andrew, as if they had received intimation of the intended assault, and had resolved to annoy the assailants from the retired flanks of the bastion, where they had still two cannon fit for service. But the explosion of some shells thrown among them by the besiegers had so good an effect, that it made them disperse and retire in confusion.

The British troops took immediate advantage of this event, and directed by the signal of a general discharge from the artillery and mortars, rushed on to the assault under cover of a thick smoke which blew directly on the town. Lieutenant Russel, at the head of 60 volunteers from different corps, led the way. They were supported by the grenadiers of the seventy-ninth regiment. A body of pioneers, to clear the breach, and if necessary, to make lodgements, followed; a battalion of seamen advanced next, supported by two grand divisions of the seventy-ninth regiment; and the troops of the East India company formed the rear. Disposed in this excellent order, the assailants, to the number of 2000 men, mounted the breach with amazing spirit and activity. The Spaniards retired so suddenly that it was imagined they depended entirely on their mines. Captain Stevenson was ordered to examine the ground, which removed all apprehension

apprehension from this danger ; and the English troops penetrated into the town without meeting with any opposition until they came to the royal gate, where there was a guard-house defended by 100 Spaniards and Indians. Here major More was transfixed with an arrow, and about twenty of our men fell. The guard refused quarter, and were cut to pieces. In proceeding forward the troops were galled with shot from the galleries of lofty houses, surrounding the great square. But the Spanish soldiers every where gave way before them. Three hundred perished in endeavouring to escape by passing a deep and rapid river. The governor and principal magistrates imprudently retreated to the citadel, which was by no means a tenable post ; and as the English general had no offer of capitulation either on the part of the garrison or inhabitants, it was impossible to prevent some of the calamities which usually happen to cities taken by storm, from the cruel rapacious license of the common soldiers. Those who had retired into the citadel dreading to be exposed to equal sufferings, surrendered at discretion. The marquis of Villa Medina, with the rest of the Spanish officers, were admitted as prisoners of war on their parole of honour ; and all the Indians were dismissed in safety. At the same time admiral Cornish and general Draper, influenced by a generosity familiar to our commanders, though able to command every thing by force, admitted the inhabitants to a capitulation, by which they enjoyed their liberties, lives, properties, and the administration of their domestic government. In consequence of this agreement the town and port of Cavité, with the islands and forts depending upon Manilla, were surrendered to his Britannic majesty ; and four millions of dollars were promised as a ransom for saving the houses and effects of the inhabitants\*. The admiral took possession of several large ships, with a vast quantity of military and naval stores ; and the English found here every refreshment to recruit the men, and every necessary to refit the squadron. The East India company were intitled to one third of the ransom, and the conquest according to agreement was delivered up to Dawson Drake, Esq; and the other individuals appointed to receive them in behalf of that company.

\* As this ransom was never paid, commanders in future will do well to take hostages.

A. D. 1762. This important acquisition was rendered complete by another fortunate event. During the siege admiral Cornish received intelligence by the capture of an advice-ship, that the galleon from Acapulco was arrived at the straits which form the entrance into the Archipelago of the Philippines. This intelligence was not to be neglected, as so rich a prize would greatly enhance the value of the conquest, and not a little compensate the disadvantage of a repulse. Two ships of war, the Panther a ship of the line, captain Parker, and the Argo frigate, captain King, were immediately dispatched in quest of the galleon. After twenty-six days cruising they descried on the 30th of October, being off the island Capul, a sail standing northward. The Panther being driven by the current among the Narangor, was obliged to anchor; but the Argo coming up with the chace, engaged her for near two hours, during which the English frigate was roughly handled, and even obliged to desist, until his damage could be repaired. The current slackening, captain Parker was enabled to get under sail, and about nine next morning came up with the enemy, who after having been cannonaded near two hours at a very small distance, struck her colours. The English captain was not a little surprized to learn when the Spanish officers came on board, that instead of the Santa Philippina, which was expected from Acapulco, he had taken the Santissima Trinidad, which was bound for that port. This vessel had left Manilla the 1st of August, and had sailed 300 leagues to the eastward of the Embocadero; but meeting with a hard gale of wind, and being dismasted, was obliged to put back and refit. In the first engagement with the Argo this galleon mounted only six guns, though she was pierced for sixty. In her engagement with the Panther, she mounted but thirteen. The English captains had both been surprized to find so obstinate a resistance with so little activity of opposition. But their wonder ceased when they examined the galleon with attention. She was a huge vessel that lay like a mountain on the water, and her sides so excessively thick that the shot had made no impression upon any part, except her upper works. She had 800 men on board; and the value of her cargo was registered at one million and a half

half of dollars; that which was unregistered in order to be A. D. smuggled amounted to full as much; so that this capture was a <sup>1762</sup>valuable addition to the conquest, and a fresh wound to the enemy.

At no period of time had the Spanish monarchy suffered such mortifying disasters as in the course of this war, of which there was no conquest more advantageous in itself, or more honourably achieved than that of the Philippines. The British forces effected their landing before Manilla on the 24th of September; their battery of cannon was not completed until the 3d of October, and on the 6th they were masters of the city. In this short time, notwithstanding the tempestuous season of the year which prevented the communication between the land and sea forces, a territory was acquired consisting of fourteen considerable islands, which from their extent, fertility, and convenience of commerce, furnished the materials of a great kingdom. The conquest of the Havannah had in a great measure interrupted the communication between the wealthy American colonies of the Spaniards and Europe. The reduction of the Philippines now excluded them from Asia. The two together secured all the avenues of the Spanish trade, and cut off all intercourse between the parts of their vast but unconnected empire. Never indeed were any people more to be pitied than the Spaniards. They were plunged precipitately into a war against every principle of sound policy and caution, merely to gratify the private inclinations of their sovereign; in favour of the interests of his family, which stood in direct opposition to those of his people. Unfortunately for the happiness of mankind the former interests will always be preferred under the government of an absolute prince. Whatever conclusions, therefore, may be drawn, at any future period, in favour of the pacific intentions of the Spaniards from the national advantages that would result from a pacific conduct, ought not to have great weight on the councils or measures of Great Britain. We ought in this case to distrust appearances. The advantage, at least the supposed advantage of a king of Spain and of his subjects, are not always the same. The national advantage is most obvious to strangers, but that of the king will prevail in the cabinet; and Spain will undertake another

A. D. war against Great Britain, though more ruinous than the former, whenever the interests or honour of the house of Bourbon demand her assistance. We may be permitted another observation at this particular time\*. The success of the last war against Spain, than which none more brilliant is recorded in history, depended in a great measure on the rapidity with which all our measures were carried into execution. The garrison at the Havannah was in no state of defence; the inhabitants of Manilla were unacquainted with the declaration of war. The dominions of Spain from which she draws her principal resources, lying at an immense distance from the capital and one another, renders it more necessary for her than for any other power to temporize, until she can inspire with activity all the parts of her extensive but disjointed empire. For this reason Great Britain cannot be too much on her guard to watch the first symptom of approaching hostility. To take the advantage of the first stroke, without waiting for the formal declaration of war, may expose her to the censure of minute politicians; but to wait patiently till she herself receives it, will render her the scorn of her enemies.

The reduction of the Manillas will be handed down as a memorable event to the latest posterity. Another expedition, which was much celebrated at the time, and which adorned the lustre of the British arms in the course of this autumn, was the recovery of the island of St. John in Newfoundland. About the latter end of May, intelligence was received by the admiralty that a French squadron under the command of M. de Ternay had sailed from Brest under cover of a fog. The destination of this squadron being uncertain, Sir Edward Hawke, with the duke of York as rear-admiral, were immediately ordered from Spithead with seven ships of the line, and two frigates, in hopes that they might fall in with the enemy. They visited the coast of France; and after cruising for some time in the chops of the Channel for the protection of our trade, returned to Portsmouth not having seen M. de Ternay's fleet. It was descried, however, on the 11th of May, about fifty leagues to the north-

\* October, 1778.



ward of the Lizard by captain Rowley, who had sailed with A. D. three ships of war, the *Superbe* of 74 guns, the *Gosport* of 44, and the *Danaë* of 38, as convoy to a fleet of merchantmen bound to the East and West Indies, and the continent of America. Captain Rowley no sooner perceived them than he made a disposition for battle, though greatly inferior in strength. The French ships bore down upon him; when he hoisted British colours, and fired at the nearest, when she was within little more than random shot. The enemy immediately hoisted English colours, and tacked to the northward. He gave them chase till three in the afternoon when they were scarcely in sight; and having no hope of bringing them to action, he discontinued the pursuit, and rejoined his convoy.

The French squadron consisted of the *Robuste* of 74 guns, the *Eveille* of 64, the *Garonne* of 44, and the *Licorne* of 30, carrying 1500 soldiers under the command of the count d'Haussonville. They steered their course for Newfoundland, and on the 24th of June entered the bay of Bulls, where the troops were landed without opposition. Having taken possession of an inconsiderable English settlement in this bay, they steered for the town of St. John's, which being defended by no more than sixty-three men, surrendered upon capitulation. This little garrison were made prisoners of war, together with the officers and crew of his majesty's sloop the *Gramont*, which was in the harbour. The French likewise took several merchant vessels, destroyed the stages erected for curing cod, and every thing else belonging to the fishery. They afterwards began to repair the fortifications of the town, of which they had determined to keep possession.

When the news of this loss reached England, the antiministerial party employed it as a subject of reproach against the king's servants. Their abuse, though mean, illiberal, and vulgar, was not altogether ill-founded. Mr. Pitt's advice for guarding Newfoundland from any such attempt, had been neglected by the ministry, who, while on this occasion they represented the loss of a place cold, barren, and inhospitable, as of very little consequence, did not delay to prepare an armament for regaining the possession of it.

A. D. 1762. But their preparations for this purpose were rendered unnecessary by the vigilant celerity of lord Colville and Sir Jeffery Amherst, who commanded by sea and land in North America. The former, upon receiving advice of the progress of the French in Newfoundland, immediately sailed thither from Halifax, and blocked up the harbour of St. John's with one ship of the line and one frigate only, even while M. de Ternay lay at anchor in it, with a superior squadron. On the 11th day of September his lordship was joined by colonel Amherst, whom his brother Sir Jeffery had detached from New York, with orders to touch at Louisbourg, and take on board some troops, which, with those embarked at Halifax, amounted to about 800 men, chiefly Highlanders and light infantry. The light infantry landed, after a short resistance, at Torbay, about seven miles to the northward of St. John's, it not being possible to land at Kitty-vitty, where the enemy had stopped up the narrow entrance, by sinking shallops in the channel. The French had continued to annoy the boats, as the troops landed; until the light infantry obliged the enemy to retreat. The French afterwards took to the woods, through which the British had to march for four miles. They wounded several of our men with their bush fire, which was very troublesome till captain McDonald's company of light infantry rushed in upon them, took some prisoners, and dispersed the rest. The British forces advanced to the strong post of Kitty-vitty which they took sword in hand. This advantage secured their communication with the ships for landing the stores and artillery. The enemy posted on a hill on the other side of the river fired upon our men; but a detachment was sent to drive them from this eminence from which they retreated in precipitation, leaving several prisoners behind. The French were still in possession of two very high and steep hills, the one in the neighbourhood of our advanced posts, and the other in the neighbourhood of St. John's, and commanding all the intermediate space. It was necessary to dislodge them; which was performed by captain McDonald with great bravery and resolution, at the head of his own and the provincial light infantry. With this corps he passed the sentries and advanced guard unobserved, and was not discovered till the main body of the French

saw

saw him climbing up the rocks, and almost at the top which he A. D. gained; having received the enemy's fire, he poured in his own 1762. with such vivacity that the French gave way. The gallant captain received a mortal wound; his lieutenant with four men were killed, and eighteen wounded.

On the 16th colonel Amherst proceeded vigorously in his preparations to attack the town of St. John's. The breast-work and unfinished battery which commanded the harbour being taken, the entrance of the channel was cleared, and the stores and artillery were landed without difficulty. This was fortunately performed before a violent gale of wind, which happened immediately after, and drove lord Colville to a considerable distance from the coast. In his absence M. de Ternay took advantage of a thick fog, to slip his cables and to make his escape, leaving the garrison of St. John's to defend itself. His ships were seen at a great distance by the British Squadron; but his conduct was so unlike that of Englishmen in abandoning a place intrusted to his protection, that it was not imagined the ships which they descried could be those of M. Ternay.

On the 17th at night the colonel opened a battery, with one eight-inch mortar, seven cohorns, and six royals. The enemy, at the same time, began a brisk fire from the fort, and threw several shells. In the morning of the 18th the count of Haussonville, who had declared two days before in a letter to colonel Amherst that he would not surrender the fort until it were totally destroyed, thought proper to alter his resolution, and to demand a capitulation. The garrison surrendered prisoners of war, on condition of being conveyed to Brest with the first opportunity; which condition was immediately fulfilled by lord Colville, who had, by this time, returned into the harbour. Thus the town and fort of St. John's with all the other places which the French had taken on this coast were recovered by the indefatigable labour and persevering bravery of a handful of men, without the loss of above 20 soldiers in this important service.

In the retaking of St. John's as well as in the reduction of the Havannah and the Philippines, the fleet and army co-operated with singular harmony and success. As they underwent the  
same

A. D. same fatigue, and were exposed to similar dangers, they were  
 1762. intitled to an equal share of glory as well as of reward. But it is obvious that the vast superiority of the English seamen to the French and Spanish; and their firm hardiness in performing some branches of service which no land troops in the world would have dared to attempt, was the principal cause of that uniform and uninterrupted train of good fortune which crowned the British arms. The manly firmness and persevering resolution of our seamen, directed by the experienced valour and active vigilance of our naval commanders, overcame obstacles of art and nature which appeared at first sight unsurmountable. Every measure was taken at that critical moment which was most favourable to its success; no advantage was left unimproved, no error unrepaired. The whole plan of every expedition, as well as its subordinate parts, was conducted with heroic bravery, and guided by consummate wisdom.

Nor was the merit of the fleet less conspicuous in those attempts which were more immediately directed against the naval strength and resources of the enemy. In the course of the year we meet with several actions at sea, which would adorn the annals of any country. We shall relate them in the order of time in which they happened.

Had the enemy's designs succeeded, we should have had few exploits to boast of near the coast of France. In the month of December of the year 1761, they attempted to burn at once all the British ships of war that lay at anchor in the road of Basque. They prepared three fire-ships, which being chained together, were towed out of the port, and set on fire with a strong breeze that blew directly on the English squadron. This attempt, however, was made with hurry and trepidation, and the wind luckily shifting drove them clear of the ships they were intended to destroy. They were consumed to no purpose, after blowing up with a terrible explosion and every person on board perishing. On the 7th of March, his majesty's ship *Milford* fell in with a Spanish letter of marque in her passage to St. Domingo. She had been a privateer of Bayonne and pierced for 20 guns, but carried at present only 16 six-pounders, ten swivels, and 94 men, and had a valuable cargo on board. The engagement was hot and

and desperate. Captain Man of the Milford soon received a A. D. mortal wound. Mr. Day the first lieutenant, taking the com- 1762. mand of the ship, was immediately shot through the head. The defence of the king's ship devolving on lieutenant Nash, this officer received several wounds in his hands and face. The engagement continued almost for 24 hours, when the enemy struck, both ships being miserably shattered.

About the same time his majesty's ship Fowey, of 24 guns, nine pounders, and 135 men, commanded by captain Mead, fell in with La Ventura, a Spanish frigate of 26 guns, 12 pounders, and 300 men, carrying money to pay the Spanish troops at Porto-Rico and St. Domingo. These frigates engaged about seven leagues from Cape Tiberone. The fight continued an hour and an half, when their mutual damages obliged them both at the same time to sheer off and repair. This done, captain Mead at ten o'clock of the night bore down a second time on the enemy; but after exchanging a broadside without any visible effect, it being too dark to form any satisfactory notion of the distance and motion of the Spanish vessel, he made sail to windward, keeping a proper look-out, that he might not lose sight of her, but be able to renew the attack with advantage by day-light. Accordingly in the dawn of the morning, the Fowey, keeping her men at their quarters, ran up as close to the Ventura as it was possible without falling on board of her. The engagement, renewed for the third time, was more bloody and desperate than before. It lasted with extraordinary courage and conduct on both sides till half an hour past eight, when the Spanish frigate having received several shot between wind and water, and being reduced almost to a wreck, was compelled to strike her colours. She had near 50 men killed; and both ships were so much disabled that neither of them had tackles left to hoist out a boat, nor indeed a boat that could swim. Captain Mead, who is known by his useful invention for cleaning a ship's bottom at sea, had occasion for all his ingenuity on this occasion. He contrived by nailing tarpaulins over the shot-holes of a small boat, to bring the Spanish officers on board the Fowey. His gallantry was the more conspicuous on this occasion, as the ship's master was drunk and unfit to give the least assistance during

A.D. during the action. The gunner, too, happened to be wounded 1762. in the beginning of the engagement; and a lieutenant, with 24 men, were on shore.

On the 3d of April, after this wreck was carried into Port-Royal in Jamaica, the *Huffar* frigate, captain Carket, attacked four ships, lying under a fort in Tiberone bay; one of which carrying 16 guns she burnt, sunk another of 14 guns, cut out one of 16 and another of 12, and carried them into Jamaica. In this desperate enterprize the *Huffar* had but one man killed and 12 wounded; whereas the French had 17 killed and 35 wounded. But most of the crews of the enemy's ships escaped ashore in their boats during the engagement.

On the 21st of May two British frigates, cruising off Cape St. Vincent, made prize of the *Hermione*, a Spanish register-ship, bound from Lima to Cadiz, loaded with such a quantity of treasure and valuable effects as enriched all the captors. The *Hermione* had but 28 guns, and surrendered with little or no resistance; she was indeed in no situation to make a proper defence, the officers on board not being acquainted with the declaration of war between the two kingdoms. This ship carried 2,600,000 hard dollars; and her whole cargo was valued at a million sterling, which is more than had ever been before taken in one bottom. The loss of such an immense treasure at the beginning of a war which required the greatest expence, must have been a heavy blow to the ambition of the court of Madrid. The prize was brought from Gibraltar to England, and the gold and silver being conveyed in covered waggons to London, was carried in procession to the bank, amidst the acclamations of the people, who considered this as an auspicious omen of success in the war against Spain.

In the beginning of April captain Ourry of the *Acleon*, in the latitude of Tobago, took a large Spanish register-ship, bound for Lagueira, laden with artillery, stores, and ammunition. In September, a fleet of 25 sail of French merchant-ships, richly laden with sugar, coffee, and indigo, took their departure from Cape Francis for Europe, under convoy of four frigates. Five of these vessels were surprized and taken in the night by some privateers of New York and Jamaica. Next day it was their misfortune

misfortune to fall in with commodore Keppel, who made prize A. D. of their whole fleet and convoy, which were carried into the 1762. harbour of Port Royal in Jamaica.

Nor were the British cruisers less successful on the coasts of Europe. In the beginning of April captain Gambier of the *Burford* arrived at Plymouth with a large East-Indiaman which had sailed from the isle of Bourbon with a valuable cargo, and been taken by one of admiral Pocock's squadron in the chops of the channel. About the end of August captain Hotham of the *Æolus* chased two Spanish ships into the bay of Aviles, in the neighbourhood of Cape Pinas; and on the 2d day of September, standing into the bay, came to an anchor in such a situation as to bring his guns to bear not only upon one of the ships, but also upon a small battery situated on an eminence. After a short but warm contest both the battery and ship were abandoned; but before captain Hotham could take possession of his prize, she ran aground, and bulging, was burned by the captors. On the 20th of September he took a vessel of considerable value belonging to Bourdeaux. In the beginning of November captain Ruthven of the *Terpsichore* took a French ship of 20 guns bound from Bourdeaux to Cape Francis. The action, in which the captain was wounded, was sharp and obstinate. On the ninth of the same month the enemy lost the *Oiseau*, a frigate of 26 guns, commanded by the Chevalier de Modene, who fell in with captain Tonym of the king's ship the *Brune*, about seven leagues from Carthagen. The engagement was maintained with great spirit on both sides; but at length the chevalier was obliged to submit, having lost about 30 men, including all his officers, excepting three, who with himself were wounded in the action.

A continuation of success had inspired the English with an enthusiasm of valour as well as of magnanimity. Of the first we have an example in an exploit of the Brilliant and Duke of York privateers; and of the latter in the behaviour of captain Clark of the *Sheerness* frigate. These privateers entered a small port near Cape Finisterre, defended by a battery at the entrance. In two hours time they beat the Spaniards from the fort, hoisted English colours, and spiked up the cannon. They might have laid the town in ashes, but were satisfied with burning two ships,

A.D. and bringing off four more which were loaded with wine for 1762. the use of the Spanish fleet at Ferrol. The *Minerva*, a French frigate, had, in company with four other ships of war, given chase to the *Sheerness* commanded by captain Clark, who took refuge in the harbour of Villa Franca, and there anchored, the wind blowing fresh. He was immediately followed by the captain of the *Minerva*, who, actuated by an idle spirit of vanity and insolence, resolved to lie between him and the shore, and ran his ship upon the rocks which bound the eastern side of the harbour. Being himself ignorant of the art of seamanship, and ill assisted by a crew little acquainted with such emergencies, his ship was in a short time dashed in pieces; and a considerable number of his people perished, notwithstanding all the assistance he could receive from his consorts. On this melancholy occasion captain Clark, forgetting they were enemies, and that this very calamity was occasioned by their resentment against him and his country, exerted himself vigorously for their relief. He could not have done more if his friends had been in danger. By this generous assistance the greatest part of the crew and all the officers were saved.

The same firm and resolute spirit, and the same enterprising gallantry, appeared in every branch of the English marine. Even the packets performed exploits which would have done honour to ships of war of any other country. The *Hampden*, of eight carriage guns and 30 men, sailing between Faro and Gibraltar, was attacked by 11 privateers, which bore down in order of battle. The commodore was a *barcolongo* of eight guns and 60 men; the second was a *xebeque* of the same number of guns and men; five of a lesser size followed a little a-stern; other four carrying 30 men each, with one gun in the prow, brought up the rear. The engagement began at eleven in the forenoon, in sight of Gibraltar, and continued till half past one, when that mighty squadron were ordered by the commander in chief to haul their wind, and to return from whence they came. The *Hampden* proceeded to Gibraltar, with her sails and rigging greatly damaged, but without any other considerable loss. The *Harriot* packet, in her passage from New York to Falmouth, discovered equal gallantry, having twice repulsed a French



French privateer of more than double her force. The captain A. D. was rewarded with a purse of an hundred guineas, and promoted to the command of a Lisbon packet. 1762.

It would be tedious to relate every naval exploit of the year 1762, in the course of which our men of war and privateers fought and took 120 considerable prizes, carrying 844 guns and near 6000 men. Neither French nor Spaniards had force at sea which was fit to annoy our trade in any great degree, and they were deterred from risking their lives and properties on board of privateers, by the rough treatment which these commonly met with from the English frigates or armed merchantmen. Since the Spaniards, through the ambition of the court, had been precipitated into this fatal war, they had lost 12 ships of the line besides frigates; and the French had been deprived of a marine sufficient to constitute the strength of a great kingdom. Their whole loss amounted to 18 ships of the line and 36 frigates taken; fourteen ships of the line and thirteen frigates destroyed. On the other hand, the French took two and destroyed three English frigates; and thirteen British ships of the line, with fourteen frigates, were lost by accident. But not one capital English ship fell into the hands of the enemy.

The prospect of rich plunder, which always attends a Spanish war, had revived the spirit of privateering; after it was in a great measure extinguished by the repeated disasters of the French, which had left them scarcely any thing more to lose by sea. Some attempts were made in this way, which seem bold and daring beyond the spirit and abilities of private persons. The expedition against Buenos Ayres in particular, though it ended unfortunately by a fatal accident against which human prudence is too weak to provide, deserves, on account of the boldness and magnitude of the design, to be recorded among the memorable naval exploits of the year. It was the last act of hostility between the English and Spaniards, and concluded in a manner the most proper for disposing brave and generous nations to a mutual forgiveness of injuries, and a sincere desire of accommodation.

The attempt against this Spanish settlement was undertaken by some private adventurers, after we had made ourselves ma-

A. D. 1762. *sters of the Havannah, and taken measures for the conquest of the Philippines.* Government thought proper to encourage their design, not so much from any lucrative motive as on account of the situation of Buenos Ayres, which of all the Spanish colonies lies the most conveniently for molesting the possessions of our Portuguese allies, and which, if we should be so fortunate as to get it into our power, would afford a station well adapted for enterprizes against the trade and the dominions of Spain in the South Seas. The embarkation was made from the Tagus, and consisted of the *Lord Clive* and *Ambuscado* privateers, the former of which was equal in force to a ship of 50 guns. They were reinforced by a Portuguese frigate, and some small armed vessels and store ships, and had on board 500 soldiers, partly English, partly Portuguese. The expedition was under the command of captain Macnamara, an adventurer of spirit and experience, who had been many years a captain in the East India company's service, and had embarked his whole fortune in the present enterprize.

The armament sailed from Lisbon the 30th of August, 1762, from which place to the mouth of the Plata the voyage proved favourable. But when they had entered that vast river the 2d of November, difficulties and obstructions began to encounter them on every side. A violent gale of wind, attended with thunder and lightning, attacked them at their entrance. When the tempest ceased, they found that the river was shoaly, and of so difficult navigation that they must meet with no small obstructions in making their way to Buenos Ayres. The Spaniards were not here, as in other places, unacquainted with the declaration of war. They were well prepared for making a vigorous resistance, and had begun, some weeks before, to act on the offensive by taking the Portuguese settlement of Nova Colonia.

This unexpected intelligence and the difficulties of the voyage to Buenos Ayres determined the adventurers to abandon for some time this first design, and to begin with the recovery of Nova Colonia. An English pilot who knew the place and river, and whom they accidentally met with on board a Portuguese vessel, encouraged them to the attempt, undertaking to carry the  
commodore's

commodore's ship into the harbour, and within pistol-shot of A. D. the enemy's principal battery.

On the 1st of January, 1763, he made good his promise. 1763. The English ships arrived before Nova Colonia in good order, and the men in high spirits. They adorned their vessels with all the pomp and parade of a naval triumph. Their colours were fully displayed; the soldiers dressed in new red uniforms, and disposed upon the poop and upon the tops, made a gallant appearance. In this manner they advanced to the attack the 6th of January, with horns sounding and drums beating, and every movement expressive of hope and victory.

The Lord Clive made the signal for engaging, and soon after anchored under the eastmost battery of the place, while the Ambuscade was exposed to a warm fire from the middle and west batteries, as well as from two Spanish frigates. But the plan of engagement was not exactly followed; the Portuguese frigate on which they had great dependence, having anchored at such a distance that none of her shot reached the shore. The Spaniards pointed their guns well, and stood to them with firmness. But the ships having rectified several mistakes in their first disposition, began a most fierce cannonading, which lasted from eleven in the forenoon till three in the afternoon, when the enemy's fire began visibly to abate, and their men to retire to the eastmost battery as the place of greatest security. Against this the fire of the English was directed with redoubled violence; and they had hopes every minute of seeing the Spanish colours struck. But when they were on the point of attaining the object of all their desires, the commodore's ship, by some accident which has never been accounted for, unfortunately took fire. In a moment she was all in a blaze; and the same instant discovered the flames and the impossibility of extinguishing them. There was to be seen a most dreadful spectacle. The sides of the vessel were immediately crowded with naked men, who but a few minutes before reckoned themselves in the assured prospect of wealth and conquest. Some hung to the sails and rigging until the violence of the flames obliged them to forego their hold; others precipitated themselves into the sea; many died by their own hands; and several of still more determined

courage

A. D. courage went to the lower guns in the midst of all this scene of 1763. confusion and horror, and kept up a constant fire on the enemy; till they were driven by the flames to perish in another element. The commodore perished; and of 340 men, only 78 escaped.

None of the other vessels durst approach the Clive for fear of sharing her fate. The Ambuscade, which had suffered greatly from the enemy's fire, escaped to the Portuguese settlement of Rio de Janeiro. Such of the Lord Clive's crew as, by uncommon dexterity in swimming, reached the shore, were humanely received by the Spaniards, whose resentment was extinguished in the calamity of their enemies. The English came to them naked; they clothed them decently: they were destitute of every necessary; they supplied abundantly all their wants, received them into their houses, and treated them rather like their dearest friends than enemies come to expel them from their possessions.

The war thus closed with an action the fittest that can be imagined to dispose the minds of men to humanity, gentleness, and benevolence, and to prepare them for receiving with approbation the measures which had been taken for giving peace<sup>1</sup> to the four quarters of the world.

<sup>1</sup> Concluded at Paris the 10th of February, 1763. See Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. XIII. for the articles of this treaty of peace.

---

L I V E S  
 OF THE  
 A D M I R A L S:  
 INCLUDING A NEW AND ACCURATE  
 N A V A L H I S T O R Y.

---

C H A P. XXIV.

The Naval History of GREAT BRITAIN from the  
 end of the War in 1763 to the year 1779.

**A**S the war of 1755 had been undertaken in order to protect the British colonies in America against the encroachments of the French, so the security of these colonies seems to have been the principal object in the treaty of peace, of which the terms were, doubtless, more advantageous to the English settlements in America than to the island of Great Britain. The unexampled success of the war enabled England to dictate the conditions of peace. She had it in her option to retain the West India islands of Martinico, Guadaloupe, Mariegalante, and Desiderade, the possession of which would have brought the most important advantages to her commerce, or by ceding these islands, to secure the American settlements on the north

A.D.  
1763.

A. D. north by the acquisition of Canada. She preferred the interest  
 1763. of her colonies. It was no less in her power to retain the important conquests she had made from Spain, as to obtain an equivalent for these conquests by stipulating such commercial advantages as would have added immense wealth to Great Britain, or to defend her American colonies in the south by acquiring the forts of St. Augustine and Pensacola, and the extensive country of Florida. In this instance, also, the interest of America prevailed. The colonies were secured from every hostile attack, and, at the price of British blood and treasure and every national advantage, were placed in such a situation as no longer required the protection of Great Britain. From that moment they may be said to have obtained independence, when their condition enabled them to assume it.

It has long been observed, that England generally loses by negotiation the advantages which she has acquired by force of arms. If this observation be well founded, the circumstance, perhaps, does not so much arise from the unskillfulness of her ministers as from the nature of the English constitution. In a free country there are a great many little interests, all of which must be considered by a minister, and some of which may be allowed, at certain times, in consequence of a particular combination of circumstances, to prevail over the general interest of the community. At the time that the public attention was employed in considering the proposed terms of peace, the conduct of the West India interest in parliament was extremely remarkable. The popular lord-mayor of London assumed the lead among those colonists, who composed a powerful and complete body in the house of commons. These gentlemen, while the peace was in agitation, spared neither pains nor expence to persuade the English nation, that it was far more eligible to retain Canada than the West India islands. The reason for their being so anxious to spread this opinion, was, because the possession of the French West Indies would have annihilated their own importance; whereas the possession of Canada could not detract any thing from the value of Jamaica, Antigua, and the other islands, in which their property consisted. It is said that the late minister had, against his own sentiments, purchased  
 their

their friendship by complying with their desires in this particular; A. D. and their clamorous efforts to render their own voice that of the 1763. public, had, doubtless, a considerable influence with the ministers who negotiated the peace. But this was not all. The English had not yet learned to separate their own interests from those of America; and those who then held the helm of affairs were foolishly dazzled with the notion of acquiring an extensive and undisturbed empire across the Atlantic. When the West India patriots observed them determined in this design, and that the retaining Canada and the cession of the islands was a point irrevocable in the negotiation, they joined heartily in opposing the whole system of the peace. The odium of this measure was thrown entirely on administration; but the clamour of pretended patriots and the ambition of courtiers had united in bringing about an event which has been one considerable source of the subsequent calamities which have befallen Great Britain.

The parliament which met in the year 1763 approved of the peace, and voted 16,000 men to be employed for the sea service for 1764; including 4287 marines. The king in his speech had recommended keeping the fleet on a respectable footing; the ordinary of the navy amounted to 368,598*l.* and 200,000*l.* was voted towards the building and repairs of his majesty's ships for 1764. Nothing could be more proper than these preparations, which insured the performance of the articles of the general peace on the part of France and Spain; all of which, excepting the liquidation of the Canada bills, and the Manila ransom, were fulfilled with great punctuality.

Notwithstanding the pacific intentions of the French and Spanish courts, some occurrences unavoidably happened in distant parts which were employed as arguments by the opposers of the peace for again embroiling Great Britain with both these kingdoms. The first event of this kind was a misunderstanding between the English and French commanders in America. This afforded matter for popular declamation; but when the facts were fully explained, it appeared that the differences had intirely arisen from the commander of an English frigate having, pursuant to his orders from England, obliged a French ship to keep within the bounds of navigation prescribed by treaty. This mat-

A. D. ter was hardly explained to the satisfaction of the public, when  
 1763. a sloop of war arrived at Portsmouth from Newfoundland, which represented the French fleet on that coast as extremely formidable. It was asserted that the French, in direct opposition to the treaty of peace, intended to fortify St. Peter's, and that the British squadron in those parts commanded by Mr. Paliser, was by no means in a condition to prevent this measure. Upon this intelligence, the party in opposition pronounced a French war to be unavoidable, unless we were disposed to sacrifice all our late conquests. Meanwhile Mr. Paliser dispatched a sloop to the French governor at St. Peter's to inquire into the truth of the reports which prevailed, and to know if he had mounted cannon and erected works on that island. The governor answered by assurances that there was no more than one four-pounder mounted, without a plat-form, and with no other intention, than to make signals, and to answer those which were made by the fishermen; that the guard had never exceeded 50 men; and that no works or buildings whatever had been erected contrary to the treaty. The suspicions had arisen from the equivocal conduct of a captain of a French ship of 50 guns, which, as it appeared by the commodore's letters, was the only large vessel the French had in those parts. This ship, with one frigate of 26 guns, and another of inferior force, formed their whole strength, and Mr. Paliser was assured that none of those vessels had ever attempted, or would ever attempt to enter into any of the harbours on the coast of Newfoundland.

The clamour which was excited by the conduct of a French squadron at Turk's island, was supported on a better foundation. This place is the most considerable of a number of small islands which go under the same name on the coast of Spanish Hispaniola. It is only four miles in length, has not any good harbour, and is so barren and uncomfortable a spot that it is impossible for any settlement to subsist upon it. But as the coast abounds with various kinds of fish, especially turtle, and affords great quantities of salt, the Bermudians and other British subjects resorted thither in order to fish, and to gather salt in the dry season. Two hundred of them were employed in this manner in the month of June, when a French ship of 74 guns,



guns, with a snow, sloop, and xebeque, arrived from Cape A. D. François. Having landed on Turk's island, they laid hold of the <sup>1763</sup> English, plundered and burnt their cabins, detained their persons for some days as prisoners, and when dismissed, ordered them never to return into those parts. Mr. Lyttelton the governor of Jamaica was no sooner informed of those hostilities than he sent notice of them to the ministry, who gave such instructions as the occasion required to lord Hertford, then ambassador in France. Meanwhile an account of the whole transaction was laid before the public; and it was generally thought that the French intended to attempt a settlement on Turk's island. The opposition represented the attack upon the English salt-gatherers as a premeditated plan of the French politics, which was to be executed by the treacherous d'Estaing then governor of St. Domingo, for expelling the British subjects not only from these wretched islands but from all their other possessions in the West Indies. They insisted that the past hostilities and present intentions of the French were a justifiable ground for a new war. But this clamour was effectually silenced by the declaration of the French court in answer to the demands of the British ambassador. It disavowed the proceedings of the French subjects in the West Indies, disclaimed all intention of acquiring or conquering Turk's island, ordered the count d'Estaing to cause these islands to be immediately abandoned, and every thing therein to be restored to the condition in which it was before the late violent proceedings. Full reparation also was ordered to be made to the British subjects for the loss of their property and other injuries, according to an estimation to be immediately settled by the governors of Jamaica and St. Domingo.

The usual remissness of the court of Spain in giving instructions to their governors in distant parts, concerning the observation of treaties negotiated in Europe, had almost occasioned a rupture betwixt England and that kingdom, which, however, terminated in a manner equally honourable for Great Britain. On the 22d of February 1764, an order came from don Joseph <sup>1764</sup> Rosado, governor of Baccabar, commanding the English settlers in the bay of Honduras to retire from every other place, and to confine themselves to the banks of the river Balis. The English

A. D. in those parts are under the protection of the governor of Jamaica, to whom they formed a petition, setting forth, "That  
 1764. the Spanish orders had occasioned a total stagnation of business; that the commanders of ships who had hitherto supplied the petitioners with provisions, seeing no probability of being paid for what they had already furnished, declined being longer concerned in that commerce; and that having no plantations of their own, and being cut off from the only supply in which they could confide, they saw no possible means of preserving themselves and their families from famine." In consequence of this petition governor Lyttelton sent an agent from Jamaica to inquire into the true state of the grievances complained of, and to use his best endeavours to redress them. Upon inquiry it was found, that the order of the Spanish governor of Baccabar was in consequence of a letter of the 29th of December, 1763, written by Mr. d'Estiñes, captain-general of Yucatan, who had arrived at Campeachy on the 7th of the same month. This letter enjoined the necessity of confining the logwood cutters to particular districts, in order to prevent the Spaniards from being imposed on by pretenders to the rights of British subjects. Accordingly the English were limited to 20 leagues up the south side of the new river; in the river Balis, and four leagues to the southward of its mouth, they were not to be interrupted; but if discovered beyond these limits, their negroes were seized, their property confiscated, and their own persons arrested.

While proper measures were used in America for removing these grievances, and for keeping the Spaniards to the 17th article of the treaty, which ascertained the right of the English to cut logwood in the bay of Campeachy, the earl of Rochford, then ambassador at Madrid, had instructions to complain of the conduct of Mr. d'Estiñes. To his memorial, which was dictated in the most spirited terms, the Spanish minister replied, "That he had no advices from that governor relative to the subject of the complaint; but that it was certainly his Catholic majesty's intention to abide by the 17th article of the last treaty of peace; that he had already given positive orders to his governor of Yucatan for that purpose; that these orders  
 " should

ſ<sup>t</sup> should be renewed, and the English no longer interrupted in A. D.  
ſ<sup>t</sup> cutting logwood in the stipulated places." 1764.

This answer, though in appearance sufficiently explicit, did not satisfy the antiministerial party in Great Britain. They affirmed that the reply of his Catholic majesty's minister was disingenuous, because it stipulated no satisfaction to the sufferers, nor any punishment on the offending party; and they called out for an immediate declaration of war against Spain. Partly, perhaps, in order to quiet the violence of their clamours, the earl of Rochford was ordered to make fresh remonstrances. These occasioned the sending of new orders to the governor of Jucatan, in which his proceedings with regard to the British subjects in the bay of Honduras are disapproved by his Catholic majesty; he is commanded to repair their injuries, to give them no disquiet in future under any pretence whatever; it being the desire of the king of Spain to preserve peace with Great Britain, and to give the greatest proofs of his friendship to the British nation.

The pacific intentions of France and Spain, which had been sufficiently discovered in every transaction since the conclusion of the treaty, was entirely owing to the known strength of the British navy in those parts where the natural enemies of this kingdom are most vulnerable. The American seas were covered with English ships of war, which in a great measure interrupted the illicit commerce between the British colonies and the French and Spanish settlements. This occasioned affecting representations to be sent from across the Atlantic. The colonists complained that all the British ships of war were now converted into guarda-costas, and their commanders into so many custom-house officers, who seized every foreign ship carrying gold and silver to be exchanged for British commodities; and they asserted that, if this resource by which they were supplied with specie from France and Spain was cut off, it would be impossible for them to make their remittances to England.

The universality of these complaints engaged the ministry to mitigate the rigour of the orders which they had sent out at the conclusion of the peace to the West India governors, and commanders of ships, for annoying the contraband trade of the colonies

A. D. colonies with France and Spain. The navy of Great Britain 1764. was thus delivered from a service, which was in some measure unworthy of that dignity and splendour by which it had been distinguished; and a few vessels were henceforth employed in an undertaking which was more suitable to the naval greatness of this island.

It had long been a question with the learned, whether the unexplored part of the southern hemisphere contained another continent, or whether so great a part of the globe exhibited only an immense expanse of water. The former opinion seemed to be rendered probable by analogical reasoning concerning the geography of the earth, and received some additional strength from the various discoveries of new lands in those remote parts, by the several commercial powers who held possessions in America. The English, Portuguese, Dutch, and French navigators had distinguished themselves, for above two centuries, in this immense field of enterprize; and, although they failed in all their attempts to determine the main question, they met with such a variety of new objects as gave rise to other questions, and excited fresh curiosity. Soon after the accession of his present majesty to the throne, a design was formed of sending out vessels for examining with particular attention the wonders of the southern hemisphere, and for confirming what was true and detecting what was false in the various and contradictory accounts of former navigators. In the year 1764, the kingdom being then in a state of profound peace, the Dolphin and the Tamer, the former a ship of war of the sixth rate, and the latter a sloop mounting sixteen guns, were dispatched for this purpose, under the command of commodore Byron, whose instructions, dated the 17th of June in that year, explain the nature and object of the expedition. “Whereas nothing can redound  
“more to the honour of this nation as a maritime power, to  
“the dignity of the crown of Great Britain, and to the advancement of the trade and navigation thereof, than to make  
“discoveries of countries hitherto unknown; and whereas there  
“is reason to believe that lands and islands of great extent,  
“hitherto unvisited by any European power, may be found in  
“the Atlantic ocean, between the Cape of Good Hope and  
“the

“ the Magellanic Straits, within the latitude convenient for na- A. D.  
 “ vigation, and in climates adapted to the produce of commo- 1764.  
 “ dities useful in commerce ; and whereas his majesty’s islands  
 “ called Pepy’s island and Falkland islands, lying within the  
 “ said track, notwithstanding their having been first discovered  
 “ and visited by British navigators, have never yet been so suf-  
 “ ficiently surveyed, as that an accurate judgment may be form-  
 “ ed of their coasts and product, his majesty taking the premi-  
 “ ses into consideration, and conceiving no conjuncture so proper  
 “ for an enterprize of this nature as a time of profound peace,  
 “ which his kingdoms at present happily enjoy, has thought fit  
 “ that it should now be undertaken.” Captain Byron, pursuant  
 to these instructions, sailed from the Downs on the 21st of  
 June ; and having visited the Falkland islands, passed through  
 the Straits of Magellan into the Pacific Ocean, where he disco-  
 vered the islands of Disappointment, George, Prince of Wales,  
 Danger, York island, and Byron island. He returned to Eng-  
 land in the month of May in the year 1766—having determined  
 in the course of this long navigation many doubtful points, the  
 result of which is highly interesting to the public, and may be  
 of great importance to future navigators.

Commodore Byron came in sight of Cape Frio on the coast  
 of Brazil on the 11th of September, and anchored the day fol-  
 lowing in the great road of Rio de Janeiro. This city is governed  
 by the viceroy of Brazil, who received the English officers with  
 a ceremonious politeness. The people aboard the commodore’s  
 ship, having been supplied with fresh provisions and greens every  
 day, were very healthy ; but there being many sick aboard the  
*Tamer*, a place was appointed for them on shore, where they  
 soon recovered. On the 16th of October both ships weighed  
 anchor ; and the crews were impatient to get to sea, in order to  
 avoid the excessive heats which prevail on that coast. They  
 were obliged, however, to remain five days above the bar,  
 waiting for the land breeze ; nor was it without much difficulty  
 they got out at last, on account of the narrowness of the en-  
 trance between the two first forts, which renders the passage so  
 dangerous that the ships must have been lost, had they followed  
 the advice of the Portuguese pilot. During the delay at Rio de  
 Janeiro

A. D. Janeiro several English sailors were decoyed by the Portuguese 1764. to leave their respective ships. This is a common practice on the coast of Brazil, especially at Rio de Janeiro; where the Portuguese, carrying on a great trade, spare no pains, nor labour, nor deceit to entice foreign seamen to enter into their service.

The commodore, having lost sight of the coast of Brazil on the 22d of October, called all hands upon deck; and informed them that he was not, as they imagined, bound immediately to the East Indies, but upon certain discoveries, which it was thought might be of great importance to our country, in consideration of which the lords commissioners of the admiralty had been pleased to promise them double pay, and several other advantages, if during the voyage they should behave themselves to his satisfaction. They all expressed the greatest joy upon the occasion; assured him they would undergo with cheerfulness every difficulty and danger in the service of their country, and obey his orders with the utmost zeal. The commodore continued to steer his course towards the south; and on the 11th November found himself in the latitude, 42 degrees 34 minutes south; longitude, 58 degrees 17 minutes west. While he was in the latitude of 35 degrees 50 minutes, he found the weather as cold as it is in the same season in England, although the month of November is a spring month in the southern hemisphere, answering to the month of May in Europe; and they were 20 degrees nearer the line than we are in Britain; so much colder is it towards the southern regions of the earth. The people on the fore-castle were frequently deceived with the appearance of land. On the 12th November they called out at once, "Land right a-head." The commodore looked forward under the fore-sail, and saw what at first appeared to be an island, rising in two rude craggy hills. He sent officers to the mast-head who called out that they saw land a great way to the windward. As they continued their navigation, the land still kept the same appearance, and the hills looked blue, as they generally do at a distance. Many of the seamen said they saw the sea break upon the sandy beaches; but having steered for above an hour, what they had taken for land vanished at once, and, to their great astonishment, appeared to have been a fog bank.

bank. After this extraordinary disappointment the commodore A. D. shaped his course for Cape Blanco, which he discovered on the 17<sup>th</sup>, but after two days sailing was still at a loss for Port Desire, no description being more confused than that which Sir John Narborough had given of that harbour. On the 20<sup>th</sup> he discovered an island, which corresponded with Narborough's description of Penguin island; and in the evening saw a remarkable rock, rising from the water's edge like a steeple, on the south side of the entrance of Port Desire. This rock is an excellent land-mark for the harbour, which is otherwise very difficult to find. During his stay at this place, which was till the 5<sup>th</sup> of December, the commodore ordered every part of it to be sounded, and found that there is no danger but what may be seen at low water. He discovered several wells of fresh water at a small distance from the beach, and found great quantities of guanicoes and wild fowl. Here is also such plenty of excellent muscles, that a boat may be loaded with them every trip at low water; and in some parts of the coast there are bushes which might produce a tolerable supply of fuel. On the whole, Port Desire would be a very convenient place for ships to touch at, if it were not for the rapidity of the current.

Having unmoored on the 5<sup>th</sup> December, they proceeded in search of Peppy's island, which is said in Cowley's voyage to ly in 47 degrees south latitude. But they sought for it during several days in vain, and were at length obliged by hard weather to steer for the Cape Virgin Mary, the north entrance of the Straights of Magellan. On the 20<sup>th</sup> they ran close in shore to this cape, there being a long spit of sand running to the southward. In the evening they brought up close to this spit of sand, having seen many guanicoes feeding in the vallies, and a great smoke all the afternoon. At this place the Dolphin anchored; but the Tamer, not being able to fetch the anchoring ground, kept under way all night. However, both vessels anchored next morning two miles from the shore. This was the coast of Patagonia, which, according to very early accounts was said to be inhabited by a race of giants; but the veracity of these accounts had become doubtful, from the contradictory assertions of many later navigators who had been on that coast, and had

A. D. never met with any men of an extraordinary stature. This circumstance naturally engaged the commodore's attention. When his ship, therefore, had come to an anchor, he saw exactly what had happened to the crew of the *Wager*, as mentioned in the account written by Mr. Bulkely of her voyage. A great number of horsemen rode backwards and forwards directly abreast of the ship, waving in their hands something white as an invitation for them to come on shore. The commodore, being extremely desirous to know what these people were, ordered out his twelve-oared boat, and went towards the beach with Mr. Marshal his second lieutenant, and a party of men well armed, Mr. Cumming his first lieutenant following in the six-oared cutter. When they came within a short distance of the shore, they saw above 500 people, some on foot, but the greater part on horseback, who continued waving and hallooing, as invitations to land. They appeared to be entirely unarmed; but the commodore made signs to them to remove to a little distance, with which they immediately complied. The English then landed, and were drawn up on the beach, where the commodore ordered them to continue, while he alone went forward towards the Indians, who retired as he approached. He therefore again made signals that one of them should come near, which one of them who appeared to be a chief immediately complied with. He was of a gigantic stature, and seemed to realize in part the tales of Polyphemus of old. He had the skin of a wild beast thrown over his shoulders, and his face was painted so as to make a most hideous appearance. The commodore did not measure him, but supposes his height to have been about seven feet. With this frightful Colossus he marched forward to join the rest, who still continued at a distance, as they had been desired. Mr. Byron made signs for them to sit down, which they readily obeyed. There were among them several women proportionably large, and few of the men seemed less than the chief who had first come forward. They received with much pleasure the trinkets which were distributed among them, and behaved in a most regular and orderly manner, no one testifying the least impatience or displeasure, that his neighbour was served before him, or that his present was better than his own. They made



made signs for the commodore to go along with them, and offered him one of their horses; but he made them understand that he must return to his ship, at which they expressed great concern. During the pantomimical conference, an old man often laid his head down upon the stones, and shutting his eyes for about half a minute, first pointed to his mouth, and afterwards to the hills, meaning probably, that if the strangers could stay all night, he would bring them some provisions. These people are not only tall, but well proportioned: except the skins which they wore with the hair inwards, most of them were naked, a few only having on their legs a kind of boot, with a short pointed stick fastened to each heel, which served as a spur. When the commodore, and some of his people who had by this time come up, thought proper to leave them, not one of them offered to follow, but continued to remain in the same position in which they had been placed. They had a great number of dogs, with which they probably hunt the wild animals which serve them for food. Their horses were not large, nor in good case, yet they appeared to be nimble and well broken. The bridle was a leathern thong, with a small piece of wood that served for a bit, and the saddles resemble the pads, which are used among the country people in England. The women rode astride, and both men and women without stirrups; yet they galloped fearlessly over the spit upon which the English landed, the stones of which were large, loose and slippery.

Mr. Byron, having quitted this part of the coast, and being in latitude 51 degrees south, and longitude 63 degrees 22 minutes west, observed on the 14th of January a low flat island, full of high tufts of grass resembling bushes. He continued his course along the shore of this island about six leagues, and then saw another island low and rocky. On the former he discovered one of the finest harbours in the world, which he named Port Egmont in honour of the earl, who presided at the board of admiralty. The mouth of this harbour is south-east, distant seven miles from the rocky island, which is a good mark to know it by. In every part of Port Egmont, where the whole navy of England might ride in perfect safety, there

A. D. is great plenty of fresh water; and geese, ducks, snipes and  
 1764 other birds are so numerous, that the ship's company grew tired  
 of them. Here are wild celery and wood sorrel in the greatest  
 abundance, besides many other refreshments which are in the  
 highest degree salutary to those who have contracted scorbutic  
 disorders during a long voyage. Nor is there any want of mus-  
 cles, clams, cockles and limpets; the seals and penguins are  
 innumerable, and it is impossible to walk on the beach without  
 first driving them away. The coast, also, abounds with ani-  
 mals of a more dangerous kind. There are sea lions of an  
 enormous size; and a very fierce quadruped resembling a wolf.  
 The fangs of this creature are remarkably long and sharp; and  
 it is so fierce as to run against every animal that it sees. It is  
 not easy to guess how this quadruped should have got to these  
 islands, which are distant at least one hundred leagues from the  
 continent. The first navigator who visited those parts is suppo-  
 sed to be captain Davies, the associate of Cavendish, in 1592.  
 In 1594, Sir Richard Hawkins saw land, supposed to be the  
 same, and, in honour of his mistress queen Elizabeth, called  
 them Hawkins's Maiden Land. Long afterwards they were seen  
 by some French ships from St. Maloes; and Frezier, probably  
 for that reason, called them the Malouins, a name which has  
 since been adopted by the Spaniards. Commodore Byron thinks  
 there is little reason to doubt they are the same called Pepy's  
 Islands by Cowley; and he took possession of Port Egmont and  
 all the neighbouring islands for his majesty King George the  
 Third, by the name of Falkland Islands.

Commodore Byron having examined those parts with a de-  
 gree of attention that had never been before bestowed on them,  
 made sail for Port Desire, and on the 6th of February saw  
 land, and stood in for the port. During the run from Falkland  
 Islands to this place, the number of whales about the ship was  
 so great as to render the navigation dangerous. On the 14th  
 he put to sea, in order to go through the Straights of Magel-  
 lan, and to examine with attention the principal bays and har-  
 bours formed by the coast on each side. He entered the  
 Streight the 17th of February, and quitted it the 9th of April,  
 having employed seven weeks and two days in the voyage,  
 which

which was attended with incredible difficulties and dangers. A. D. These, however, were to be ascribed entirely to his entering 1764 the Streight near the time of the equinox, when the worst weather was to be expected: but at a proper season of the year, not only a single vessel but a whole Squadron might pass the Streight in less than three weeks. One great advantage of this passage above the doubling Cape Horn, is the facility with which fish is almost every where to be procured, with wine, scurvy, grass, berries, and many other vegetables.

Having cleared the Streight, he pursued his course to the westward, and on the 9th of May, being in latitude 26 degrees 46 minutes south, longitude 94 degrees 45 minutes west, determined to steer a north-west course until he got the trade wind, and then to stand to the westward till he should fall in with Solomon's islands, if any such there were, or make some new discovery. On the 31st there was a great number of birds about the ship, which made him conclude that land was at no great distance. But none was discovered till the 7th of June, in latitude 14 degrees 5 minutes south, longitude 144 degrees 58 minutes west. Then a small island was observed at the distance of some leagues. In a very short time another island was discovered to windward, much larger than the first. The ship stood for the small island, which had a most beautiful appearance, being surrounded with a beach of the finest white sand, and within covered with tall trees, which extended their shade to a great distance. It seemed to be about five miles in circumference, and from each end of it a spit runs into the sea, upon which the surge broke with great violence. The natives appeared on the beach with spears in their hands, at least sixteen feet long. They made large fires, probably for signals, as the same appeared immediately after on the larger island. The commodore sailed round this island, but, to the great regret and disappointment of the ship's company, no anchoring-place could be found within less than a cable's length of the shore, which was surrounded close to the beach with a steep coral rock. The sailors, distressed with the scurvy, saw cocoa nuts in great abundance, the milk of which is perhaps the best antiscorbutic in the world. They had reason to believe that there were limes, bananas,

A. D. bananas, and other fruits which are generally found between 1764. the tropics; and, to increase their mortification, they saw the shells of many turtles scattered about the shore. Having viewed this forbidden paradise with sensations of inexpressible distress, they wrought up to the other island, which was discovered to be equally inaccessible. They perceived several other low islands, or rather peninsulas, most of them being joined one to the other by a neck of land very narrow, and almost level with the surface of the water. Here the cocoa trees are easily discovered, being higher than any other part of the surface. A boat being sent to sound the lee side of these islands for an anchoring place, the Indians ran down in great numbers to the shore, armed with long spears and clubs, and making use of many threatening gestures. A gun was fired over their heads, which made them fly to the woods; but the boat returned without being able to discover any soundings close in with the surf, which broke very high upon the shore. The commodore thus finding it impossible to obtain any refreshment here, named this cluster of isles the Islands of Disappointment, and continued his voyage to the westward.

Land was again discovered in less than twenty-four hours, at the distance of six leagues. In the morning of the 10th of June, being within three miles of the shore, they perceived it to be a long low island, with a white beach, of a pleasant appearance, full of cocoa-nut and other trees. It was surrounded with a rock of red coral, and the natives behaved in the same hostile manner as those of the Islands of Disappointment. No anchoring place was to be found, nor was it possible to establish any friendly intercourse with the Indians. When the vessel came to the westernmost point of this island the sailors observed another about four leagues distant. They visited every part of its coast, but could find no soundings. The boats having approached very near the shore, made signs to the natives, who appeared in great numbers, that they wanted water. The Indians readily understood them, and directed them to run down farther along the shore. Some of them swam off to our boats, carrying cocoa nuts, and water in the shells. The principal object of the boats was to obtain some pearls; and the  
men,

men, to assist them in explaining their meaning, had taken with A. D. them some of the pearl-oyster shells, which they had found in 1764. great numbers upon the coast. But all their endeavours to make themselves understood by the Indians were ineffectual; and, as no anchorage could be found for the ships, the commodore proceeded to the westward, having named these islands, which are situated in latitude 14 degrees 41 minutes south, longitude 149 degrees 15 minutes west, King George's islands.

On the day following, that is, the 13th of June, about three o'clock in the afternoon, land was again discovered, bearing S. S. W. distant about six leagues. The commodore stood for it, and found it to be a low and very narrow island, lying east and west, with a very green and pleasant appearance, but a dreadful surf breaking on every part of it. It abounds with inhabitants, is about twenty leagues in length, and lies in latitude 15 degrees south, and the westernmost point of it in longitude 151 degrees 53 minutes west. To this place, which was every where inaccessible, the commodore gave the name of the Prince of Wales island.

From the western extremity of this island he steered towards the north-west, and on the 16th saw vast flocks of birds, which always took their flight to the southward when evening came on. This appearance, as well as the observation that all the little islands, which had been discovered, were full of inhabitants, made it probable, that there was a continent, or at least some larger islands to the southward. But the sickness of the ship's crew made it impossible for them to pursue their discoveries in that direction. On the 21st of June they were in latitude 12 degrees 33 minutes south, longitude 167 degrees 47 minutes west, and next morning discovered a most dangerous reef of breakers, at the distance of a league. Land was seen a little afterwards from the mast-head, having the appearance of three islands, with rocks and broken ground between them. The south-east of these islands is about three leagues in length between the extreme points, from both which a reef runs out, upon which the sea breaks to a tremendous height. The islands themselves had a more fertile and beautiful appearance than any before discovered, and, like the rest, swarmed with people,  
whose

A. D. whose habitations were seen standing in clusters all along the  
 1764 coast, which is unfortunately surrounded in such a manner by  
 rocks and breakers, that it cannot be approached without the  
 most imminent danger. The commodore, therefore, named  
 these the Islands of Danger. They ly in latitude 10 degrees  
 15 minutes south, longitude 169 degrees 28 minutes west.

He steered from thence N. W. by W. and on the 24th discovered another island bearing S. S. W. distant about seven or eight leagues. It appeared, upon approaching nearer to it, to be low, and covered with wood, among which were cocoa-nut trees in great abundance. It is near thirty miles in circumference; a dreadful sea breaks upon almost every part of the coast, where no anchorage is to be found. The commodore sent out the boats with orders to land, if possible, and procure some refreshments for the sick. They brought off about 200 cocoa nuts, which, to persons afflicted with the scurvy, were an inestimable treasure. They reported, that there was no sign of the island's ever being inhabited. They found thousands of sea-fowl sitting upon their nests, which were built in high trees; and these birds were so tame, that they suffered themselves to be knocked down, without taking to flight. The commodore was at first inclined to believe that this island was the same that in the Neptune François is called Maluita, and laid down about a degree to the eastward of the great island of St. Elisabeth, the principal of the Solomon's islands; but, being afterwards convinced of the contrary, he called it the Duke of York's island.

He continued his course till the 29th, in the track of Solomon's islands, but found no reason to believe that any such existed in the situation assigned them by the French. He discovered, however, on the 2d of July, an island bearing north, distant about six leagues. Next morning it was found to be low and flat; of a delightful appearance, and full of wood, among which the cocoa-nut tree was very conspicuous. It is extremely populous, and the natives, in more than sixty canoes, put off from the shore and made towards the ship, which lay by to receive them. "After these Indians," says the commodore, "had gazed at us some time, one of them suddenly jumped  
 " out of his pœba, swam to the ship, and ran up the side like a

" cat;

" cat; as soon as he had stepped over the gunwale, he sat A. D.  
 " down upon it, and burst into a violent fit of laughter, then 1764.  
 " started up, and ran all over the ship, attempting to steal  
 " whatever he could lay his hands upon, but without success,  
 " for being stark naked it was impossible for him to conceal his  
 " booty for a moment. Our seamen put on him a jacket and  
 " trowsers, which produced great merriment, for he had all  
 " the gestures of a monkey newly dressed; we also gave him  
 " bread, which he eat with a voracious appetite, and after ha-  
 " ving played a thousand antic tricks, he leaped overboard,  
 " jacket and trowsers and all, and swam back to his proa.  
 " After this several others swam to the ship, ran up the side to  
 " the gun-room ports, and having crept in, snatched up what-  
 " ever lay in their reach, and immediately leaped again into the  
 " sea, and swam away at a great rate, though some of them,  
 " having both hands full, held up their arms quite out of the  
 " water to prevent their plunder from being spoiled. These  
 " people are tall, well proportioned and clean limbed; their  
 " skin is a bright copper colour, their features extremely good,  
 " and there is a mixture of intrepidity and cheerfulness in their  
 " countenances that is very striking. They had long black  
 " hair, which some of them wore tied up behind in a great  
 " bunch, others in three knots; some of them had long beards,  
 " some only whiskers, and some nothing more than a small  
 " tuft at the point of the chin. They were all of them stark  
 " naked, except their ornaments, which consisted of shells,  
 " very prettily disposed and strung together, and were worn  
 " round their necks, wrists, and waists. One of these men,  
 " who appeared to be a person of some consequence, had a  
 " string of human teeth about his waist, which was probably a  
 " trophy of his military courage, for he would not part with  
 " it in exchange for any thing that I could offer him. Some  
 " of them were unarmed, but others had one of the most  
 " dangerous weapons I had ever seen. It was a kind of spear,  
 " very broad at the end, and stuck full of shark's teeth, which  
 " are as sharp as a lancet, at the sides, for about three feet of  
 " its length. We showed them some cocoa nuts, and made  
 " signs that we wanted more; but instead of giving any intir-  
 "

A. D. "mation that they could supply us, they endeavoured to take 1764 away those we had." The commodore sent out boats to sound, and they reported that there was ground at the depth of thirty fathom within two cables length of the shore; but as the bottom was coral rock, and the soundings much too near the breakers for a ship to lie in safety, he was obliged to make fail, without procuring any refreshments. This island, to which his officers gave the name of Byron's Island, lies in latitude 1 degree 18 minutes south, longitude 173 degrees 46 minutes east. Here ended the discoveries made by the Dolphin. She afterwards shaped her course for the isle of Tinian, which, to her great regret and disappointment, appeared to be no longer that delightful place of which the elegant author of Anson's voyage has given so luxuriant a description. From thence she proceeded to Batavia, and having doubled the Cape of Good Hope, proceeded on her return to England. She came to anchor in the Downs on the 9th of May, 1766, having been just nine weeks in coming from the Cape, and somewhat more than two and twenty months upon the voyage round the world.

We have not interrupted the course of commodore Byron's discoveries, by relating the transactions of the year 1765, which if not the ultimate cause, were the immediate occasion of those disturbances that gradually proceeded to such a degree of violence, as required the most vigorous exertions of the naval strength of this kingdom. The parliament, which assembled towards the close of the year 1764, voted 16,000 men to be employed in the sea service for the year 1765, including 4287 marines; and a sum not exceeding 4*l.* *per man per month* for their maintenance. The ships stationed in the British seas had no call to exert their activity; but those on the coast of America were employed in the same service which had been attended with such bad effects the preceding year. The trade of America with Great Britain had increased, during the last years, and after the conclusion of the war, beyond the hopes and speculations of the most sanguine politicians. The Americans bought annually to the amount of three millions of British commodities. Their trade, however, was not confined to the mother country. It swelled out on every side; and having fil-  
led



led all its proper channels to the brim, overflowed with a rich A. D. abundance. In short, the contraband trade kept pace with the regular, and was its most natural effect. This, doubtless, was an evil; but being connected with the cause of our prosperity, it was an evil that ought to have been treated with the greatest delicacy and address. Unfortunately for the interests of the British empire on both sides of the Atlantic, a gentleman now presided in the treasury, who had beheld with peculiar jealousy the increase of this contraband trade. Mr. Grenville, when first lord of the admiralty, and not strictly called upon in his official line, had presented a very strong memorial to the lords of the treasury, heavily complaining of the growth of the illicit trade in America. We have already hinted at the bad consequences arising from the attempt to put an entire stop to the commerce between the British and Spanish colonies. These were seen and acknowledged even by administration. A law was made therefore, the 5th of April, 1764, which rendered legal, in some respects, the intercourse between the different establishments in the new world. But the same law loaded this commerce with very heavy impositions, and ordered the money arising from these to be paid in specie, into the British exchequer. While it was thought expedient to fit out armed cutters, under the command of sea officers, to prevent smuggling in the British seas, the naval commanders on the coasts of America were employed in rendering effectual the late commercial regulations. These gentlemen could not be supposed to become acquainted with all the forms which this business required. They were unacquainted with the cases in which ships were liable to penalties; nor did they better understand those cases in which they were even exempted from detention. Hurried on by the natural violence of their dispositions, and acting with that irregular vivacity and contempt of formal rules, which they had exerted with such advantage and glory in defence of their country against the common enemy, they ruined the interests of trade, while they disappointed the expectations of the treasury. The commerce between British subjects was the first that suffered, notwithstanding that vast number and intricacy of bonds, clearances, cockets, registers, &c. which had been e-

A. D. 1764. established to protect it. The trade carried on between the British and Spanish colonies, which was so extremely advantageous to the former, was nearly annihilated. The new-made custom-house officers seized, indiscriminately, all vessels carrying on that trade, whether belonging to fellow-subjects or foreigners, which the ordinary custom-house officers, stationed on them, had always permitted to pass unnoticed. Besides the general traffic between the English, French, and Spanish Americans, there was a particular and most advantageous trade carried on between North America and the French West Indies. It consisted chiefly in an exchange of such commodities as must otherwise have remained a drug, if not an incumbrance, on the hands of the possessors. The balance was paid in specie to North America, which, together with the balance of the Spanish trade, enabled them to make their remittances to Great Britain. This intercourse between North America and the French West India islands, was considered as so necessary to the former, that it was permitted to be maintained during the first years of the war; directly, by means of flags of truce; indirectly, through the Dutch and Danish islands; and, at length, through the Spanish port of Monte Christi in the island of Hispaniola. When the English, towards the conclusion of the war, had obtained the most distinguished advantages, and in a manner laid siege to all the French West India islands, government determined to put a stop to this intercourse, not so much in the light of a contraband trade, as in that of a treasonable practice, without which it would be impossible for these valuable islands to hold out against our attempts to reduce them. When the war concluded, the arguments of treason ceased, and this intercourse again returned to its former flourishing condition. But, upon the establishment of the new revenue laws, it sunk under the same blow which destroyed the general commercial intercourse of the new world.

Before the establishing of these laws produced any considerable effect in Great Britain, it was attended with very fatal consequences to the situation and circumstances, as well as to the temper and disposition of the colonists. Immediately on a stop being put to their trade, they came to a resolution not to buy.

any clothing they could possibly live without, that was not of A. D. their own manufacturing. Not having the usual returns to 1764. make to Great Britain for the woollen goods which they usually purchased from her, they adopted a plan of retrenchment dictated by necessity, and gave up all hopes of being clothed in the finery of their mother country. The resolution taken with regard to this article was rendered general by a vote of the house of commons, which followed the law imposing new duties upon their foreign trade: "That, towards farther defraying the necessary expences of protecting the colonies, it may be proper to charge certain stamp-duties upon them." When this determination of the British legislature was known in America, the inhabitants entered into associations, not only to abide by their former resolution taken in consequence of the interruption of their trade by the naval custom-house officers, but to encourage as much as possible all kinds of manufacture within themselves. These measures were despised by the ministry, who concluded that because the wool of the colonies is not so good as that of Great Britain, it would be impossible for them not to depend upon her for that article; and because the other commodities which they purchased from this country were such as it would be extremely inconvenient for them to want, they must be soon disgusted with an agreement, entered into in a moment of resentment, which must be more distressing to themselves than injurious to the mother country. But the firm perseverance of the colonies in adhering to the principles of their association, proved the weakness of this reasoning. They were ready to submit to every other hardship rather than yield to what they deemed an infringement of their liberties.

In consequence of this general disposition of persons of all ranks in these colonies, great evils began to be felt, and still greater to be apprehended. A temporary interruption of commercial intercourse between England and America immediately took place which could not fail to be extremely prejudicial to the former. The numerous body employed in preparing, buying, or transporting goods to the American market, were deprived of employment. While individuals were reduced to beggary, the revenue suffered in proportion by the want of the export and  
import

**A. D.** import duties. Yet neither these evils, nor the fear of totally  
 1765. alienating America from the interests of Great Britain, deterred the ministry from passing that law, the bare suspicion of which had occasioned such disgust. The stamp-act made its way through both houses, and received the royal assent by commission, the 22d of March, 1765.

The news of this unfortunate event first reached the province of New England, which of all the English colonies has ever had the strongest bent towards republican licentiousness. The sullen obstinacy and hatred which already possessed them, were converted, by this fresh instance of what their leaders taught them to deem little better than tyranny, into the most violent fury, which every where broke out into action. The ships in the harbour hoisted their colours half-mast high, in token of the deepest mourning; the bells rang muffled; the populace treated the act with the most licentious contempt; many of the better sort gradually mixed in these tumults, and the assemblies not only of New England but of all the considerable provinces, which had by this time caught the flame, instead of barely conniving at the people's asserting their independence by tumultuous acts, proceeded to avow it themselves in the most expressive terms, grounding it on the same arguments which their friends on this side the water had already used to prove it. The history of what follows is that of the disgrace of Great Britain. The ministry, whether unwilling or unable to support by force of arms the law which they had thought proper to enact, resigned their places. Their successors yielded to the storm, instead of resisting it, while resistance could yet be effectual. They obtained a momentary popularity by repealing the stamp-act, which had been so offensive to the colonies, and so hurtful to a considerable part of the trading interest of Great Britain. But the factious, turbulent spirit which had taken possession of the former, was far from being mollified by the lenient concessions in their favour, and the great consideration shewn to their circumstances by their legislature. The ministry, whose debility or moderation had tended to confirm them in their disregard to the authority of parliament, did not long continue in office. But the effects of their administration were permanent. The colonists were no longer satisfied in committing private acts of out-  
 rage;

rage; they did not content themselves with showing disrespect A. D. to their governors and other servants of the crown; but openly 1765. set at defiance the power of the whole legislative body. Even the assembly of New York, a province where the ideas of legal subordination had been long and firmly established, voted in direct opposition to an act of last session for providing the troops with necessaries in their quarters, and passed an act of assembly by which these provinces were regulated in a mode totally inconsistent with that prescribed by parliament.

Administration combated this rebellious usurpation of power by another act of the legislature, incapacitating the assembly of New York for all legal functions, till they had in every respect complied with the British regulations respecting the troops. At the same time they opposed the licentious spirit of the other provinces by new revenue laws, which, as no vigorous means were used to enforce them, were as nugatory as the former. The Rockingham administration repealed the stamp- 1766. act, but asserted the right of taxation; their successors (the duke of Grafton was now at the head of the treasury) exercised this right, by laying duties on the importation of glass, 1767. paper, and some other commodities, into the colonies. The officers appointed to collect this revenue were every where treated like criminals; and the authority of Great Britain was totally disregarded. Besides the tumultuous riots which happened in particular parts, the temper general and conduct of the whole people became every day more licentious. That republican spirit, which is as inconsistent with the genuine principles of the British constitution as it is agreeable to the wild doctrines and levelling principles in which the inhabitants of Boston had been nursed, began first openly to display itself in that capital. Having adopted resolutions of a nature the most violent and factious, the assembly there sent a circular letter, signed by the speaker, the 11th of February, 1768, to all the other assem- 1768. blies of North America. In this they expatiated largely on the natural rights of men, and the tyranny of the British legislature, and they summoned the colonies to unite in one common cause for maintaining their privileges inviolate. This letter was answered by many of the provinces in a similar tone; and the flame of rebellion

A. D. rebellion began to spread over the whole North American continent. 1768.

One vigorous measure gave it a considerable check in the place where it had first broke out. Two regiments were ordered from Ireland to support the authority of parliament over the inhabitants of Boston, and several detachments from different parts of the continent rendezvoused at Halifax for the same purpose. Upon the first rumour of these movements, the Bostonians were as much alarmed as if they had been on the point of suffering all the horrors of invasion from a cruel foreign enemy. The assembly, or convention, which on many occasions had treated not only their governor, but even the parliament of Great Britain with the most indecent asperity of expression, drew up a memorial in terms of great moderation, disclaiming all pretence to any authority whatever, and advising and recommending it to the people to pay the greatest deference to government, and to wait with patience the result of his majesty's wisdom and clemency for a redress of their grievances. If the most unhappy infatuation had not prevailed over the councils of Great Britain, the sudden change produced by this appearance of vigour might have opened the eyes of administration, and taught them that coercive measures alone could reduce the Americans to a sense of their duty. But instead of pushing the advantage which they had obtained, in order to destroy the very seeds of rebellion, the first deceitful appearance of tranquillity made them relax their severity; the Americans had time to recollect themselves and to recover from their panic; and the important moment was again lost of establishing, without great effusion of blood, the sovereignty of parliament over the whole British empire.

While so little attention was bestowed on preserving the dominions of which we were already in possession, continual efforts were made for extending the limits of our territories by fresh discoveries. In August, 1766, the Dolphin, in which commodore Byron had circumnavigated the world, was again sent out under the command of captain Wallis, with the Swallow, commanded by captain Carteret. They proceeded together to the west end of the Straights of Magellan, and separated

ted in the great southern ocean. Captain Wallis directed his A. D. course more westerly than any navigator before him had done <sup>1768.</sup> in so high a latitude; but he met with no land till he came within the tropic, where he discovered the islands, Whitfunday; Queen Charlotte; Egmont; Duke of Gloucester; Duke of Cumberland; Maitea; Otaheite; Eimeo; Tapanamou; Howe; Scilly; Boscawen; Keppel, and Wallis; and returned to England in May, 1768. Captain Carteret kept a different route, in which he discovered the islands, Osnaburgh; Gloucester; Queen Charlotte; Carteret; Gower; and the Streight between New Britain and New Ireland; and returned in March, 1769.

Captain Wallis having cleared the Straights of Magellan the 12th of April, 1767, proceeded westward, but did not fall in with any undiscovered land till the 6th of June. A few days before the sailors had observed several gannets, which, with the uncertainty of the weather, inclined them to believe that land was not far distant. This belief was confirmed by their seeing a great many birds on the 5th; and the day after, being in latitude 19 degrees south, and longitude 137 west, they saw plainly from the deck a low island, at about five or six leagues distance. When they were within a few miles of this island they saw another, bearing north-west by west. The captain sent his boats manned and armed to the shore of the former, which returned in a few hours, bringing with them several cocoa nuts and a considerable quantity of scurvy grass. The crews reported, that they had seen none of the inhabitants, but had visited several huts, or rather sheds, consisting only of a roof, neatly thatched with cocoa-nut and palm leaves, supported upon posts, and open all around. They had found no anchorage, and the surf was so high that it was with difficulty they had got on shore, the whole island being surrounded with a reef of rocks, which rendered it extremely difficult of access. The captain, therefore, finding it answered no purpose to continue longer at this island, which, being discovered on Whitfun-eve, he called Whitfun-island, stood away for the other, distant about four leagues. When the ship came under the lee of the latter, the boats were immediately dispatched, but could find no soundings till within half a cable's length of the shore.

A. D. They landed, however, and found the island sandy and level,  
 1768. full of trees, but without underwood, and abounding with scurvy  
 grass, and wells of excellent water. As the boats approached  
 the shore, the Indians thronged down towards the beach,  
 and put themselves upon their defence with long pikes, as if to  
 dispute the landing. The boats crew then lay upon their oars,  
 and made signs of friendship, shewing at the same time several  
 strings of beads, ribbands, knives, and other trinkets. The  
 Indians still made signs for them to depart, but at the same  
 time eyed the trinkets with such a wishful curiosity, as left room  
 to expect that it might be possible to establish an intercourse.  
 This, however, was not effected, but the boats landed, and  
 the ship was supplied with water and other necessary refresh-  
 ments. Captain Wallis took possession of the island in the  
 name of George the Third, and named it Charlotte's Island in  
 honour of her majesty. It is about six miles long, and one  
 broad, and lies in latitude 19 degrees 18 minutes south, longi-  
 tude 138 degrees 4 minutes west. The same day that they left  
 this place they discovered another island, bearing east by north,  
 distant fifteen miles. Here the sea breaks over a reef of rock,  
 running from east to west, and forms itself into a lagoon in the  
 middle of the island, which is low, covered with trees, but  
 without any huts or inhabitants. The Indians belonging to  
 Charlotte Island had fled thither in their canoes when the Eng-  
 lish landed on their coast; and seeing their enemies, as they  
 imagined, pursuing them to this place, they left their women  
 and children on the beach, and advanced with pikes and fire-  
 brands, making a great noise, and dancing in a strange manner.  
 The soil of this island was sandy, there is no verdure under the  
 trees, the shore every where rocky, and no anchorage. The  
 captain therefore left a place where there was no prospect of  
 obtaining any refreshment, having first named it Egmont Island  
 in honour of the first lord of the admiralty. It lies in latitude  
 19 degrees 20 minutes south, longitude 138 degrees 30 minutes  
 west.

On the 11th of June, about mid-day, they saw an island,  
 bearing west south-west, and stood for it. At four in the af-  
 ternoon they were within a quarter of a mile of the shore, but  
 could



could find no soundings, the island being surrounded by rocks, A. D. on which the sea breaks very high. As to appearance, soil, and inhabitants, it differed little from the islands which they had just left. The captain named it Gloucester Island, in honour of his royal highness the duke of that name. It lies in latitude 19 degrees 11 minutes south, longitude 140 degrees 4 minutes west. 1768.

In sailing westward the captain discovered two other small islands, the first of which he named after the duke of Cumberland, and the second after Prince William Henry. These, however, had nothing to recommend them above those already mentioned; so that he continued to proceed westward, in hopes of finding higher land, where the ship might come to an anchor, and such refreshments as they stood in need of be procured. On the 17th he discovered high land, with frequent fires, which proved it to be inhabited. This also was an island, nearly circular, about two miles in diameter. There was no anchorage to be found, but the inhabitants appeared more numerous than the smallness of the place could support, which gave hopes that there were lands of greater extent not far distant, which might be less difficult of access. The captain having named this island, which lies in latitude 17 degrees 51 minutes south, longitude 147 degrees 30 minutes west, Osnaburgh, in honour of Prince Frederick, bore away to the south-west; and the same day discovered very high land in the west-south-west. This was the famous island of O-Tahite, which captain Wallis named King George the Third's Island. It consists of two principal divisions, which are united by a narrow neck of land. The circumference of both is about forty leagues, lying in latitude 17 degrees 46 minutes south, and longitude 149 degrees 13 minutes west. The Dolphin happened to approach this coast the 18th of June, during a thick fog; and the crew were much surprised, when it cleared away, to find themselves in the middle of some hundreds of canoes. The Indians, who assembled to the number of many thousands, behaved at first in a friendly manner; one of them holding up a branch of the plantain tree as a token of peace. But afterwards having surrounded the ship with a number of canoes loaded with stones, they began, on a signal

A. D. given, to throw them with great violence, which obliged the  
 1768. captain to order some guns to be fired. The terror of the fire-  
 arms soon made them desist from hostilities; and an intercourse  
 was established by which the English procured hogs, fowls,  
 bread, fruit, apples, bananas and cocoa nuts, in exchange for  
 nails, hatchets and various trinkets, which the Indians held in  
 great value. The Dolphin lay off this island from the 24th of  
 June to the 27th of July; during which the English examined  
 the interior parts as well as the coast, which they found to be  
 luxuriantly fertile and extremely populous. The inhabitants are  
 well lodged, and clothed with a stuff made of the macerated  
 fibres of a shrub which grows in great abundance in their coun-  
 try. They are of the ordinary European size, a tawny com-  
 plexion, the men well made, and the women handsome. Cap-  
 tain Wallis could not discover what were their religious senti-  
 ments, or whether they entertained any ideas of superior and  
 invisible powers. But having become somewhat acquainted with  
 them, he found them not only just in their dealings, but gene-  
 rous and humane; and so extremely susceptible of attachment,  
 that several of them, especially the queen of the island, were  
 exceedingly afflicted when their visitants were obliged to de-  
 part.

After leaving this island, which has been examined with more  
 attention in later voyages, the captain steered his course for Ti-  
 nian. In his way thither he fell in with several small islands,  
 none of which afforded good anchorage. The principal of  
 them is Boscawen's Island, lying in latitude 15 degrees 50 mi-  
 nutes south, longitude 175 degrees west; Keppel's Isle, in lati-  
 tude 15 degrees 55 minutes south, longitude 175 degrees 3 mi-  
 nutes west; and Wallis's Isle, in latitude 13 degrees 18 minutes  
 south, longitude 177 degrees west. The boats, in examining  
 the last, found that in two or three places there is anchorage  
 in eighteen, fourteen, and twelve fathom, upon sand and coral,  
 without a reef of rocks which surrounded the island. There is  
 also a breach in this reef, about sixty fathom broad; and a ship,  
 if pressed with necessity, might anchor here in eight fathom,  
 but it is not safe to moor with a greater length than half a ca-  
 ble. The plans of all these islands were delivered by the cap-  
 tain

tain on his return into the hands of the admiralty, with their A. D. longitudes and latitudes so accurately laid down, that succeeding 1768. navigators had no difficulty in finding them.

Captain Carteret, as we have already mentioned, separated from his companion after passing the Streights of Magellan, and steered a course considerably nearer to the equator. On the 26th of July, 1767, being in latitude 10 degrees south, longitude 167 degrees west, he was in hopes of falling in with some of the islands called Solomon's Islands, this being the latitude in which the southermost of them is laid down. What increased this expectation was the seeing a number of sea birds, which often hovered about the ship; but the captain was not so fortunate as to meet with any land; and as he sailed over the southern limits of that part of the ocean in which Solomon's Islands are said to lie, and commodore Byron, in the voyage formerly described, had traversed the northern without finding them, there is reason to conclude, that, if there be any such islands, their situation in all our charts is erroneously laid down.

Captain Carteret continued his voyage nearly in the same parallel, towards the west; but did not discover land till the 12th of August, when he fell in with a cluster of islands, of which he counted seven. Having anchored at about three cables length from the shore, he soon observed some of the natives, who were black, with woolly heads, and stark naked. A boat was dispatched in search of a watering place, at which the natives disappeared; and the boat returned with an account that there was a fine run of fresh water abreast of the ship, and close to the beach, but that the whole country in that part being almost an impenetrable forest, the watering would be very dangerous if the natives should endeavour to prevent it; that there were no esculent vegetables for the refreshment of the sick, nor any habitations as far as the country had been examined, which was wild, foresty and mountainous. The captain, therefore, tried some other places, where the sailors saw hogs, poultry, cocoa-nut trees, plantains, bananas, and a great variety of other vegetable productions, as they sailed along the shore. Unfortunately, however, an unhappy dispute arose between the boat's crew and the natives, who defended themselves bravely with bows

A. D. bows and arrows, which they fired in regular platoons. This 1768. prevented all friendly intercourse; and the ship's company were so much weakened by disease, that they could not hope to obtain what they wanted by force. The captain gave the general name of Queen Charlotte Islands to the whole cluster, and assigned particular names to the most remarkable. That which he called *Howe's* lies in latitude 11 degrees 10 minutes south, longitude 164 degrees 43 minutes east. Egmont Island lies in latitude 10 degrees 40 minutes south, longitude 164 degrees 49 minutes east. The east sides of these two islands which lie exactly in a line with each other, including the passage between them of four miles, extend about eleven leagues; both of them appear to be fertile, and afford a very agreeable prospect, being covered with tall trees of a beautiful verdure. Lord Howe's Island, though more flat and even than the other, is notwithstanding high land. At the distance of about thirteen leagues from the north-east point of Egmont Island is another of a stupendous height, and a conical figure, the top of which is shaped like a funnel, emitting smoke, though no flame. This he called Volcano Island. To a low flat land, which, when Howe and Egmont islands were right a-head, bore north-west, he gave the name of Keppel's Island. It lies in latitude 10 degrees 15 minutes south, longitude 165 degrees 4 minutes east. The largest of two others to the south-east he called Lord Edgcomb's Island, the small one Perry's Island; the other islands, of which there are several, he did not particularly name.

As all hopes of obtaining refreshment in those parts were at an end, and the ship was not in a condition of pursuing her voyage to the southward, the captain gave orders to steer north, hoping to refresh at the country which Dampier has named *Nova Britannia*. Accordingly he sailed from Egmont Island the 18th of August, with a fresh trade wind; and on the 20th discovered a flat low land, in latitude 7 degrees 56 minutes south, longitude 158 degrees 56 minutes east, which he called Gower's Island. Here, to the great mortification of all on board, no anchorage could be found, but some cocoa-nuts were purchased from the natives, who approached the ship in their canoes.

canoes. They were in every respect the same sort of people A. D. that had been met with in the neighbouring places. The night 1768. was exceedingly dark, and by day-break a current had set the ship considerably to the southward of the island, and in sight of two others, situated nearly east and west of each other. That to the east is much the smallest, and was named Simpson's island. The other is lofty, has a stately appearance, lies in latitude 8 degrees 26 minutes south, longitude 159 degrees 14 minutes east, and its length from east to west is above six leagues. It was named by the officers Carteret's Island, in honour of their commander. A boat was sent on shore, which the natives endeavoured to cut off, and hostilities having thus commenced, the English seized their canoe, in which they found an hundred cocoa nuts. The canoe was large enough to carry eight or ten men, neatly built, adorned with shell-work and figures rudely painted. The people were armed with bows and arrows, and spears pointed with flints. By some signs which they made, it appeared that they were not wholly unacquainted with the use of fire-arms. Like the inhabitants of the neighbouring islands they were quite naked, and equally dexterous at swimming and managing their canoes. In the following days the ship found no soundings at the small islands which she fell in with, and which the captain supposes to be those called Ohang Java, discovered by Tasman. They are nine in number, and to the north lie two others which are mentioned by no preceding navigator, and which the captain named Sir Charles Hardy and Winchelsea Islands. The former lies in latitude 40 degrees 50 minutes south, longitude 154 degrees east; the latter is distant about ten leagues, in the direction of south by east.

On the 26th of August they saw another large island to the northward, which was supposed to be St. John's island, discovered by Schouten, and soon after they saw high land to the westward, which proved to be Nova Britannia. The next day a north-westerly current sent them into a deep bay or gulf, which has been distinguished by Dampier by the name of St. George's bay. From this place they sailed to a little cove at several miles distance, to which they gave the name of *English Cove*. Here they found wood and water in great plenty, also  
rock

A. D. rock oysters and cockles of a very large size. Higher on the shore they procured cocoa nuts, and the upper part of the tree that bears them, which is called the cabbage. This cabbage is a white, crisp, juicy substance, which, used raw, tastes somewhat like a chestnut, but, when boiled, is superior to the best parsnip. For each of these cabbages they were obliged to cut down a tree, by which means they destroyed, in the parent stock, a great deal of cocoas, which are the most powerful antiscorbutic in the world. The ship's company, who were extremely afflicted with the disorder, recovered fast, and had an opportunity of examining the neighbourhood, where the country is high and mountainous, but covered with trees of various kinds, some of which are of an enormous growth, and probably would be useful for many purposes. Among others they found the nutmeg tree in great plenty, though the nuts were not then ripe, and appeared not to be of the best kind, owing perhaps to their growing wild, and being overshadowed by taller trees. The different kinds of palm, with the beetle nut tree, various species of the aloe, canes, bamboos, and rattans, grow with wild luxuriance. The woods abound with pigeons, doves, rooks, parrots, and a large bird with black plumage, that makes a noise somewhat like the barking of a dog. The people sent out to examine the country fell in with several habitations of the natives, which appeared by the shells that were scattered about them, and the fires half consumed, to have been but very lately deserted. From the meanness of these hovels, it appeared that the inhabitants stood low even in the scale of savage life.

*English Cove* lies a few miles from Wallis Island, which is distant about three leagues from Cape St. George, the latitude of which is 5 degrees south, and its longitude 152 degrees 19 minutes east, about two thousand five hundred leagues due west from the continent of America. The captain weighed anchor the 7th of September, having taken possession of this country, with all its islands, bays, ports, and harbours, for his majesty King George the Third. This was performed by nailing upon a high tree a piece of board, faced with lead, on which was engraved the English union flag, with the name of the ship and her

her commander, the name of the Cove, and the time of her A. D. coming in and sailing out of it. A boat had been sent out several times to examine the harbours of the coast, and from one of these expeditions returned with a load of cocoa-nuts, which she procured in a fine small harbour about four leagues west-north-west from English Cove. Of this harbour the captain received so agreeable accounts that he thought proper to visit it, and found that it was formed by two islands and the main. The largest, which is to the north-west, he called *Cocoa-nut Island*, and the smaller, which is to the south-east, he called *Leigh's Island*. His officers named the harbour in honour of their captain; it is by far the best station they had fallen in with during their long run from the Streights of Magellan. The captain would have continued here a sufficient time to give his people all the refreshments they wanted; if the lives of all on board, in their present unhealthy condition, the quantity of ship's provisions, and the shattered state of the vessel, had not depended upon their getting to Batavia while the monsoon continued to blow from the eastward.

He weighed anchor the 9th, but was again driven by winds and currents into St. George's bay, which, contrary to what had been supposed, he found instead of a bay to be a channel between two islands. This channel he found to be divided by a pretty large island, which he named in honour of the duke of York, and several small ones lying scattered around it. The land of the Duke of York's Island lies level, and has a delightful appearance; the center is covered with lofty woods, and near the shore are the houses of the natives, extremely numerous, built among groves of cocoa-nut trees, the whole forming a prospect the most beautiful and romantic that can be imagined. The largest of the two islands that are divided by the channel or streight, which is about eight leagues broad, the captain left in possession of its ancient name of New Britain. It lies on the south side, and there is upon it some high land, and three remarkable hills close to each other, which he called the Mother and Daughters. To the northern island he gave the name of New Ireland, and to the streight that of St. George's Channel. Continuing to steer along the coast of New Ireland, he disco-

A. D. 1768. *vered a large island, with a pleasant appearance, very populous,* which he named in honour of the Earl of Sandwich. It lies in latitude 2 degrees 53 minutes south, longitude 149 degrees 17 minutes east. All the time the ship lay off this island there was an incessant noise like the beating of a drum; and ten canoes put off from New Ireland, with about an hundred and fifty men on board. The people are black and woolly headed, but have not the flat noses and thick lips of the Africans. None of them would come on board, but conveyed such trifles as they exchanged for the nails and iron offered them by the English, upon the end of a long stick. The canoes were long, narrow, and neatly made: one of them could not be less than ninety feet; formed, however, of a single tree, rowed by three and thirty men, and without any appearance of sails. These negroes, though stark naked, except a few ornaments of shells upon their arms and legs, had their heads and beards abundantly covered with white powder.

The western extremity of New Ireland the captain named Cape Byron. It lies in latitude 2 degrees 30 minutes south, longitude 149 degrees 2 minutes east. Over against the coast of New Ireland, to the westward of Cape Byron, lies a fine large island, covered with trees, to which he gave the name of New Hanover. To the westward of New Hanover he discovered, at the distance of eight leagues, seven small islands, which were named the Duke of Portland's Islands; the middle of which lies in latitude 2 degrees 29 minutes south, longitude 148 degrees 27 minutes east. The ship was now clear of the streight, whose length from Cape St. George to Cape Byron is above eighty leagues. The necessity which pushed captain Garteret on this discovery may be very advantageous to future navigators, as St. George's Channel is a much better and shorter passage than round all the land and islands to the northward; and refreshments of various kinds may be procured from the natives inhabiting the opposite coasts of the channel, or the islands that lie near them, for beads, ribbands, looking-glasses, and especially iron tools and cutlery ware, of which they are immoderately fond.

The



The captain proceeded westward the 15th of September, and A. D. the same day discovered an island of considerable extent, with 1768. many others lying to the southward. From these many canoes, crowded with Indians, paddled to the ship: they made various signs, which were repeated, to show that whatever they meant the same was meant to them. In order to invite them on board, the ship's company held up whatever trifles they thought would give them pleasure; but they had no sooner come within reach of the people on deck, than they threw their lances at them with great force. It was necessary to repress their fury by firing small shot, with which one of them was killed, and the canoes rowed off with great expedition. In sailing along, many other canoes appeared, and behaved in the same hostile manner. From one, in which a man was killed by the shot of a musket, the rest precipitately leaped into the sea, which afforded an opportunity of seizing the canoe, which was full fifty feet long, though one of the smallest that had come out, and filled with fish, turtle, yams, and cocoa nuts. The ship being disengaged from this fierce and unfriendly people, pursued her course along the other islands, which are between twenty and thirty in number, and of considerable extent; one in particular would alone make a large kingdom. The captain, not having had an observation of the sun for several days, and there being strong currents, could not exactly ascertain their situation, but he judged the middle of the largest to lie in latitude 2 degrees 18 minutes south, longitude 146 degrees 44 minutes east, at the distance of five and thirty leagues from New Hanover. He called them *Admiralty* Islands, and, if his ship had been in better condition, and provided with proper articles for the Indian trade, he would have examined them with particular attention, especially as their appearance is very inviting, being clothed with a beautiful verdure, the woods lofty and luxuriant, interspersed with spots cleared for plantation, groves of cocoa-nut trees, and houses of the natives, who seem to be very numerous. With these islands it would be easy to establish a commercial intercourse, as the superiority of our fire-arms would soon persuade the natives that all contest is vain; and the traffic would be advantageous on both sides, as the Indians might be supplied with many arti-

A. D. cles which they are greatly in want of, and the English might  
 1768. in all probability be supplied with the valuable spices produced in the Moluccas; for the Admiralty Islands lie in the same degree of latitude, and the nutmeg tree was found on the coast of New Ireland, a soil comparatively barren and rocky.

Having passed these islands the ship continued her course west by north with a fine eastern breeze, and on the 19th discovered two small islands, both low land, level and green. The nearest the captain called Durour's Island. Its latitude is about 1 degree 14 minutes south, its longitude 143 degrees 21 minutes east. At no great distance is the other, which was called Maty's Island, and two others, still smaller, lying to the south-west, were called Stephen's Islands. All these have a beautiful green appearance, are covered with trees, and replenished with inhabitants. On the 25th of September the ship fell in again with land, which proved to be three islands, the largest lying fifty miles north of the line, and in longitude 137 degrees 51 minutes east. Several canoes soon came off, filled with the natives, who, after making signs of peace, came on board without the least appearance of fear or distrust. They sold their cocoa nuts with great pleasure for small pieces of iron. They are of the Indian copper colour, their features pleasing, their teeth remarkably white and even, of the common stature, nimble, vigorous and active in a surprising degree. They are not, like the other people on all the islands that had been visited, quite naked, though they had only a slight covering for the waist, which consisted of a narrow piece of fine matting. They offered to leave a certain number of their people as pledges, if the sailors would go on shore, to which they strongly urged them; and one of them would by no means leave the ship when she pursued her course; the captain carried him to Celebes, where, being taken ill at sea, he unfortunately died. The islands from which he had been taken were remarkably small and low, the largest being no more than five miles in compass. The captain gave them the name of *Freewill Islands*, from the sociable and benevolent disposition of the natives.

The remaining route of captain Carteret to the coast of Mindanao, and from thence to the island of Celebes, had been explored

explored by Dampier and other navigators. But the captain has A. D. rectified several mistakes which his predecessors had fallen into, 1768. particularly in the account of the streight of Macassar. He made the entrance of this streight the 14th of November, and anchored before the town of Macassar the 15th of December. In the neighbourhood of this place he obtained permission, after much altercation and many threats used with the Dutch governor, to continue a considerable time, until the crew were a little recovered from their languor and debility, and the ship put in a condition to undertake her voyage to Batavia. This voyage being successfully performed, the captain doubled the Cape of Good Hope, and had a pleasant passage to the island of St. Helena. He left this place the 24th of January, 1769, to prosecute his voyage to England; and after a month's navigation discovered a ship to leeward, in the south-west quarter, which hoisted French colours. When this ship was near enough to hail the Swallow, captain Carteret was surprized to hear the Frenchman mention his own name as well as that of his ship, inquiring after his health, and telling him, that after the return of the Dolphin to Europe, it was believed he had suffered shipwreck in the streight of Magellan, and that two ships had been sent out in quest of him. The captain asked in his turn who it was that was so well acquainted with all these particulars, and how this knowledge had been acquired. The Frenchman answered, that the ship was in the service of their East India company, commanded by Mr. Bougainville, returning from the isle of France, who had got an account of the voyage of the Dolphin and Swallow from the French gazette at the Cape of Good Hope. An offer was then made of supplying the Swallow with refreshments, which was a mere verbal civility, as the ship had immediately sailed from the same places at which Mr. Bougainville himself had been supplied; and it was asked if captain Carteret had any letters to send to France. As he happened to have several, which he had received from French gentlemen at the Cape, this furnished an occasion to Mr. Bougainville to send his boat on board, which was precisely what he desired. A young officer, dressed in a waistcoat and trowsers, but whose rank captain Carteret soon found to be superior to his appearance, came

A. D. came down to the cabin; and being asked several questions by 1768. captain Carteret, to which he replied with great readiness and ingenuity, contrived to introduce inquiries concerning the streights of Magellan, the hardships which the *Swallow* had suffered in her voyage, and other topics equally interesting. These questions the captain endeavoured to elude as long as it was possible; but the queries of the young Frenchman becoming too particular and troublesome, having desired to know on what side the equator the *Swallow* had crossed the south seas, the captain rose up abruptly with some marks of displeasure. His visitor was going to make an apology, to prevent which captain Carteret desired him to present his compliments to Mr. Bougainville, and in return for his obliging civilities, present him with one of the arrows with which the Indians had wounded some of the English.

When the captain came on deck he was asked by his lieutenant whether the Frenchman had entertained him with an account of his voyage. This led him to explain the general purport of their conversation, upon which the lieutenant observed, that the boat's crew had not kept their secret as well as their officer, but given sufficient intimation, that they had been round the world, mentioning the different places they had touched at, and many particulars of their voyage. This disingenuous artifice of Mr. Bougainville, to draw captain Carteret into a breach of his obligation to secrecy, was unworthy of that spirit of enterprize which led him to undertake so dangerous a navigation, which he has related with so much elegance.

According to his own account, he sailed from France in November, 1766, in the frigate *la Boudouse*; and having spent some time on the coast of Brazil, and at Falkland islands, got into the southern ocean, by the streights of Magellan, in January, 1768. In this ocean he discovered the four *Facardines*, the *Isle of Lanciers*, *Harpe Island*, *Thrum Cap*, and *Bow Island*. About twenty leagues farther to the west he discovered four other islands, and afterwards fell in with *Otaheite*, *isles of Navigators*, and *Forlorn Hope*, which to him were new discoveries. He then passed through between the *Hebrides*; discovered the *Shoal of Diana*, the *land of Cape Deliverance*; several small islands

Islands to the north; passed the coast of New Ireland; touched A. D. at Batavia; and arrived in France in March, 1769, about the 1768. same time that captain Carteret arrived in England.

The admiralty did not wait for his arrival to fit out another expedition, which was attended with circumstances peculiarly interesting. The brilliant discoveries of captain Wallis, who returned to England in May, 1768, inspired the most sanguine hopes of completing the great purpose for which all these voyages had been undertaken. Many southern lands were already discovered, which heightened the probability of finding at length the great *Terra Australis incognita*, which had been so long sought for in vain. Among the countries which Wallis had discovered and explored was the island of Otaheite, the situation of which appeared extremely proper for answering a particular purpose, which the admiralty had in their view in the present expedition, besides the general design of discovering unknown lands. The year 1769 was rendered remarkable by the transit of the planet Venus over the disk of the sun; a phenomenon of the greatest importance to the sciences of astronomy, geography and navigation; and which every where engaged the attention of the learned in those branches of knowledge. In the beginning of the year 1768 the royal society presented a memorial to his majesty, setting forth the advantages to be derived from accurate observations of this transit in different parts of the world; particularly from a set of such observations made in a southern latitude, between the 140th and 180th degrees of longitude, west from the royal observatory at Greenwich; but that the society were in no condition to defray the expence necessary for equipping vessels to convey the observers to their destined stations. In consequence of this memorial the admiralty were directed by his majesty to provide proper vessels for the purpose. Accordingly, the Endeavour bark, which had been built for the coal trade, was purchased and fitted out for the southern voyage, and the command of her intrusted to lieutenant (now captain) Cook, himself a distinguished member of the royal society, and appointed by his associates, in conjunction with Mr. Charles Green the astronomer, to make the requisite observations on the transit.

Captain

**A. D.** Captain Cook sailed from Deptford the 30th of July, 1768, with instructions to proceed directly to Otaheite; and, after the astronomical observations should be completed, to prosecute the design of making discoveries in the Pacific ocean, by proceeding southward to the latitude of 40 degrees, and if he did not find land to continue his voyage to the west, between the latitudes of 40 degrees and 35 degrees south, till he fell in with New Zealand, which he was directed to explore; and thence to return to England by such route as he should judge most convenient.

In executing these instructions, Mr. Cook endeavoured to make a direct course to Otaheite, and in part succeeded; but when he came within the tropic he fell in with several islands, which had not been before discovered. He remained three months at Otaheite, and then visited many neighbouring islands, till then unknown. On the 6th of October, 1769, he fell in with the east side of New Zealand, and continued exploring the coast of this country till the 31st of March, 1770. He then proceeded to New Holland, and surveyed its eastern coasts, which had not been before visited; and passing between its northern extremity and New Guinea, afterwards touched at the island of Savu, Batavia, the Cape of Good Hope and St. Helena, and arrived in England on the 12th of July, 1771.

Besides the astronomical purposes which were answered by this voyage, and the important discoveries of new lands, made in the course of the longest navigation hitherto undertaken, the expedition of captain Cook was distinguished by another circumstance particularly interesting to the lovers of philosophy. The expedition was adorned by the presence of Mr. Banks, a man of letters as well as of fortune, who was accompanied by Dr. Solander, an accomplished disciple of Linnæus. Both these gentlemen were remarkable for an extensive and accurate knowledge of natural history, and being otherwise men of liberal education and principles, they were led to make various observations, not only on the natural curiosities and productions, but on the manners, policy, religion and language of the several countries which they visited. Seldom have men of such talents possessed that spirit of daring enterprize which prompts to the discovery and examination of unknown lands. Seldom have  
distant

distant countries been visited and described by philosophers; for A. D. avarice and ambition, and not the thirst of knowledge, have generally excited to such undertakings men of a bold and hardy but of a narrow and illiberal spirit. The ingenious observations made during the course of the present voyage tend to fill up the picture of which former navigators had only sketched the outlines.

The reception which captain Cook and his companions met with from the Portuguese at Rio de Janeiro, where he put in the 13th of November in order to purchase provisions and necessaries, was most unworthy of the design in which they were engaged. That ignorant superstitious people could form no idea of the object of their voyage. The purpose of making philosophical discoveries they treated with the utmost contempt, and watched the persons of the English travellers with all the jealous severity of fear and ignorance. Mr. Cook continued his voyage to the Streights of Le Maire, which separate Staten Island from Terra del Fuego. He arrived at the entrance of the Streights the 14th of January, which is near the middle of summer in those parts. As the weather was calm, Mr. Banks was desirous of examining the coast of the main land, and ascending a mountain which appeared at a little distance in search of plants. This was effected; but so excessive is the cold in the southern hemisphere, that, at a degree of latitude which in the summer months is temperate in Europe, all those who undertook this expedition were in danger of being frozen to death; and several of Mr. Banks's attendants actually perished.

In this miserable climate the inhabitants appeared to be the most destitute and forlorn of all human beings. They have no dwelling but a wretched hovel of sticks and grass, which not only admits the wind; but the snow and the rain. They are destitute of every convenience that is furnished by the rudest art, having no implement even to dress their food. They have no other clothing than the skin of the guanicoe or seal, which is thrown over their shoulders, drawn over their feet, and worn round the waists of the women as a succedaneum for a fig-leaf. Shell-fish seems to be their only food, which being in no great plenty in any particular place, obliges them to wander perpetually

A. D. ally in small borders over those dreary and inhospitable regions, 1769. which appear so ill fitted to be the habitations of men. Yet these savage tribes are, perhaps, only miserable in the imaginations of those who survey them, and who, placing themselves in their situation, conceive what exquisite sufferings they would feel if reduced to the same manner of life. The wandering inhabitants of Terra del Fuego are contented with their lot. Though deprived of whatever is comfortable, they are studious to adorn their persons. Their faces are painted in various forms; the region of the eye generally white, and the rest of the face diversified with streaks of red and black.

The captain fell in with the island of Terra del Fuego about twenty leagues to the westward of the Streight of Le Maire. The Streight itself is about five leagues long and as many broad; and has a bay in the middle of it, which affords good anchorage, as well as excellent wood and water. The doubling of Cape Horn has been so much dreaded, that, in the general opinion, it is more eligible to pass through the Streight of Magellan; but captain Cook's experience seems to prove the contrary; for he was no more than thirty-three days in coming round the land of Terra del Fuego, from the east entrance of the Streight of Le Maire; whereas captain Wallis employed above three months in getting through the Streights of Magellan in the same season of the year.

Captain Cook, continuing his voyage in a north-westerly direction, observed the latitude, on the 24th of March, 1769, to be 22 degrees 11 minutes south, and longitude 127 degrees 55 minutes west. Some of the people, who were upon the watch in the night, reported that they saw a log of wood pass by the ship, and that the sea, which was rather rough, became suddenly as smooth as a mill-pool. However, they fell in with no land till the 4th of April, when an island of an oval form appeared at the distance of a few leagues. They approached it on the north side within a mile, but found no bottom with 130 fathom of line. The whole is covered with trees, especially palms and cocoa-nut trees; among the groves of which the natives were seen walking in great numbers. The captain named this Lagoon Island. It is situated in latitude 18 degrees 47 minutes south,



south, and longitude 139 degrees 29 minutes west. In pursuing A. D. his voyage westward he fell in with several other inconsiderable 1769. islands at no great distance from the former. These were Thrumb-Cap, The Groups, Bird Island, and Maitea, to which captain Wallis had given the name of Osnaburgh.

On the 11th of April land was seen a-head, which was known by its situation to be Otaheite, the same which is described in the voyage of captain Wallis, to which he gave the name of King George the Third's Island. When the ship came near to the shore, it was immediately surrounded by the natives in their canoes, who offered cocoa-nuts, fruit resembling apples, bread fruit, and some small fishes, in exchange for beads and other trifles. Soon after arrived other canoes, in which were some of those Indians who had maintained a good deal of intercourse with the crew of captain Wallis's ship, and who were immediately known to Mr. Gore, the second lieutenant, who had gone round the world with that captain. One of these ancient acquaintance came on board, and as soon as the ship was properly secured, went on shore with the captain and the other gentlemen. They were all received with many marks of friendship by the hospitable Indians, and a treaty was ratified between them by exchanging the green branches of a tree, which was the symbol of peace among many ancient and powerful nations. The ship continued on the coast of Otaheite three months, trading with the natives, and examining the island. The ordinary rate of traffic was a spike nail for a small pig, and a smaller nail for a fowl; a hatchet for a hog; and twenty cocoa nuts, or bread fruit, for a middling-sized nail. Looking-glasses, knives, and beads, are excellent articles of commerce, and for these every thing may be obtained which the natives can bestow. During the whole time that the English continued here, they lived in the most friendly intercourse with the Indians; and considered the island not as before in a cursory manner, but with a critical attention.

Though Otaheite lies within the tropic of Capricorn, it is one of the most healthy and delightful spots in the world. The heat is not troublesome, and the air is so pure that fresh meat will keep very well for two days, and fish one day. The winds

A. D. generally blow from the divisions between east and south; the tide rises but little, and being governed by the winds is extremely uncertain. The coast is of a bold elevation, rises like an amphitheatre, and the mountains every where covered with wood, present to the view the most captivating prospect. The stones all over this island appear to have been burnt; and there are other marks of violent concussions and subterraneous fires, by which the face of nature has been altered in this and the neighbouring isles. The exterior ranges of hills are sometimes barren, and contain a great quantity of yellowish clay, mixed with iron ore; but this excepted, there are no other indications of metals, or valuable minerals of any kind.

The soil of Otaheite is a rich black mold, producing spontaneously a great variety of the most excellent fruits; sugar canes, which the inhabitants eat raw; ginger, turmeric, and a great number of other excellent roots, which are unknown in other climates. The trees are the greatest curiosity of Otaheite. The Chinese paper-mulberry tree is that of which the natives make their cloth. The trunk of the bread-fruit tree, which furnishes nourishment to the whole island, is six feet in the girth, and about twenty feet to the branches. There is a species of the fig, the branches of which bending down, take fresh root in the earth, and thus form a congeries of trunks, united by a common vegetation, which have the appearance of one stock of astonishing magnitude. Another tree, covered with a dark-green foliage, bears golden apples, which resemble the anana or pine-apple in juiciness and flavour. The most beautiful tree in the world received the name of *Barringtonia*, the natives call it *huddoo*; it had a great abundance of flowers, larger than lilies, and perfectly white, excepting the tips of their numerous chives, which were of a bright crimson. The fruit, which is a large nut, has the property of various plants of tropical climates, of intoxicating fish, so that they come to the surface of the water, and suffer themselves to be taken by hand. There is a great variety of excellent fish, which, as they form the principal object of luxury, the catching of them is the main occupation of the natives. There are no venomous reptiles or troublesome insects, but ants and mosquitos. Besides poultry  
exactly

exactly like those of Europe, there are wild ducks; beautiful A. D. green turtle doves; large pigeons of a deep blue plumage; paroquets valued for their red falkers, and often seen tame in the houses of the natives. There are no quadrupeds in the island, but hogs, dogs and rats; all which are extremely numerous. 1769-

The persons of the inhabitants being examined with particular attention, there was no occasion to alter the idea which captain Wallis had given of them. Captain Cook rather seems to heighten the panegyric; and Mr. Bougainville affirms, that were a painter to delineate an Hercules or a Mars, it would be impossible to discover more advantageous models. The women of the lower ranks are of a smaller stature than the rest, which is attributed to their early and promiscuous intercourse with men; for the better sort, who do not gratify their passions in the same unbridled manner, are above the middle stature of the Europeans. The men of consequence in the island wear the nails of their fingers long, which they consider as a very honourable distinction, since only such people as have no occasion to work can suffer them to grow to that length. The women always cut their hair short round their heads. Both men and women have the hinder part of their thighs and loins marked with black lines in various directions, by striking the teeth of an instrument somewhat like a comb through the skin, and rubbing into the punctures a kind of paste made of soot and oil, which leaves an indelible stain. This custom, which is called tattowing, is common to all persons beyond the age of twelve years; and the legs of people of superior rank and authority are chequered with the same decorations. Both sexes are not only decently but gracefully clothed with the stuff above-mentioned. The dress of the better sort of women consists of several pieces; one is wrapped round the waist, so as to hang down in the form of a petticoat, and being of a thin pliable texture, displays an elegant figure to the greatest advantage. "The women of Otaheite," says Mr. de Bougainville, "have features as agreeable as those of the Europeans; and are unrivalled in the symmetry and beautiful proportion of their limbs. The men who live much on the water are of a redder complexion than those who chiefly reside on shore. Some have their hair brown,

A. D. "brown, red or flaxen, in which they are exceptions to all the  
1769. "natives of Asia, Africa and America, who have their hair  
"universally black."

Their houses are nothing more than a roof, scarcely four feet from the ground, raised on three rows of pillars, one row on each side, and one in the middle. The covering consists of palm leaves, the pillars of wood, and the floor is strowed with hay or covered with mats. These simple habitations contain no other furniture except a few blocks of wood, which serve them as pillows, and their ordinary apparel is made use of instead of blankets and sheets. The size of the house is proportioned to the number which constitutes the family, and is seldom occupied except during the hours of repose. In these dormitories it is the established rule for the master and mistress to sleep in the middle, round them the married people, in the next circle the unmarried women, and the servants at the extremity of the shed, or in fair weather in the open air.

They are quite unacquainted with the method of boiling water, as they have no vessels among them that will bear the heat of the fire. Their meat is always broiled or roasted. They use shells for carving, but eat with their fingers. Some attempted the use of the knife and fork, in imitation of the English, but we are told by Mr. Hawkesworth, that they could not guide these implements; by the mere force of habit, the hand came always to the mouth, while the food at the end of the fork went to the ear. Their general drink is water, or the milk of the cocoa nut. They have a plant called *ava avu*, of an intoxicating quality, which the men make use of sparingly; the women never; and they testified aversion for the strong liquors which were offered them. They eat alone, or at least only in company with a guest that happens to come on; and the men and women never sit down together to a meal. Persons of rank are constantly fed by their inferiors, frequently their women, and this custom is so strongly confirmed that a chief who dined on board the Endeavour would have returned without his meat, if one of the servants had not fed him. The origin of these singular customs has not been explained. The idea of cleanliness to which these people are so strongly attached, that they

they perform their ablutions several times every day, may perhaps A. D. account for the great men's requiring to be fed. But that a '1769- people remarkably fond of society, and particularly that of their women, should exclude its pleasures from the table, where, among all other nations, whether civil or savage, they have been principally enjoyed, is truly inexplicable. Captain Cook imagined this strange singularity among the inhabitants of Otaheite must have arisen from some superstitious opinion; but they constantly affirmed the contrary. They ate alone, they said, because it was right; but why it was right to eat alone they never attempted to explain.

These islanders, who ly on the ground, and inhabit huts exposed to all the inclemencies of the weather, are remarkably healthy and vigorous, and generally attain to old age, without feeling the inconveniencies of this melancholy period of life. Mr. de Bougainville describes an old man, whom they saw on their landing, who had no other character of old age, than that remarkable one which is imprinted on a fine figure. His head was adorned with white hair, and a long white beard; all his body was nervous and fleshy; he had neither wrinkles, nor showed any other token of decrepitude. This venerable man seemed displeased at the arrival of these strangers, retired without making any return to the courtesies which they paid him, and instead of taking part in the raptures which the multitude expressed, his thoughtful and suspicious air seemed to indicate a fear, that the society of a new race of men might disturb the uninterrupted happiness which he had so long enjoyed. They are utterly destitute of medical knowledge, which they hold in contempt; but they are good proficients in surgery, the operations of which they often experience to be useful. One of the English seamen, when on shore, ran a large splinter into his foot, which his companion, after giving him exquisite pain, vainly attempted to extract with his pen-knife. An old Indian, who happened to be present, called a man from the other side of the river, who, having examined the lacerated foot, fetched a shell from the beach, which he broke to a point with his teeth; with which instrument he laid open the wound, and extracted

A. D. tracked the splinter: whilst this operation was performing, the  
 1769. old man went a little way into the wood, and returned with  
 some gum, which he applied to the wound, upon a piece of the  
 cloth that was wrapped round him, and in two days time it was  
 perfectly healed. This gum was produced by the apple tree ;  
 the surgeon of the ship procured some of it, and used it as a  
 vulnerary balsam with great success.

The language of the inhabitants of Otaheite is soft and melodious, abounding with vowels, which renders its pronunciation easily acquired. It is almost totally without inflexion either of nouns or verbs ; but a sufficient acquaintance with it has not been attained to determine whether it is copious or otherwise. It was impossible to teach the Indians to pronounce the English names of their guests, but they did not fail to come as near to it as possible, the giving of the name being an indispensable ceremony, which they never omitted when they introduced a new acquaintance. They converted the English names into words resembling Spanish or Italian ; Cook they called Toote ; Hicks, Hete ; Mr. Gore, Toarro ; Dr. Solander, Torano ; Parkinson, Patini ; Mr. Monkhouse, a midshipman, they called Matté, which signifies in their language dead, because he commanded a party that killed a man for stealing a musket. The nearest imitation they could reach of king George, was by calling him Kibiargō. They are not destitute of genius for the sciences, though they have no opportunity of cultivating them. A map of Otaheite, engraved for captain Cook's first voyage, was taken out and laid before Tuahow the high admiral, without informing him any thing of what it was. He presently discovered its meaning, and was overjoyed to see a representation of his own country. These people have a remarkable sagacity in foretelling the weather, particularly the quarter from whence the wind will blow. In their long voyages they steer by the sun in the day, and in the night by the stars ; all of which they distinguish separately by names ; and know in what part of the heavens they will appear in any of the months, during which they are visible in their horizon ; nor are they less acquainted with the periods of their annual appearance. They reckon time by moons, thirteen of which compose the year. They divide the day and  
 the

the night, each into six parts. They judge of the time of the A. D. day by the height of the sun. It is said, that the highest number for which they have names is 200. They express the distance from one place to another by the time it would take to run over it. They entertain no notion of the baneful influence of comets, but they consider those meteors which are called shooting stars, as evil genii.

The government of the inhabitants of Otaheite is compared by Dr. Hawkesworth to the early state of every nation in Europe under the feudal system. There is a king or sovereign in each of the two peninsulas into which the island is divided; with the lands of the different districts, whose possessions are cultivated by their vassals and villeins. The king possesses far less authority over the whole society, than each chieftain possesses in his own district, and the nobles are nearer on a footing with their sovereign than the lower ranks are with the nobles. Intermarriages are not permitted between the nobles and the vulgar; every advantage and honour is confined to the former; and even such articles of food as are reckoned delicacies, pork, fish and fowl, are only to be used by the nobility. Of these there are different orders, as in all the feudal kingdoms. There are different liveries, so to speak, to distinguish these orders; and the rank of every individual is ascertained by the height at which their servants wear their sashes. Like the ancient nobility of Europe, they enjoy the right of private war; and each nobleman at the head of his vassals, repels injuries, and maintains his rights, by the decision of arms. Their influence, indeed, over their followers is most powerful. They have intelligence of every event; they receive notice of every crime that is committed; they bestow reward, inflict punishment, and their decisions are submitted to with the most passive and unreserved obedience. Otaheite, therefore, affords in miniature, the picture of two feudal kingdoms, for the whole inhabitants, including women and children, do not exceed 6000. One circumstance alone, as it is related by Dr. Hawkesworth, is peculiar to this people. The child of the prince, or of the baron, succeeds to the titles and honours of his father as soon as it is born; so that a baron who was yesterday distinguished by epi-

A. D. 1769. thets of honour, and approached with the ceremony of lowering the garments and uncovering the upper part of the body, is to-day, if his wife be delivered of a son, reduced to the rank of a private person; all marks of respect being transferred to the child, though the father still continues to possess and administer the estate. If this circumstance be authentic, it furnishes a remarkable distinction between the government of Otabeite and that of the feudal nations of Europe. In these, force generally prevailed over right. The weakness of age and sex often excluded from the succession those who were naturally intitled to it. The estate of a child or of a woman was often acquired by a distant collateral relation; even the destination of royalty proceeded not in a regular line, the uncle often usurping the rights of a son, the brother those of a daughter.

The religion of these islanders is not the circumstance which first attracts the attention of travellers. Captain Wallis, who first visited and described them, is inclined to believe, that they had not any religious worship or belief. But subsequent accounts inform us of their religious tenets, which are as superstitious and absurd as those of other pagan nations. They admit that great and primitive truth, that all is derived originally from one first cause. But they suppose the Supreme Being to have impregnated a rock, which brought forth the year; which daughter, embraced by the father, produced the thirteen months; which, in conjunction with each other, produced the days. In the same manner were the stars and all the other objects of nature created, so that the idea of generation runs through the whole, an idea impressed with peculiar force on the imagination of these Indians, who of all men are particularly the most addicted to the sexual pleasures. They believe the existence of the soul after death, and of a greater or less degree of happiness to be then enjoyed; but they are said to have no conception of a state of punishment or reward hereafter. The share of happiness in a future life, they imagine, will be proportioned not to the merit but to the rank of individuals; the nobles enjoying the first distinction of felicity, while their vassals and villeins must be satisfied, even in the region of spirits, with a subordinate lot. This religious tenet is evidently derived from their



their political usages. The priesthood, as in many ancient A. D. countries, is hereditary. The priests are professedly the men of science, but their knowledge is altogether frivolous, consisting in being conversant in the names and rank of the subordinate divinities, and the opinions concerning the origin of the universe, handed down from one generation to another, by real tradition, in detached sentences, and in a phraseology unintelligible to those who do not belong to the sacred families.

The general manners and character of the people are such as naturally result from the limited state of society in which they live, and the faint gradations of improvement to which they have attained. Their passions, like those of children, are violent, but transitory. They pass suddenly, yet without any apparent cause, from an excess of grief to the transports of joy. Their propensity to particular friendships, like that of all rude people, is strong; and their fidelity inviolable. When the English visited them for the second time, every Indian chose his friend. With a disposition naturally generous, they discovered a singular propensity to theft. Of this there are innumerable examples in all the accounts which are related of them. But perhaps it has not been sufficiently attended to, that their inclination to this vice might depend less on the depravity of their moral principles, than on their limited notions of property. Even after they had experienced the power of their new visitors, they continued to pilfer as assiduously as before; and persons who, in other respects, displayed no small elevation of character, had a particular predilection for riches acquired by stealth.

Another trait of their character, which had been in some measure mistaken by the first travellers into their country, is the licentiousness of their amours. Mr. de Bougainville and Dr. Hawkesworth assert, that there were no women in the island who had the smallest pretensions to chastity. This assertion, however, captain Cook discovered to be too general. The women of rank, that is, all the female noblesse, are not devoid of honour; although they do not imagine their inferiors ought to be condemned for yielding to promiscuous love. But, notwithstanding the exception which the captain has discovered, it must be acknow-

A. D. 1769. ledged, that their manners in this particular are such as could scarcely escape observation and censure. When the Dolphin first appeared on the coast, a great number of women appeared on the beach, and were very importunate with the men in the boat to come on shore. They stripped themselves naked, and endeavoured to allure them by many wanton gestures; and when they found, that notwithstanding all their endeavours to detain them, the boat was putting off, they pelted them with apples and bananas, shouting and showing every possible sign of derision and contempt. After this, canoes, with a number of women, came close by the side of the ship, where the same wanton gestures were repeated. A regular traffic being established on shore, it was settled that a river should separate the natives and the strangers, and a few only of the former should cross at a time, for the purpose of trading. Several young women were then permitted to cross the river, who, though they were not averse to the granting of personal favours, were tenacious of making the most of them. An iron nail was commonly the price of beauty; and in proportion to the charms of the damsel was the size of the nail which she received. The men scrupled not to promote this kind of dealing, for fathers and brothers would bring their daughters and sisters, for the purpose of prostitution to the sailors. When they presented the girl, they showed a stick of the size of the nail which was demanded for her, and he who came up to the price was intitled to the merchandize.

From the unbridled licentiousness of the inhabitants of this island, the French gave it the name of the new Cythera. When Mr. de Bougainville arrived on this shore, he was received with the same lascivious compliments which had been lavished on the English. "It was very difficult," says that officer, "with such seducing incitements, to keep at their work 500 young French sailors, who had been deprived of the sight of women for six months." Notwithstanding the endeavours used to keep the crew in order, the captain's cook found means to escape on shore. He had no sooner singled out a fair one, than he was immediately encircled with a large party of natives, who stripped him of his clothes from head to foot, and with  
great

great tumult and violent exclamations, examined every part of A. D. his body very minutely. When their curiosity had been fully 1769. gratified they restored his clothes, and handing the girl to him, signified by signs sufficiently expressive, that she was very much at his service. But by this time the ardour of the Frenchman had subsided, and every tumultuous passion was absorbed in that of fear. He intreated them, as the only favour they could bestow, to convey him on board, and he reached the ship more dead than alive.

When captain Cook lay off this shore, the women of Otaheite had so totally divested themselves of all apprehensions of ill treatment from the English sailors, that great numbers of the lower class remained on board the ship, after the numerous tribe of visitants had returned on shore in the evening. They ventured, without scruple, to pass the night on board, having studied the disposition of British seamen so well as to know that they ran no risk by confiding in them, but, on the contrary, might make sure of every bead, nail and hatchet that their lovers could muster. The evening, therefore, was as completely dedicated to mirth and pleasure, as if the ship had been at Spithead instead of Otaheite. Before it was perfectly dark the women assembled on the fore-castle, and one of them blowing a flute with her nostrils, all of them danced a variety of dances usual in their country, most of which were little consistent with European ideas of delicacy. Even the better sort are not entirely exempted from the national weakness. A chief named O-tai came on board, accompanied by his wife and two sisters; one of whom, named Morarai, was a most graceful figure, with the most delicate and beautiful *contours* of the hands and all above the zone; an ineffable smile sat on her countenance; her admiration at seeing the new objects aboard the ship displayed itself in the liveliest expressions; nor was she satisfied with looking round the decks, but descended into the officers cabins, attended by a gentleman of the ship. Having curiously examined every part, Morarai took a particular fancy to a pair of sheets which she saw spread on one of the beds, and made a number of fruitless attempts to obtain them from her conductor, to whom they belonged. He proposed a special favour as the condition,

A. D. condition. She hesitated some time, and at last, with seeming reluctance, consented. But when the yielding nymph was about to surrender, the ship struck violently on the reef, and the affrighted lover, more sensible to danger than to his fair mistress, quitted her unruffled charms, and flew upon deck. Repeated shrieks made the condition of the ship more alarming; every person on board exerted himself to the utmost on this emergency; at length they brought her again to float. When the danger was over, the officer bethought himself of his abandoned fair one; but on visiting his cabin he found her gone, and his bed stripped of its sheets. Morarai, however, had conducted the theft with such dexterity, as would have rendered it not only excusable but praise-worthy among the Spartans; having appeared on deck, and continued a considerable time, without exciting any mistrust of her acquisition. Four days after this adventure, the same officer, accompanied by several others, strolling about the country, came to the spot where O-tai and his fair sister resided. He thought it to no purpose to inquire after his lost bed linen, but chose rather to renew his solicitations to the lady. Beads, nails and various trifles were presented to her, which she readily accepted, but remained inflexible to the passionate addresses of her lover. She was already in possession of the sheets, which were the only wealth of sufficient value in her eyes to induce her to admit the transient embraces of a stranger; though she was accused by her countrywomen of admitting tow-taws, or men of the lowest rank, to her bed at night; and thus imposing on her brother, who would have been highly offended at the prostitution, not of her person, but of her dignity.

Though it be evident that the general character of the natives of Otaheite is extremely deficient in point of modesty, yet many of their customs, perhaps, are more immodest in appearance than in reality. The usual way of expressing their respect to strangers is by uncovering themselves to the middle; and a ceremony of a similar kind, but expressive only of respect, was used by Oorattao, a woman of rank, who visited Mr. Banks. After laying down several plantain leaves, a man brought a large bundle of cloth, of the manufacture of that country, which

which having opened, he spread it piece by piece upon the A. D. ground, in the space between Mr. Banks and his visitants. 1769. There were in all nine pieces, but having spread three pieces one upon another, the lady came forward, and stepping upon them, took up her garments all round her to the waist; she then turned about three times with great composure and deliberation, and with an air of perfect innocence and simplicity, which having done, she dropped the veil: when other three pieces were spread, she repeated the same ceremony; and so the third time, when the last three pieces were laid out; after which the cloth was again rolled up, and delivered to Mr. Banks, as a present from the lady, who, with her attending friend, came up, saluted him, and received such presents in return as he thought proper to offer them. Examples of this kind would lead us to believe, that the indecency of the natives of Otaheite, like that of most nations who have made small advancements in the arts of social life, proceeds less from a natural propensity to voluptuous excess, than from their imperfect notions of propriety. As what has appeared in them a strong inclination to the vice of stealing, arises, probably in some degree, from their limited ideas of property, so the apparent licentiousness of their manners, with regard to the fair sex, may proceed from a want of those cultivated notions of delicacy which prevail in polished countries. They see nothing indecent in the unreserved intercourse of the sexes; among them Venus is the goddess of hospitality; her worship is celebrated without mystery; and every passion is gratified before witnesses, without any more signs of shame, than appears in other countries when people associate at a meal. Yet it must not be dissimbled, that some of their customs discover a certain refinement in sensual pleasure, which is the characteristic of a degree of depravity that could hardly be expected in their simple state\*.

We return from this digression, in which we have endeavoured to reduce into a small compass the various accounts of Wallis, Cook, Foster, and Bougainville, concerning the manners and character of a people, whose discovery is one of the most

\* Hawke's, II. 115. Bougainville, 130, &c.

A. D. brilliant that has been made by modern navigation. The island; 1769. indeed, is more interesting to the philosopher than to the merchant, as it produces nothing that can be converted into an article of distant traffic, and can be useful only in affording refreshments to shipping, in their voyages through those seas: Captain Cook took his leave of Otaheite the 13th of July, 1769, having carried with him Tupia, one of the natives, who informed him that four of the neighbouring islands lay at the distance of less than two days sail. The names of these were Ulietea, Hyahaine, Otaha, and Bolabola. The first is about twenty-one leagues in circuit. Its productions are the same as those of Otaheite, nor is there any thing to distinguish the appearance and manners of its inhabitants from those of that island. The same may be said of the other three, as well as of the small islands of Tubai and Maurua; to all of which, as they lie contiguous to each other, captain Cook gave the name of the Society Islands, but did not think it necessary to distinguish them separately by any other names, than those by which they are known to the natives. They are situated between the latitudes of 16 degrees 10 minutes, and 10 degrees 55 minutes south, and between the longitudes of 150 degrees 17 minutes, and 152 degrees west, from the meridian of Greenwich. Ulietea and Otaha lie at the distance of two miles from each other, and are both inclosed within one reef of coral rocks, so that there is no passage for shipping between them. Ulietea affords a great many good harbours both on the east and west side; the entrances into them, indeed, are but narrow; but when a ship is once in, nothing can hurt her. The northermost, on the west side, in which the ship lay, is called Ohamaneno; the channel leading into it is about a quarter of a mile wide, and lies between two low sandy islands. This harbour, though small, is preferable to the others, because it is situated in the most fertile part of the island, and where fresh water is easily to be got. Otaha also affords two good harbours, one on the east side and the other on the west. The island of Bolabola lies north-west and by west from Otaha, distant about four leagues. It is surrounded by a reef of rocks, and several small islands, in compass together about eight leagues. This island is rendered remarkable

markable by a high craggy hill, which appears to be almost A. D. perpendicular, and terminates at the top in two peaks, one 1769. higher than the other. The captain did not take time to examine the harbours, but understood that Bolabola is not deficient in this particular. The island of Houabeine is situated in the latitude of 16 degrees 43 minutes south, and longitude 150 degrees 52 minutes west, distant from Otaheite about thirty-one leagues, and about seven leagues in compass. The harbour, which is called by the natives Owalle, lies on the west side, under the northernmost high land. The climate is more forward than that of Otaheite, and the country abounds with provisions. The inhabitants of all these islands treated the English with the most courteous hospitality; and testified great sorrow at the departure of their guests, which, however, did not take place till captain Cook had, with the usual formality, taken possession of their territories in the name of his majesty King George.

The captain left these shores the 9th of August, 1769, and met with nothing remarkable in his course till the 13th about noon, when he saw land bearing south-east, which Tupia told him was an island called Oheteroa. It is situated in the latitude of 22 degrees 27 minutes south, and in the longitude of 150 degrees 47 minutes west; about thirteen miles in circuit, and the land rather high than low, but neither populous nor fertile in proportion to the other islands which had been discovered in those seas. The chief produce seems to be a tree of which they make their weapons, called in their language Etoa; many plantations of it were seen along the shore, which is not surrounded, like the neighbouring islands, by a reef. The ship, or boats, made the whole circuit of Oheteroa, and found there was neither harbour nor anchorage about it; and the hostile disposition of the natives rendering it impossible to land without bloodshed, the captain determined not to attempt it, having no motive that could justify the risk of life.

Tupia mentioned several islands lying at different distances and in different directions from this, between the south and the north-west; and that, at the distance of three days sail, there was an island called Mancoa, or Bird Island. But so many discoveries of this kind had already been made, that the captain

A. D. purposed to spend no more time in search of islands, only in examining those which he happened to fall in with during his course, and to proceed southward in search of a continent. After a navigation of above six weeks land was discovered, which became the subject of much eager conversation, it being generally believed to be the *Terra Australis Incognita*. It was indeed the coast of New Zealand, which, ever since it had been discovered by the Dutch navigator Tasman, in 1642, has passed with most geographers for a part of the great southern continent. But captain Cook discovered that New Zealand consisted of two islands, divided by a Streight which is called after his name, and situated between the latitudes of 34 degrees 22 minutes and 47 degrees 25 minutes south, and between the longitudes of 166 degrees and 180 degrees east. This indefatigable navigator employed almost six months in fully exploring the coasts of both islands, of which he distinguished the several bays, rivers, capes, &c. by particular names. The first place where he anchored, on the northernmost island, he called Poverty Bay, because he found in it no refreshments, nor any thing except wood necessary for a ship. From hence he proceeded southward almost to the forty-first degree of latitude; and then reversing his course, sailed to the north-eastern point of land, and the broadest part of the whole island. He afterwards anchored in a port, situated in latitude 56 degrees 54 minutes south, and in longitude 184 degrees 4 minutes west, which, as he here made an observation of the transit of Mercury over the sun, he called Mercury Bay. The river which empties itself into the head of this bay he called the Thames, on account of its resemblance to the English river of that name. The banks of this river are represented as the most eligible place in those islands for settling a colony. More to the north-west is the Bay of Islands, so named from the great number of little islands that line its shores, forming several harbours equally safe and commodious, where there is depth and room for any number of shipping. Captain Cook, in doubling the northern extremity of New Zealand, met with a gale of wind, which, for its strength and continuance was such as he had never experienced before. He was three weeks in making ten leagues, and five weeks



weeks in making fifty. Having doubled this cape he proceeded A. D. along the western shore, which is extremely barren, consisting of banks of white sand, and which he therefore called the Desert Coast. The southern part of this coast bends towards the west, and is distinguished by a remarkably high peak of a most majestic appearance, covered with perennial snow. This peak, which received the name of Mount Egmont, is surrounded by a flat country of a pleasant appearance, clothed with wood and verdure. Having coasted this shore, the captain entered the Streight which divides the northern from the southern island. The latter underwent a very accurate survey. On the eastern coast he discovered a small island of a circular form, in the latitude of 43 degrees 44 minutes south, which he called Banks's Island. Proceeding southward he found the extremity of the land almost separated from the rest, it being joined by a long and narrow isthmus. The south-east side is of very dangerous navigation, on account of the ridges of rocks which rise for many leagues out of the sea. But the western extremity affords a commodious bay, with many harbours and coves scattered on different parts of it, where good anchorage may be found. On the shore, the soil is a deep black mold, formed of decayed vegetables. The trees gradually diminish in height and circumference, in receding from the shore, contrary to what is observed in other parts of the world. The captain having left the above mentioned bay, (which he called *Dusky Bay*), proceeded along the western coast, and entered Cook's Streights by the south-west point of land, behind which he anchored in a fine harbour, which he named Admiralty Bay. A little more to the eastward is Queen Charlotte's Sound, the entrance of which lies in latitude 41 degrees south, longitude 175 degrees 25 minutes east. This sound is three leagues broad at its mouth, and contains a collection of the finest harbours in the world. There are a great number of small islands lying at the entrance, and the land about it is so high as to be seen at the distance of twenty leagues. Here the sailors caught near three hundred weight of fish, and found wood and water in abundance. The captain ordered the water-casks to be filled in this neighbourhood, and prepared to leave New Zealand on the 30th of March, having

A. D. circumnavigated the whole coast, and made frequent excursions 1769. into the interior parts of the country.

These islands produce no quadrupeds but dogs and rats; there are few species of birds, and of those none, except perhaps the gannet, is the same with those of Europe. For this scarcity of animals upon the land, the sea makes an abundant recompence; every creek swarming with fish, equally wholesome and delicious. The ship seldom anchored in any station, or with a light gale passed any place, which did not afford enough of fish with hook and line to serve the whole ship's company; the seine seldom failed of producing a still more ample supply; and the variety of species was equal to the plenty. There are mackarel of many kinds, one of which is exactly the same as we have in England; and the other species of fish unknown to the European seas, were distinguished by the names of those kinds to which they bear the nearest resemblance, and they do honour to the comparison. Among the vegetable productions of New Zealand, the trees claim a principal place; there being forests of vast extent, full of the straightest, the cleanest, and the largest timber, any where to be seen. The trees here, however, are too hard and too heavy to be made into masts; but for every other purpose they seem to be exceedingly fit, on account of their size, their grain, and their apparent durability. There are few eatable vegetables in New Zealand, except wild celery, and a kind of cresses, which grow in great abundance upon all parts of the sea-shore. Of the esculent plants raised by cultivation, there are only yams, sweet potatoes, and cocoas. Gourds are cultivated by the natives for the sake of the fruit, which furnishes them with vessels for various uses. There is a plant that serves the inhabitants instead of hemp and flax, which excels all that are put to the same purposes in other countries. Of this plant there are two sorts; the leaves of both resemble those of flax, but their flowers are smaller, and their clusters more numerous; on one kind they are yellow, on the other a deep red. Of the leaves of these plants, with very little preparation, they make all their common apparel, as well as their strings, lines and cordage for every purpose, which are so much stronger than any thing we

can

can make with hemp, that they will not bear a comparison. A. D. Of the leaves of this plant, without any other preparation than 1769. that of splitting them into proper breadths, and tying the stripes together, they make their fishing nets, some of which are of an enormous size.

From the populousness of the sea-coasts, it was at first imagined, that the natives of New Zealand were extremely numerous. But it was afterwards found, that the interior parts were intirely destitute of inhabitants, or very thinly peopled; for the principal food of the New Zealanders consisting in fish, they are afraid to remove to a great distance from the chief source of their subsistence. The flesh of dogs, and the few vegetables above-mentioned are the only succedaneum they have to support life; so that when the dry stock fails in the season when few fish are caught, the distress is dreadful; and this calamity, which too often happens, accounts for a practice prevalent in New Zealand of fortifying every village with the utmost care, and the horrid custom of eating those who are killed in battle. The New Zealanders rather exceed the European size; are stout, well limbed and fleshy; exceedingly active and vigorous; and discover great manual dexterity in all the arts to which they apply. Their colour resembles the brown hue of the Spaniards; the women have not a feminine delicacy in their appearance, but their voice is remarkably soft; and by this they are principally distinguished, the dress of both sexes being the same. This dress is to a stranger the most uncouth that can be imagined. It is made of the leaves of the hemp plant, split into three or four slips, interwoven with each other into a kind of stuff between netting and cloth, with all the ends, which are eight or nine inches long, hanging out on the upper side. Of this singular cloth two pieces serve for a complete dress; one of them is tied over their shoulders with a string, and reaches as low as the knees; to the end of this string is fastened a bodkin of bone, which is easily fastened through any two parts of this upper garment to keep them together. The other piece of cloth, or lower garment, is wrapped round the waist, and reaches nearly to the ground. When they have only the upper garment on, (for the lower is not so constantly worn), and sit upon their  
hams,

A. D. hams, they bear a resemblance to a thatched house; but 1769. however ugly their dress, it is a proper defence against the inclemencies of the weather to men who often sleep in the open air.

These people being inured to war, and accustomed to consider every stranger as an enemy, were always disposed to attack the English until they were intimidated by their manifest superiority. But when they were convinced of the power of fire-arms, and observed the clemency of their enemies in forbearing to make use of these dreadful weapons, except in their own defence, they became at once friendly and affectionate; and when an intercourse was established, were rarely detected in any act of dishonesty. They excel the inhabitants of Otaheite as much in modesty, as they fall short of them in the cleanliness of their persons, and the convenience of their habitations. The women, however, were not impregnable; but the terms and manner of compliance were as decent as those in marriage among us, and according to their notions, the agreement was as innocent. The consent of friends was necessary to obtain the personal favours of a young woman, and by the influence of a proper present this consent might generally be obtained.

The ingenuity of these people appears principally in the construction and management of their canoes, and in whatever relates to war or fishing. The larger canoes are 68 feet long, 5 feet broad, and 3 and a half feet deep; each side consisting of one intire plank 63 feet long, fitted and lashed to the bottom with great dexterity and strength. They have no defensive armour; although they have a great variety of those which are fitted for destruction. The principal of these are spears, darts, battle-axes, and the patoo-patoo, which is fastened to their wrists by a strong strap, lest it should be wrenched from them, and which the principal people generally wear sticking to their girdles, considering it as a military ornament, and part of their dress, like the poniard of the Asiatic, and the sword of the European. Tillage, weaving, and the other arts of peace seem to be best known and most practised in the northern part of this country. They have an instrument which serves at once for spade and plough. The ground is rendered as smooth as in a garden,

garden, and every root has its small hillock, ranged in a regular A. D. quincunx by lines, which were seen with the pegs remaining in 1770. the ground. The religion, government and language of the New Zealanders bear a remarkable resemblance to those of the natives of Otaheite. Tupia understood their discourse, and was perfectly understood by them. This similarity of dialogue proves a common origin; but which of the two countries was first peopled; whether they were peopled from one another, or both from some more ancient mother-land; and what this land is—are questions which in all probability will never be resolved.

Captain Cook sailed from New Zealand the 31st of March, 1770, and made the coast of New Holland the 19th of April. It was in latitude 37 degrees 58 minutes south, and longitude 210 degrees 39 minutes west, when he first discovered land. The southernmost point of land in sight at this time was judged to lie in latitude 38 degrees, longitude 211 degrees 7 minutes, beyond which, although the weather was very clear, nothing could be observed. The great body of Van Diemen's land, however, ought, according to the maps, to have borne due south; but the captain not having seen it, does not determine whether it joins the point now discovered or not. Standing to the northward he observed a bay, which seemed to be well sheltered from all winds, and into which he determined to go with the ship. There he anchored in the afternoon under the south shore, about two miles within the entrance, in six fathom water, the south point bearing south-east, and the north point east. This place was a-breast of a small village consisting of about six or eight houses; and while the sailors were preparing to hoist out the boat, they saw an old woman, followed by three children, come out of a wood. She was loaded with firewood, and each of the children had also its little burden. She often looked at the ship, but expressed neither fear nor surprise. Some canoes returned from the fishing; the men landed, and the old woman having kindled a fire, they began to dress their dinner, to all appearance wholly unconcerned about the ship. They were all stark naked, the woman herself being destitute even of a fig leaf. It was natural to imagine that these savages, who seemed to pay no regard to the ship's coming into the bay, would

A. D. would have paid as little attention to the people's coming on shore. But as soon as the boat approached the rocks, two of the men came down upon them to defend their coast, and the rest ran away. Each of the two champions was armed with a lance about ten feet long, and a short stick, which he seemed to handle as if it was a machine to assist him in throwing his lance. They called out in a loud harsh tone, and in a language which none of those in the boat, although Tupia was of the party, understood a single word. The courage of these Indians was remarkable, as they were but two against forty in the boat; which the captain ordered to lie on her oars, while he endeavoured to obtain the good-will of his opponents by throwing them nails, beads, and other trifles, which they took up, and seemed to be well pleased with. When he made signs to them that the ship wanted water, they waved with their hands, which he interpreted as an invitation to land. But this was not their meaning, for when the boat began to advance they renewed their opposition. One appeared to be a youth of nineteen or twenty, and the other a man of middle age; both of such determined obstinacy that it was necessary to fire a musket between them. Upon the report the youngest dropped a bundle of lances upon the rock, but recollecting himself in an instant, he snatched them up again with great haste, and threw a stone at the boat. A second musket was fired, which struck the oldest on the legs, who immediately ran to one of the houses distant about an hundred yards, and returned with a shield or target for his defence. A third musket was fired before they betook themselves to flight, and left the boat master of the shore. Here there was abundance of water, and such a variety of plants, that the captain gave it the name of Botany Bay. It lies in latitude 34 degrees south, and longitude 152 degrees 37 minutes east. The country in general is level, low and woody. There are two kinds of trees, larger than the English oak; one of them yields a reddish gum like *sanguis draconis*, and the wood is heavy, hard, and dark coloured. The woods abound with birds of an exquisite beauty, particularly of the parrot kind; and crows exactly the same with those in England. About the head of the harbour, where there are large flats of sand

land and mud, there is great plenty of water-fowl; and on the A. D. banks themselves are vast quantities of oysters, muscles and cockles, which seem to be the principal subsistence of the inhabitants. 1770.

The captain having left this place, where he could establish no intercourse with the natives, proceeded northwards in order to examine the eastern coast of New Holland, and to distinguish by name the more remarkable places that he met with in his voyage. Having passed what he called Hervey's Bay, distinguished by Mangrove trees, he anchored in Bustard Bay, in latitude 24 degrees 4 minutes south; longitude 151 degrees 42 minutes east. He gave it that name from the great numbers of birds of the bustard species, as large as turkeys, one of which weighed seventeen pounds and a half, and was the most delicate bird that had been met with during the whole voyage. Here are oysters in great numbers, and of various kinds; among others the hammer oyster, and abundance of small pearl oysters. And captain Cook says, that if in deep water there is equal plenty of such oysters at their full growth, a pearl fishery might be established to very great advantage. Proceeding about two degrees farther north, he anchored again in *Thirsty Sound*. From the great variation in the needle, when brought on shore, and from several other observations at this place, it seems probable that iron ore abounds in the hills. Along the whole coast the sea conceals shoals, which suddenly project from the shore, and rocks that rise abruptly like a pyramid from the bottom.

Off *Cape Tribulation*, which lies in latitude 16 degrees 6 minutes south, and longitude 146 degrees 39 minutes east, our intrepid and hitherto successful adventurers were exposed to the most imminent danger. On the 10th of June, at eleven o'clock at night, the ship suddenly struck against a coral rock, and became immoveable, except by the heaving of the surge, which beating her against the craggs of the rock on which she lay, caused so violent a concussion that it was with the utmost difficulty any one on board could stand on his legs. At the dawn of day land appeared at eight leagues distance, without any island in the intermediate space upon which they might be set on shore by the boats, and afterwards proceed to the main, if the ship should go to pieces: the wind, however, died away, till it

A. D. became a dead calm, by which the ship escaped instant, and  
1770. otherwise inevitable, destruction. At eleven in the forenoon it was high water, but so much shorter was the day-tide than that of the night, that notwithstanding the ship had been lightened near fifty tons, she did not float by a foot and a half. Thus disappointed, they proceeded to lighten her still more, by throwing overboard every thing that could possibly be spared. The water now began to rush in so fast, that two pumps could scarcely keep her free. At five in the afternoon the tide again began to rise, and with it the leak increased so fast that it was necessary to man two more pumps, of which one only could be wrought. Three of the pumps, however, being kept going, the ship righted at nine; but by this time the leak had gained so considerably, that it was imagined she must go to the bottom as soon as she ceased to be supported by the rock. The floating of the ship therefore was anticipated, not as an earnest of deliverance, but as a forerunner of destruction. The boats were not capable of carrying all on shore, where, should any of the crew be able to arrive, their fate would be still more melancholy than that of those who perished in the shipwreck. Banished on a coast where even nets and fire-arms could scarcely furnish the means of subsistence, and possessing the means of no effectual defence against the natives, they must speedily fall a prey to indigence or ferocity, or languish during the remainder of life in a desolate wilderness, without the hope of any domestic comfort, and cut off from the society of men. To those only who have waited in such a suspense, death has approached in his wildest terrors. While every one was reading his own sensation in the countenance of his companions the ship floated, and was heaved into deep water. It was no small consolation to find that she did not now admit more water than she had done upon the rock. By the gaining of the leak upon the pumps there were no less than three feet nine inches water in the hold; and the men having endured excessive fatigue of body, and agitation of mind, for more than twenty-four hours, and having but little hope of succeeding at last, began to flag, when this favourite circumstance again animated their vigour, and made them exert the most extraordinary efforts. But none of them could work at the pumps above five or six minutes together, and then, being totally exhausted,



hausted, they threw themselves down upon the deck, though a A. D. stream of water was running over it from the pumps several 1770. inches deep. When those who succeeded them had worked their spell, and were exhausted in their turn, they threw themselves down in the same manner, and the others starting up renewed their labour. At eleven o'clock a breeze from the sea springing up, the ship was got under sail, and stood for the land. The exact situation of the leak could not be discovered, and therefore it was impossible to stop it within, and it was as impossible to continue that degree of labour, by which the pumps had been made to work. In this situation a happy expedient was adopted. It is called *sothering* the ship, and is done by taking a large studding-sail, on which a quantity of oakum and wool chopped small and mixed together, was stitched down in handfuls as lightly as possible; over this the dung of sheep and other filth was spread; and the sail, thus prepared, was hauled under the ship's bottom by ropes, which kept it extended. When it came under the leak, the suction which carried in the water, carried in with it the oakum and wool from the surface of the sail, which in other parts the water was not sufficiently agitated to wash off. This contrivance succeeded so happily, that one pump was able to reduce the water from the leak: and so susceptible are mankind of sudden joy whenever so partially relieved from imminent danger, that scarcely greater transport could have been felt, if they had been arrived into a safe harbour, than this favourable alteration occasioned. At six in the evening the ship was brought to an anchor for the night in seventeen fathom water, at the distance of seven leagues from the shore, and one from the ledge of rocks upon which she had struck. The next morning she came to an anchor within two miles of the shore, no harbour having been discovered. But the day following was most propitious by the discovery of a harbour to leeward, most excellently adapted to the purpose for which it was wanted; and what was no less fortunate than remarkable, in the whole course of the voyage no place had been seen which would have afforded the same relief to the ship in the situation she then was. Three whole days intervened before a favourable wind arose to carry them into their destined haven, in which time they found leisure and in-

A. D. clication to reflect, that there was nothing but a lock of wool, 1770 between them and destruction. At length these buffeted adventurers set their impatient feet on land, after giving the strongest proof of a manly, inflexible firmness; for, says captain Cook, "Upon this occasion I must observe, both in justice and gratitude to the ship's company and the gentlemen on board, that, although in the midst of our distress, every one seemed to have a just sense of his danger, yet no passionate exclamations or frantic gestures were heard or seen; every one appeared to have the most perfect possession of his mind, and every one exerted himself to the utmost with a quiet and patient perseverance, equally distant from the tumultuous voice of terror, and the gloomy inactivity of despair\*." Their change of situation was now visible in every countenance, for it was most sensibly felt in every breast. They had sailed three hundred and sixty leagues, with a man continually in the chains heaving the lead, which perhaps never happened to any other vessel. They had been three months entangled among shoals and rocks that every moment threatened them with destruction; frequently passing the night at anchor, within hearing of the surge that broke over them; sometimes driving towards it even while their anchors were out, and knowing that if by any accident, to which an almost continual tempest exposed them, they should not hold, every person on board must inevitably perish.

The harbour which afforded them relief in this extreme emergency, they named after their vessel *Endeavour River*. It lies in latitude 15 degrees 26 minutes south, and its longitude by observation is 214 degrees 42 minutes 30 seconds west. It is only a small bar harbour, or creek, which runs in a winding channel three or four leagues inland, and at the head of which there is a small brook of fresh water. There is not depth of water for shipping above a mile within the bar, and at this distance only on the north side, where the bank is so steep for near a quarter of a mile, that a ship may lie afloat at low water, so near the shore as to reach it with a step, and the situation is extremely convenient for heaving down; but at low water the depth upon the bar is not more than nine or ten feet, nor more

\* Hawkesworth, Vol. III.

than 17 or 18 at the height of the tide; the difference between A. D. high and low water at spring tides, being about 9 feet. At 1779 the time of new and full moon it is high water between 9 and 10 o'clock. This part of the coast is so barricaded with shoals as to make the harbour exceedingly difficult of access; the safest approach is from the southward, keeping the main land close upon the board all the way; and the situation of the harbour may always be found by the latitude, which has been very accurately laid down.

The captain having refitted at this place, where the principal refreshment to be procured was turtle, and a plant called in the West Indies, Indian kale, set sail the beginning of August, to examine the northern extremity of the country. The rocks and shoals off this coast are more dangerous, perhaps, than in any part of the globe; for here are reefs of coral rising like an immense wall, almost perpendicularly out of the sea; always overflowed at high water, and at low water in many places, dry. The enormous waves of the vast southern ocean meeting with so abrupt a resistance, break with inconceivable violence, in a surf which no rocks or storms in the northern hemisphere can produce. The danger of navigating the unknown parts of this ocean was greatly increased to our adventurers, by their having a crazy ship, and being short of provisions and every other necessary. "Yet," says captain Cook, "the distinction of the first discoverers made us cheerfully encounter every danger, and submit to every inconvenience; and we chose rather to incur the censure of imprudence and temerity, which the idle and voluptuous so liberally bestow upon unsuccessful fortitude and perseverance, than leave a country which we had discovered, unexplored, and give colour to a charge of timidity and irresolution\*."

The captain resolved to keep the main land on board in his future route to the northward; because, if he had gone without the reef, it might have carried him so far from the coast as to prevent his being able to determine whether this country joined to New Guinea. This was a question which former navigators had left undecided, and which captain Cook was determined to

\* Idem. *ibid.*

A. D. decide. In the execution of this enterprize, he braved such  
 1770. dangers as would have appalled the resolution of any man whose spirit for discovery had not extinguished all regard to personal safety. He found the two countries to be divided by a narrow sea, or streight, the north-east entrance of which lies in the latitude of 10 degrees 30 minutes south, and in the longitude of 218 degrees 36 minutes west. It is formed by the northern extremity of New Holland, and a congeries of islands, which, it is probable, extend all the way to New Guinea. These islands differ very much in height and circuit, and many of them seemed to be well clothed with herbage and wood, and well peopled with inhabitants.

To this channel or passage the captain gave the name of Endeavour Streights. Its length from north-east to south-west is ten leagues, and its breadth five leagues, except at the north-east entrance, where it is less than two miles, being contracted by the islands which ly there. On one of these islands the captain took possession of the eastern coast of New Holland, from the latitude of 38 degrees to 10 degrees 30 minutes south, in the name of his majesty king George the Third, and distinguished that immense extent of country by the appellation of *New South Wales*. The ascertaining of the division between New Holland and New Guinea was the last discovery made by captain Cook in this voyage. He was now arrived in seas which had been already navigated, and where every coast had been laid down by Dutch or Spanish navigators. Instead, therefore, of following this judicious and enterprizing adventurer in his navigation to the isle of Java, and his voyage homeward, it is proper to look back, and consider the information that may be derived from his discoveries relative to New Holland.

This immense island, for such is the title by which it seems to be improperly distinguished, exceeds in magnitude the habitable parts of the continent of Europe; extending from 10 degrees to 44 degrees south, between 110 degrees and 154 degrees east. It received the name of Holland from its having been chiefly explored by Dutch navigators. The land first discovered in those parts was called *Eendragt*, or Concord Land, from the name of the ship which made the discovery in 1716. Two years  
 after,

after, another part of this coast was discovered by Zeachen, A. D. who gave it the name of *Arnheim* and *Diemen*, though a different part from what received the name of *Diemen's Land* from Tasman; the latter being the southern extremity of the island, whereas the former lies in 15 degrees south. Van Meitz, Carpenter, and Dampier discovered different parts of the coast; but our information derived from all these adventurers was nothing in comparison of what we have received from captain Cook. 1770.

The whole eastern coast of New Holland is well watered by brooks and springs, but there are no great rivers. The face of the country, every where bleak and barren, is considerably less so towards the south, where the trees are taller, and the herbage richer; but no underwood is any where to be seen. There are but two sorts of timber trees, the gum tree and the pine; the esculent plants are few, but there are a variety of such as gratify the curiosity of the botanist. The species of birds are numerous, and many of exquisite beauty. Venomous serpents abound, and great variety of reptiles, most of which are harmless. The greatest natural curiosity in this country is the ant, of which there are several sorts. One is green, and builds its nest upon trees, by bending down the leaves, and gluing the points of them together, so as to form a purse. The viscus used for this purpose is an animal juice, which nature has enabled them to elaborate. Thousands of these busy insects were seen using all their strength to hold the leaves in a proper position, while other industrious multitudes were employed within, in applying the gluten. "To satisfy ourselves," says captain Cook, "that the leaves were bent and held down by these diminutive artificers, we disturbed them in their work, and as soon as they were driven from their station, the leaves in which they were employed sprung up with a force much greater than we could have thought them able to conquer by any combination of their strength. But though we gratified our curiosity at their expence, the injury did not pass unrevenge'd, for thousands immediately threw themselves upon us, and gave us intolerable pain with their stings, especially those which took possession of our necks and our hair, from which they were not easily driven." There is another species, possessing no power  
of

A. D. of tormenting, and resembling the white ants of the East Indies. These construct nests upon the branches of trees three or four times as big as a man's head; the materials of which are formed of small parts of vegetables kneaded together with a glutinous matter, with which nature has furnished them. Upon breaking the outside crust of this dwelling, innumerable cells, furnished with inhabitants, appear in a great variety of winding directions, all communicating with each other, and with several apertures which lead to other nests upon the same tree. They have also another house built upon the ground, generally at the root of a tree, and formed like an irregularly sided cone, sometimes more than six feet high, and nearly as much in diameter. The outside of these is composed of well tempered clay, about two inches thick, and within are the cells, which have no opening outward. Between these two dwellings, one of which is their summer, and the other their winter residence, there is a communication by a large avenue, or covered way leading to the ground by a subterraneous passage. The fish here are of kinds unknown to Europe, except the shell-fish and the mullet. Upon the shoals and reef are the finest green turtle in the world, and oysters of various kinds, particularly the rock oyster, and the pearl oyster. In the rivulets and salt creeks are alligators.

This extensive country is very thinly inhabited, and that by men in the lowest stage of savage life. On the coast the natives never appeared in larger companies than thirty together, and the ground being entirely uncultivated, they drew their principal subsistence from the sea. It is probable that the inland parts of the country are totally destitute of inhabitants. The only tribe with which any intercourse was established, consisted of 21 persons, 12 men, 7 women, a boy and a girl. The men are middle sized, clean limbed, and remarkably vigorous and nimble. Their countenances are expressive; their voice soft and effeminate; their bodies encrusted with dirt, which makes them appear almost as black as negroes. They crop their black hair, and keep their beards short by singeing them. The women were never seen but at a distance, for when the men crossed the river to the ship they left them behind. Neither sex have any conscious sense of indecency in discovering the whole body. They received

ved the things that were given them, but were insensible to all A. D. the signs that were made that something was expected in return. 1770. Many of the trinkets that had been given them were afterwards found thrown negligently away in the woods, like the playthings of children, which please only when they are new. The bodies of many were marked with large scars, inflicted with some blunt instrument, and which they signified by signs to have been memorials of grief for the dead. There was no appearance of a town or village in the whole island; their houses were framed without art or industry; some of them only sufficient for a man to stand upright in, but not large enough for him to extend his length in any direction. They are built with pliable rods, about the thickness of a man's finger, in the form of an oven, and covered with palm leaves and bark. The door is a large hole. Under these houses or sheds they sleep, coiled up with their heels to their head, in which position one of the houses will hold three or four persons. Towards the north of the island these houses were made still slighter; one side being entirely open, and none of them above four feet deep. These hovels were set up occasionally by a wandering hord, in any place that would furnish them for a time with subsistence, and left behind them when they removed to another spot. When they mean to continue only a night or two at a place, they sleep without any shelter except the bushes and grass, the latter of which is here near two feet high. They have a small bag, about the size of a moderate cabbage net, which the men carry upon their back by a string that passes over their heads. It generally contains a lump of paint and rosin, some fish-hooks and lines, shells of which their hooks are made, a few points of darts, and ornaments of shells and bones, with which they adorn their wrists and noses. This is the whole inventory of the richest man among them. They are unacquainted with the use of nets in fishing. Their fish-hooks are neatly made, and some of them extremely small. For striking turtle they have a peg of wood, about a foot long, and well bearded; this fits into a socket at the end of a staff of light wood, as thick as a man's wrist, and eight feet long. To the staff is tied one end of a loose line, about four fathoms long, the other end of which is fastened to

A.D. the peg. To strike the turtle the peg is fixed into the socket ;  
 1770 and when it has entered his body, and is retained there by the  
 barb, the staff flies off, and serves for a float to chase their vic-  
 tim in the water. It assists also to tire him, till they can over-  
 take him with their canoes, and haul him ashore. Their lines  
 are made of the fibres of a vegetable, and are from the thick-  
 ness of half an inch to the fineness of an hair. They bake their  
 provisions by the help of hot stones, like the inhabitants of the  
 south sea islands. They produce fire with great facility, and  
 spread it in a wonderful manner. For this purpose they take two  
 pieces of dry soft wood. The one is flat, the other a stick with  
 an obtuse point at one end. This they press upon the other, and  
 turn it nimbly by holding it between both hands as we do a  
 chocolate mill. By this method they get fire in less than two  
 minutes, and from the smallest spark increase it with great speed  
 and dexterity. " We have often seen," says captain Cook,  
 " one of them run along the shore, to all appearance with no-  
 " thing in his hand, who stooping down for a moment, at the  
 " distance of every fifty or an hundred yards, left fire behind  
 " him, as we could see, first by the smoke, and then by the  
 " flame among the drift wood, and other litter that was scat-  
 " tered along the place. We had the curiosity to examine one  
 " of the planters of fire when he set off, and we saw him  
 " wrap up a small spark in dry grass, which, when he had run  
 " a little way, having been fanned by the air which his motion  
 " produced, began to blaze. He then laid it down in a place  
 " convenient for his purpose, inclosing a spark of it in another  
 " quantity of grass, and so continued his course." Their wea-  
 pons are spears or lances ; some have four prongs pointed with  
 bone and barbed. To the northward the lance has but one  
 point ; the shaft is made of cane, straight and light, from eight  
 to fourteen feet long, consisting of several joints, where the  
 pieces are let into each other and bound together. The points  
 of these darts are either of hard heavy wood, or bones of fish :  
 those of wood are sometimes armed with sharp pieces of broken  
 shells stuck in, and at the junctures covered with rosin. The  
 canoes to the northward are not made of bark, but of the trunk  
 of a tree hollowed by fire ; and none of them carry more than  
 four



four people. The only tools seen among them are the adze, A. D. wretchedly made of stone; some small pieces of stone in the 1770. shape of a wedge; a wooden mallet, and some awkward instruments, or rather fragments of shells and corals. The uncultivated state of the inhabitants of New Holland; their total ignorance of agriculture, and the arts most necessary to human life, accounts for their being found in very small numbers together. They could not live in large societies without being exposed to perish for want of the necessaries of life. But it is hard to say how there comes to be so very few of these little wandering communities in a country of such amazing extent; and whether they are thinned by civil broils, excited by the horrid appetite of devouring each other, that prevails in New Zealand, or that their population is prevented by any other causes, cannot be ascertained. Though their country is at so little distance from New Guinea, they have never in all probability visited that island. If they had, the cocoa nuts, bread fruits, plantains and other vegetables which abound there, would naturally have been transplanted to New Holland. But no traces of them are to be found; and the miserable inhabitants, destitute of all necessaries but what they procure by fishing, unacquainted with the use of clothes to defend them against the rigour of the elements, and unprepared to live in such numbers together, as might enable them to obtain the smallest degree of knowledge even in the rude arts of uncultivated life, are reduced to the lowest condition in which the human species have ever been discovered in any part of the globe. Yet men sunk in this humiliating state, present us with the rudiments of all the arts and passions which distinguish the greatest and most polished nations. Their contrivances for fishing prove them capable to attain the highest pitch of mechanical ingenuity. Their regard to separate property shows them as susceptible of avarice as they are sensible to the dictates of justice; and their attempts, however awkward, to adorn their persons, indicate a desire to please, and to render themselves mutually agreeable. One advantage of these voyages into distant lands is to furnish materials for the history of man. They prove, beyond the possibility of dispute, the elevation and dignity of his nature; for how unfor-

A. D. fortunate soever his external circumstances, he discovers himself, 1770. by the plainest marks, to possess the seeds of all those various attainments which distinguish the heroes and sages of the most enlightened periods.

It is equally agreeable to the writer and reader to dwell on the brilliant and useful discoveries of British navigators in distant parts; and it is extremely mortifying to be obliged to return from this pleasing theme, to record the unhappy measures of the British administration, which have involved the navy, the army, and the whole empire in circumstances not less disgraceful than calamitous and afflicting. It would not, however, be agreeable to the truth of history entirely to ascribe the distressing scenes which followed, to the negligence and incapacity of ministers. Notorious as these have appeared, the situation and behaviour of the nation at large, seemed to forebode some fatal calamity. Intoxicated with more than expected prosperity, the people, at the close of the late war, were seized with an extravagant degree of giddy insolence, which made them despise the rest of mankind. In an overgrown and wealthy capital, where every capricious absurdity is apt to be carried to the most vicious excess, the vulgar were taught to spurn at regularity, subordination and law. From resentment, envy, and the worst passions incident to the human frame, the meanest of mankind were capable of throwing the nation into confusion; of heaping an oppressive weight of popular odium on the servants of the crown; and, however defective their dexterity, yet working with such sturdy engines as the ignorant prejudices of a licentious rabble, they were able to divide the one half of the island against the other. Our enemies saw with pleasure the effect of their wretched cabals, which were not more despicable in themselves than destructive in their consequences; France and Spain learned with inexpressible joy the respectable employment of the British parliament in the never-ending debates concerning the expulsion of Mr. Wilkes; in which, in their opinion, the question was, to decide whether an out-law, a bankrupt, and an impious blasphemer, should be appointed to defend the laws, the property and religion of England. They were charmed with the petitions and remonstrances of the city of London; and were glad to find

and the English ministers too much employed in an altercation A. D. with the magistrates of the metropolis, and in quieting the un- 1770 happy riots which clamorous incendiaries had excited among the people at home, to engage in vigorous measures for re-establishing their authority in America.

The conduct of administration, with regard to this country, was beyond any thing that their most sanguine wishes could have hoped. Contradictory instructions given to the governors; taxes imposed and repealed again and again; assemblies called and dissolved, and allowed to sit again without disavowing the measures which had occasioned their former dissolution; troops sent, driven out, with many alternate proposals of violence and submission; treasons charged, adopted by parliament, not proved, nor attempted to be proved, neither detected nor punished.—The administration of lord North, who, already chancellor of the exchequer, was in the beginning of 1770 appointed first lord of the treasury, did not announce any alteration in the hesitating, ambiguous conduct which had been hitherto maintained. The first measure which he adopted relative to America was to bring in a bill for a repeal of part of an act passed in the seventh of his present majesty, establishing duties on paper, painters colours, glass, and tea. The duties on the other articles were abolished, that on tea only was continued. The motives assigned for the bringing in this bill, were the dangerous combinations which these duties had given birth to beyond the Atlantic, and the dissatisfaction which they had created at home, among the merchants trading to the colonies. It did not fail to be remarked on this occasion, that while the minister condemned these duties in the gross, and the law upon which they were founded as so absurd and preposterous that it was astonishing how it could originate in a British house of commons, he yet, notwithstanding this decisive declaration, proposed a repeal of but part of the law, and still continued the duty on tea; lest he should be thought to give way to American ideas, and to take away the impositions, as having been contrary to the rights of the colonies. Another inconsistency, not less glaring, and of still more importance, was the declaring the law of taxation, while no vigorous step was taken to enforce it.

Great

A. D. 1770. Great Britain, disturbed by factious riots at home, and threatened with a rebellion in America, was to be insulted by the unprovoked hostility of foreign powers. Our unhappy intestine divisions, which had gradually spread from the convulsions in the capital to the remotest parts of the empire, had so filled the hands and engaged the thoughts of government, that little attention either had or could for some time past have been given to our foreign interests. Thus convulsed at home, and in a state of contention with our colonies, already productive of the most alarming appearances, it was not to be supposed, from the known systems of policy established and practised among rival states, that such evident opportunities of advantage would be overlooked by the natural and ever watchful enemies of Great Britain. The state of France, indeed, being nearly as unfortunate as our own, prevented that kingdom from expressing her secret animosity. But the principles of the family compact actuated every member of the house of Bourbon; and a stroke was at this time aimed by Spain which affected the honour of the British flag, and tarnished the recent glory of the nation.

The first discovery, the situation and the importance of Falkland islands, have already been described. Gold and silver being almost the only objects which excited the attention of the first discoverers and conquerors of the new world, these islands producing nothing of this kind were neglected for almost two centuries. Experience, and the extension of commerce, have at length shewn the probability that the southern parts of the new world afford other commodities, which may be turned to as great advantage by industrious nations as mines of gold and silver. In particular it is thought, that the greatest and most advantageous fishery in the world might be established there; and navigators say, that an hundred whales are to be met with in the high southern latitudes, for one that is to be found on the coast of Greenland. Besides this motive, which was alone sufficient to excite the enterprize of a commercial nation, lord Anson's voyage fully explained the advantages that would result to England in time of war, from having a friendly port and place of refreshment considerably more to the south, and much nearer Cape Horn than the Brazils. The jealous and disagreeable

able character of the American Portuguese, which rendered it A. D. desirable to avoid all dependence on such insidious and contemptible allies; the great length of the voyage, by which the vigour and health of the men, as well as water and other provisions, were exhausted before they arrived at the place of action; were the principal inducements mentioned by lord Anson for carrying this measure into execution. He pointed out the place most proper for forming the establishment, and, when at the head of the admiralty, made preparations for sending frigates to make discoveries in those seas, and particularly to examine the condition and circumstances of the above-mentioned islands. But this project was not so cautiously conducted as to escape the vigilance of the court of Spain, who made such representations on this subject to the British ministry that the scheme was for the present laid aside, and continued dormant till the conclusion of the last war, when it was again revived by the earl of Egmont, who then presided in the admiralty. Accordingly commodore Byron was sent out in the year 1764, the success of whose expedition we have already related. About the same time Mr. Bougainville sailed into those seas to make discoveries for the crown of France, and touched at Falkland's Islands. But, in a requisition of the court of Spain, the French easily sold or ceded all right to any property in what is called the Magellanica regions; with which sale or disposition it appears that Great Britain was not acquainted, nor even with any settlements ever formed there by the French.

In the year 1769, there was an English frigate and a sloop upon that station; and captain Hunt of the *Tamer* frigate cruising off Falkland's Islands fell in with a Spanish schooner belonging to Port Solidad taking a survey of them. The English captain, according to the orders which he had received, desired the Spaniard to depart from that coast as belonging to his Britannic majesty. The schooner departed, but returned in two days after, and brought on board an officer with letters and a present from Don Philip Ruez Puente, the Spanish governor of Port Solidad. These letters were couched in terms of apparent civility. Don Ruez affected to disbelieve the report of the captain of the schooner, and attributed captain Hunt's being in those seas to chance or stress  
of

A. D. of weather. He offered him upon that presumption every refreshment, and all acts of kindness in his power; but if the improbable account which he had received should happen to be true, he warned the English captain of his danger, reminded him of the violation of treaties, and the sole dominion of the king of Spain in those seas; and at the same time authorized the Spanish officer to order the English subjects immediately to depart.

Captain Hunt, in answer to the Spanish officer with whom the governor had desired him to correspond, asserted the sole dominion of his Britannic majesty, as well by right of discovery as settlement, and warned the Spaniards in his name, and by his orders, to depart the islands, and allowed them six months from the date of the letter to prepare for their departure. The Spanish officer made a formal protest, as well upon the grounds already mentioned as upon captain Hunt's refusing to allow him to visit the settlement, and his threatening to fire into the Spanish schooner upon her attempting to enter the harbour; he also protested against the captain's going to Solidad which he had proposed in an amicable manner, and declared that it should be considered as an insult.

About two months after this transaction, two Spanish frigates of considerable force, with troops on board for the new settlement, arrived at Port Egmont, the principal place in Falkland's Islands, under pretence of wanting water. The commander in chief wrote a letter to captain Hunt, in which he expressed great astonishment at seeing an English flag flying, and a kind of settlement formed; charged him with a violation of the last peace, and protested against the measure in all its parts, at the same time declaring he would abstain from any other manner of proceeding until he had acquainted his Catholic majesty with this disagreeable transaction. Captain Hunt, as before, founded his possession on the claim of right, justified his conduct by the orders of his sovereign, and again warned the Spaniards to depart totally from those islands.

The Spanish frigates having continued eight days at Port Egmont, during which time they were supplied with water, and treated with great civility by our people, departed seemingly without

without any hostile intention. But captain Hunt, dreading the A. D. consequences which soon followed, thought proper to return as 1770. soon as possible to England, to give an account of what had passed to the admiralty. He was succeeded at Port Egmont by the Favourite sloop, captain Maltby, which, with the Swift, captain Farmer, each of 16 guns, formed the whole force upon that station. Even this was unfortunately lessened, the Swift being overset in the Streights of Magellan where she had gone to make discoveries. The people, except three, were happily saved, by the fortitude and constancy of a few of their number, who, in an open cutter, undertook a voyage of three weeks in the most boisterous seas in the world. They arrived at Port Egmont, and brought the Favourite to the relief of their distressed companions.

It was not long after this dreadful danger and unexpected deliverance, when a Spanish frigate came into the same port, under pretence that she had been fifty-three days from Buenos Ayres, and was distressed for water: but three days after, her consorts, consisting of four other frigates, also arrived, and it soon appeared that they had been only 26 days at sea, had parted from the first in a gale of wind, and, instead of being in their way to Port Solidad, were now arrived at their place of destination. These five frigates carried 134 pieces of cannon, and had on board between 16 and 1700 men, including soldiers and marines; besides which, they had brought with them a train of artillery, and other materials sufficient to have invested a regular fortification.

A Spanish broad pendant was immediately hoisted on the arrival of the four last frigates, and as no doubt of their intentions now remained, captain Farmer ordered most of the officers and men who had belonged to the Swift to come on shore to the defence of the settlement, while captain Maltby began to bring the Favourite nearer to the Cove. Upon the first motion of the Favourite, one of the Spanish frigates sent an officer on board to acquaint the captain that if he weighed they would fire into his vessel. He, however, got under sail, regardless of this menace: the frigate fired two shot, which fell to leeward

A. D. of him; and three of the Spanish vessels got under way, and 1770. worked to windward as he did.

The whole strength of the English in the island consisted in a wooden block-house, which had not even a port-hole in it, and only four pieces of cannon, which were sunk in the mud, to defend it. From the first appearance of the Spanish force, captain Farmer had been active in clearing the stores out of the block-house, and in endeavouring to make it as defensible as its nature would permit. He raised the cannon, cleared the platform, and cut out port-holes. In the mean time letters were sent from the Spanish commodore to both the captains separately, requesting them in the politest terms to consider his great power, and their own defenceless situation; and that they would, by quitting the place, prevent his being under the disagreeable necessity to proceed to hostilities. These were followed by another the next day in which he offered, if they would quietly, and with good-will, abandon Port Egmont, he would peaceably put his troops on shore, and treat them with all the consideration which the harmony subsisting between the two powers required; that he would allow them to carry away all their property, and give them a receipt for any part of it they might chuse to leave behind, in order that the matter might be amiably adjusted between their respective courts. If, contrary to expectation, they should endeavour to maintain the settlement, he would then proceed to the accomplishment of his orders; and in that case threatened them with an attack by sea and land, expatiating in a pompous style on the spirit and brilliancy which they would experience in his military and naval forces. He concluded by requiring a categorical answer in fifteen minutes after the receipt of his letter.

To this arbitrary summons the British officers replied, that words are not always deemed hostilities, and that it was impossible for them to believe he should venture in a time of profound peace, and when by his own acknowledgment the most perfect harmony subsisted between the two courts, to commit an act of the most fatal tendency. That the king of Great Britain was able to defend the honour of his flag, and to protect the security of his dominions in all parts of the world; and, had even  
 a shorter



a shorter time than fifteen minutes been allowed them to deliberate, it could not alter their determined resolution to defend the charge intrusted to them to the utmost of their abilities. 1770. A. D.

Previous to the designed attack the Spanish commodore desired that some of our officers might be sent to view the number and condition of the troops and artillery which he intended to land, in order to persuade the English captains of the inefficacy of their obstinate resistance to his commands. This was complied with; but without shaking the British resolution. The Spanish frigates then warped in close to the shore, and moored head and stern opposite to the block-house and battery. The same evening, the 9th of June, captain Maltby came on shore with fifty of the Favourite's men, who brought with them two six-pounders, ten swivels, and a quantity of small arms and ammunition. The next morning a part of the Spanish troops and artillery landed, about half a mile to the northward of our people; and when they had advanced half way from the place of their landing, the rest of the boats, with the remainder of the troops and artillery, put off from one of the Spanish frigates, and rowed right in for the Cove, being covered by the fire of the frigates, whose shot went over the block-house.

The English fired some shot; but seeing the impossibility of defending the settlement, and the Spaniards having now broke through all the limits of peace and amity, so that their hostility could neither be denied nor explained away, our officers with great address having brought the affair to that point which they desired, determined with equal propriety to save the valuable lives of their people, who must have been unavoidably cut off in this unequal contest. Accordingly they hung out a flag of truce, and demanded articles of capitulation.

The substance of these articles, concluded between the English captains on one hand, and Don John Ignatio Madariaga, major-general of the royal navy of Spain, on the other, was, that the British subjects should be allowed to depart in the Favourite, and to take with them such of their stores as they thought proper; that an inventory should be made of the remainder, which were to be deposited in the hands of the governor of Solidad, who became answerable for them; that the

A. D. English flag should continue flying on shore and on board the 1770. sloop; but that they were to exercise no jurisdiction except over their own people; nor to appear under arms until the time of embarkation, to which they were to march out with drums beating and colours flying. There was a restriction with regard to the time of their departure, until the governor of Solidad, or his deputy, should arrive to make the inventories, and to take charge of the stores. For the better security of this limitation a new and wanton insult was offered to the British flag, the Favourite's rudder being forcibly taken away, and kept on shore during the time of their detention. The account of the violent transactions of the Spaniards at Falkland's Islands, previous to this open and unprovoked hostility, was brought to England by captain Hunt early in the month of June. The nation heard the news with indignation and resentment; especially as they had already much reason to complain of the ungenerous conduct of the Spaniards in detaining some thousands of English prisoners, seized under pretence of carrying on an illicit trade by the Spanish guarda costas. The necessity of putting ourselves in a respectable condition of defence was insisted on by the most popular members in both houses. Their partizans clamoured against the tameness of administration, and maintained the necessity of an immediate declaration of war, in order to disappoint the perfidious designs of our ancient and inveterate enemies.

The malignant nature of these designs, it was said, appeared too evidently in a dreadful national calamity, which happened about this time, in the conflagration at Portsmouth. An event so prejudicial to our maritime strength, attended with such critical circumstances, was considered as a part of a great and settled plan for the reduction of our power and opulence. The fire which happened about the same time in Petersburg, and which was also accompanied by some alarming particulars, did not lessen the suspicion on this occasion; and the reward of a thousand pounds offered by government, in the Gazette, for the discovery of those who had occasioned the fire in the dock-yard at Portsmouth, added a new cause of jealousy and distrust.

The

The loss sustained by the fire was supposed, according to the A.D. first loose calculations, to amount to half a million, but by later 1770. and more accurate estimates, is made to be only 150,000*l.* which is comparatively nothing to the dreadful consequences that must have ensued, without a speedy and effectual assistance. The quantity of stores consumed was supplied with great expedition from the other docks; the public buildings and work-houses were soon restored; and the loss thus rendered of very little consequence to our marine in general.

Notwithstanding the alarm occasioned by these transactions in the nation, the ministry made little preparation for war. Some ships indeed were put into commission, and there was greater bustle in the dock-yards than in the time of profound tranquillity. It was not, however, till the latter part of August, that houses were opened at the ports for manning sixteen sail of the line, and press warrants were not issued till near a month after. Much about this time the Favourite returned with our people from Falkland's Islands; but notwithstanding the melancholy story which they told, to the disgrace of the English name, such was the licentiousness and depravity of the times, that even the manning of the navy met with great difficulties. The legality of press warrants was publicly called in question, and the opinions of counsel applied to on the subject. In the city of London, upon the election of alderman Crosby to the mayoralty, that magistrate totally refused to back the press warrants, and asserted, that the considerable bounty granted by the city was intended to prevent such violences. Alderman Wilkes had before discharged an impressed man. Such transactions will transmit in proper colours to posterity the names of those patriotic magistrates, who did their utmost to impede the public service, when the security of the British dominions and the dignity of the crown were at stake.

When the parliament was assembled the 13th of November, 1770, the speech from the throne took notice that an immediate demand had been made from the court of Spain of such satisfaction as there was a right to expect for the injury received; and at the same time declared, that the preparations for war should not be discontinued, until full reparation should be obtained,

A. D. obtained. The addresses of both houses of parliament were spirited, and the strongest and most unreserved assurances were given, that every degree of requisite support should be cheerfully granted. At the same time that the blessings of peace were acknowledged, the fullest confidence was placed in his majesty, that he would never be induced, by a mistaken tenderness for the present ease of the people, to sacrifice their more essential and more lasting interests. So early as the 29th of November 40,000 men were voted for the sea service; extensive grants were afterwards passed for the ordinary and support of the navy; the land forces for home service were augmented from about 17,000 to above 23,000 effective men; a new battalion was added to the ordnance, and a small addition made to the pay of the subaltern officers belonging to that corps.

As the session advanced, the prospect of peace seemed gradually to diminish. The negotiation and the tranquil intentions of Spain, which had been alledged by the ministry in answer to the clamours for immediate war, were no longer heard of, and a state of hostility with that country seemed to be considered as the probable issue of this affair. In fact, the negotiation was for a considerable time interrupted, and only renewed through the mediation of France, and finally concluded at the earnest desire of that court, and the terror inspired into the Spaniards by the vigour of the British preparations.

About a fortnight before the arrival of our people from Falkland's Islands a letter was received at the office of lord Weymouth, secretary of state for the southern department, from Mr. Harris our minister at Madrid, acquainting government, that a ship had arrived from Buenos Ayres, with an account of the intended expedition, its force, and the time fixed for its sailing. At the same time prince Masserano, the Spanish ambassador, acquainted his lordship, that he had good reason to believe the governor of Buenos Ayres had taken it upon him to make use of force, in dispossessing our people of Port Egmont; and that he was directed to make this communication to prevent the bad consequences of its coming through other hands; at the same time expressing his wishes, that whatever the transactions at Port Egmont may have been, in consequence of a

step taken by the governor, without any particular instruction A. D. from his Catholic majesty, they might not be productive of mea- 1770- sures dangerous to the good understanding between the two crowns.

Lord Weymouth replied, that if force had been used it was difficult to see how the fatal consequences could be avoided; that the instructions given to the British officers at Falkland's Islands were of the most pacific nature; but that still the circumstance of Mr. Buccarelli, the governor of Buenos Ayres, having acted without orders, left an opening for conciliation, provided the ambassador would disavow the conduct of that gentleman. Prince Masserano, however, declared, that he had no instructions to that purpose, but deprecated all resolutions and measures that might involve the two crowns in a war.

Upon a second conference with the ambassador, lord Weymouth demanded, in his majesty's name, as a specific condition of preserving the harmony between the courts, a disavowal of the proceedings at Port Egmont, and that the affairs of that settlement should be restored to the precise state in which they were previous to these proceedings. He at the same time sent instructions to Mr. Harris, to inform Mr. Grimaldi the Spanish minister of state of what had passed here, and of the proposed satisfaction, which alone could put it in his majesty's power to suspend his preparations for hostility. Mr. Grimaldi at first expressed himself in very vague terms. He had reason to foresee that some disagreeable event would happen in the south seas, from the notorious disapprobation of the court of Spain to any British establishments in those parts. He could not blame the conduct of Mr. Buccarelli, as it was founded upon the laws of America. At the same time he wished to have prevented this conduct, and had actually, upon the first surmise of the design, dispatched a vessel from the Groyne, to hinder it from being put in execution; that the Spanish nation had so little to get and so much to lose by a war, that nothing but the last extremity could reduce them to so violent a measure; and that the king his master wished only to act consistently with his own honour and the welfare of his people, and that so far as our demand was compatible with those two points, there was no doubt of  
its

A. D. its being agreed to. In a subsequent meeting he assured the British 1770. envoy, that his Catholic majesty was determined to do every thing in his power to terminate this affair in an amicable manner : that instructions for this purpose had been transmitted to prince Masserano at the court of London, differing from the requisition of that court in terms only, and not essentially, so that he had no doubt the proposals which they contained would readily be adopted.

Prince Masserano, accordingly, proposed a convention to lord Weymouth, in which the king of Spain disavowed any particular orders given to Mr. Buccarelli, at the same time that his majesty allowed that governor had acted agreeably to his general instructions, and to the oath which his office obliged him to take. He further stipulated the restitution of Falkland's Islands without prejudice to his Catholic majesty's right; and he expected that the king of Great Britain would disavow captain Hunt's menace, which, he said, gave immediate occasion to the steps taken by Mr. Buccarelli. To this it was answered, that when his Britannic majesty's moderation condescended to demand redress for the injury which his crown had received, he could not possibly accept as a convention that satisfaction to which he had so just a title without entering into any engagement in order to procure it. That the idea of his majesty's becoming a contracting party upon this occasion, is entirely foreign to the case, for having received an injury, and demanded the most moderate reparation of that injury his honour can permit him to accept, that reparation loses its value if it is to be conditional, and to be obtained by any stipulation whatsoever on the part of his majesty.

Upon this answer prince Masserano told lord Weymouth, that he had no power to proceed in this affair, except by convention, without farther instructions from Madrid. While the ambassador sent for these, lord Weymouth dispatched an express to Mr. Harris, to lay before the Spanish minister the unexpected obstacles that had arisen in this affair, and to demand a direct answer to the object of his first requisition. For several days, however, no answer was returned; but at length Mr. Grimaldi intimated, that the king his master had sent instructions to prince  
Masserano,

Mafferano, by which he was empowered to treat again, and to A. D. grant every reasonable satisfaction for the supposed insult; that 1770. his Catholic majesty was willing to come into any method regarding the manner of giving the satisfaction that should appear the most eligible to the king of Great Britain, expecting, however, that, as he went such a great length to save his honour, his own should also be considered, so far as it did not interfere with the satisfaction that was to be offered.

Nothing could appear to be more satisfactory than these pretended instructions given to prince Mafferano. Mr. Grimaldi's answer was given the 7th November, and was received in London the 19th; but it soon appeared that the conduct of prince Mafferano did not at all accord with the pacific intentions and conciliatory sentiments professed at Madrid. The earl of Rochford, who succeeded lord Weymouth in office, wrote a letter to Mr. Harris, dated the 21st December, in which he informed him, that all negotiations with the Spanish ambassador had for some time been at an end, the answer to the king's demand being totally inadmissible; and that, it being inconsistent with his majesty's honour to make any farther proposal to the court of Spain, he was desired to withdraw from Madrid with all convenient speed.

Thus was the negotiation entirely broken off. How it came again to be renewed seems to have been better known in all the coffee-houses of Europe than to the English secretaries of state. No document relative to its renewal has ever been laid before parliament or the public, but it is reasonable, from the duplicity and design discovered by Spain in the whole transaction, to look for the motives of conciliation in every other quarter, rather than in the pacific or friendly dispositions of the court of Madrid.

The family compact, by which the different branches of the house of Bourbon engaged to employ their whole force in the mutual support and assistance of each other, was proposed, and carried into execution by the wisdom and address of the duke of Choiseul. That able minister little imagined a compliance with the terms of this formidable union might become extremely inconvenient to France, for the interest of which it had principally

A. D. been formed. It did not occur to him, that the haughty spirit  
 1770. of Spain, exasperated by the disgraceful wounds received in the war with Great Britain, would prompt her to take the first opportunity of seeking revenge; while France, exhausted in her resources; without money or credit; convulsed by the most violent dissensions between the first orders of the state, while the people were ripe for sedition from the want of the first necessities of life, might be in no condition to afford Spain that assistance which had been stipulated between them. The credit of the duke who had contrived the family compact, long considered as a masterpiece of policy, but now found to be attended with consequences in every view disgraceful to France, began to decline: he was soon after removed from his employment, and obliged to retire. Other councils prevailed, more agreeable to the pacific dispositions of an aged prince, who had nothing farther in view but to end his days in the bosom of ease and tranquillity.

The interval that passed between the breaking off of the negotiation between Great Britain and Spain, with the transactions of which the public has never been informed by authority, was probably filled up by listening to the mediation of France, which disarmed the ardent hostility of her southern ally, and persuaded her, much against her own inclination, to propose an accommodation, in form at least, less offensive to the dignity of Great Britain. It was not till the first day of the meeting of parliament, January 22d, 1771, after the Christmas recess, that, instead of a *convention*, a *declaration* was proposed and signed by prince Masserano, and accepted by the earl of Rochford. By the former the ambassador, in name of his master, disavows the violence used at Port Egmont, and stipulates that every thing shall be restored there precisely to the same state in which it was before the reduction; but at the same time declares, that this restoration is not in any wise to affect the question of the prior right of sovereignty of those islands; and, by the acceptance, the performance of these stipulations is to be considered as a satisfaction for the injury done to the crown of Great Britain\*. This transaction was immediately announced to both

\* Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. XIV.



houses. While the friends of administration proposed an address A. D. of thanks to his majesty for having supported the honour of the 1771. crown of Great Britain by a firm and unvaried adherence to his just demand of satisfaction, and for not having too hastily engaged the nation in the hazards and burdens of war, the gentlemen in opposition affirmed, that the whole transaction was equally unsafe and disgraceful; that instead of having provided a reparation for former hostilities, or a security against future, it contained in itself the genuine seeds of perpetual hostility and war: that it is as dishonourable to the crown itself as to the nation, and admitting the fashionable language, that the dignity of the former, and the reparation to it, are the only objects of consideration, it will be found as shamefully deficient in this respect as in every other. Thus, by this infamous accommodation, the honour of the crown of England had not been put on the same footing with that of inferior kingdoms. The French king, for a small violation of territorial right in the pursuit of an outlawed smuggler, had thought it necessary to send an ambassador extraordinary to the king of Sardinia to apologize for it in the most solemn and public manner. When the English fleet under admiral Boscawen destroyed some French ships on the coast of Portugal, Great Britain sent an ambassador extraordinary to the court of Lisbon, to make reparation in honour; but when the Spaniards insult the British flag, and commit the most outrageous acts of hostility on British subjects, they propose a declaration, in which the right to employ the same violence again is maintained and defended; for, though the court of Spain had disavowed the act of hostility as proceeding from particular instructions, she continued to justify it under her general instructions to her governors, under the oath by them taken, and under the established laws of America; and that this justification of an act of violence under general orders, established laws and oaths of office, is far more dangerous and injurious to this kingdom than the particular enterprize which has been disavowed, as it most evidently supposes, that the governors of the Spanish American provinces are not only authorized, but required, to raise forces by sea and land, and to invade our possessions in those parts, in the midst of profound peace. Ma-

A. D. ny other objections of equal weight were urged against the ac-  
 1771. ceptance of the Spanish declaration, in a strong, animated, elo-  
 quent, and argumentative protest of the house of peers, which  
 will remain to all posterity to their immortal honour \*.

The same measures of government, however, were adopted  
 by a great majority. During the recess of parliament, Septem-  
 ber 16, 1771, Spain fulfilled her engagements contained in the  
 declaration, by the restoration of Port Egmont, which was de-  
 livered up to captain Scott, who was sent thither with a small  
 squadron for that purpose. Ministry seemed to think all was  
 secured by an amicable termination of this dispute; and parlia-  
 ment was not called till after the Christmas holidays, 21st Ja-  
 1772. nuary, 1772. The late meeting of this assembly, which indi-  
 cated that no urgent business required an early attendance, and  
 the pacific declaration from the throne, were sufficient to lull  
 the nation into the most perfect security. What, therefore, must  
 have been their surprize and indignation, when a motion was  
 made so early as the 29th of January, that 25,000 seamen should  
 be voted for the service of the ensuing year. It was urged, in  
 support of this motion, that, the French having sent a consider-  
 able fleet to the East Indies, we were obliged upon that account  
 to augment our naval force there, as the propriety of our being  
 always superior to them in that part of the world was so evident  
 as not to admit of an argument: that a larger squadron was  
 now employed for the protection of Jamaica and our other West  
 India islands, than in former years of peace; as the impor-  
 tance of our valuable possessions in that quarter, the probability  
 of the Spaniards making their first attempt upon them in case of  
 a war, and the considerable fleet which they kept in those seas,  
 rendered an augmentation of our maritime strength on that sta-  
 tion, a matter of the most evident necessity: that the war be-  
 tween the Turks and Russians made it also necessary to employ  
 a greater number of ships for the protection of our commerce  
 in the Mediterranean and Archipelago than had been customary  
 in times of general peace. Besides these general reasons for  
 augmentation, much stress was laid upon the great reform with  
 regard to the guard-ships, it being acknowledged, that for se-

\* Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. XV.

veral years past these ships had been exceedingly neglected, and A. D. considered merely as jobs; so that at the time of the late ex- 1772-  
pected war there were neither ships nor men fit for service: but that now things were so much altered for the better, that twenty of the best ships in the navy were kept upon that duty, and were in such complete condition, and so nearly manned, that a slight press would at any time enable them in a very few days to put to sea: That the rest of the fleet was also in good condition, and in about a year we should have near eighty ships of the line at home fit for service, besides those that were upon foreign duty. Many pointed and severe sarcasms were levelled at the ministry for accompanying a speech, which breathed nothing but effusions of peace, with all the actual preparations for war. Some gentlemen in opposition declared for the motion, upon the avowed principle that the supplies demanded were not in any degree to be considered as a peace establishment; while the greater part of these gentlemen arraigned the adding to the burdens of a nation already sinking under the weight of an overgrown and monstrous public debt. They observed that our peace establishment was every year increasing, and that arguments similar to those at present alledged could never be wanting to oppose any diminution of it: that already it was nearly double to what it had been at the accession of George the First; last year we had sustained all the inconveniencies of a war without any of its advantages; and it seemed to be the intention of government to persist for ever in the same ruinous measures. These observations were at present regarded as the clamours of party; and the events which followed fully justified the necessity of keeping the navy on a respectable footing.

The progress of the Russians in the Mediterranean rendered it necessary for both France and Spain to stand on their guard, and to watch the growing greatness of these new and formidable allies of Great Britain. But, in the beginning of the year 1773, there were more extraordinary preparations in the French 1773.  
and Spanish ports than any apprehension of this kind could account for. Those preparations were carried on with the utmost vigour and industry, not only in the ports of the Mediterranean, but in those of the ocean, and afforded room for suspecting the

**A. D.** the most hostile intentions. Strong remonstrances on this subject were made on the part of Great Britain at the courts of Paris and Madrid, accompanied with a declaration, that, if such measures were continued, his Britannic majesty would be under a necessity of sending such a fleet of observation into the Mediterranean, as should effectually frustrate any attempts that might be made against the Russians. In the mean time a powerful fleet was equipped, and ordered to rendezvous at Spithead, and those warlike preparations were for some time continued on all sides. The rapidity with which Great Britain assembled such a naval force as was sufficient to contend with that of all her enemies united, and the magnificence and military pomp with which her mighty preparations were displayed \*, restrained the hostile dispositions which had begun to prevail at Paris and Madrid, and prevented the prosecution of measures which must have involved all Europe in their consequences. The vigorous exertions on this occasion were like a flash of lightning, which for a moment brightened the gloom of night that sat so thick and heavy on the British councils. But after this transient flash the darkness returned more intense and horrible than before.

The conduct of administration will be an enigma to posterity. Possessed of a naval force that made the greatest princes of Europe tremble, they have been so far from quieting the dissensions which prevailed in America, that they have totally alienated from Great Britain those flourishing and wealthy provinces, and reduced their country to the utmost state of despair. Two roads were open before them, either of which might have been followed, if not with equal glory, yet with an equally assured prospect of success. By disregarding the clamours of an interested opposition, and making use of the power in their hands, they might, while all Europe were silent in our presence, have inflicted whatever punishment became necessary to reduce the rebellious provinces to an humble sense of their duty. But this method was so far from being adopted, that a first lord of the treasury talked of compelling the Americans to

\* See Appendix, No. XVI.

submit to taxes without bloodshed; and a first lord of the ad- A. D.  
miralty, upon the appearance of measures which indicated vi- 1773-  
gour, voted a reduction of 4000 seamen; assuring the house,  
that the low establishment proposed would be fully sufficient for  
conquering the Americans; of whose power and courage he  
spoke with the utmost contempt, affirming that they were not  
disciplined nor capable of discipline, and that formed of such  
materials, and so indisposed to action, the numbers of which  
such boasts had been made, would only facilitate their defeat.

Another road, which might have been pursued with universal  
applause, would have been to abandon that odious measure of  
taxing a free people without their own consent. Had that been  
done, the weight of opposition would have been removed at  
once, and the Americans, if they still continued refractory,  
might have been compelled by force of arms to acknowledge  
the supremacy of the mother country, without one sympathizing  
voice in Europe to condole with them for the rigours of a pu-  
nishment which they had justly drawn on their own heads.  
But neither of these methods being adopted, the ministry hesi-  
tated between peace and war; and their tame, equivocal, tem-  
porising conduct brought the Americans to a maturity of resist-  
ance and rebellion, the effects of which we should now proceed  
to describe and deplore, if, in deducing a chronological account  
of the naval transactions of Great Britain, there were not some  
intervening events, which deserve to be particularly related.

These are the discoveries which continued to be made by our  
navigators in the years 1773, 1774, and 1775. They were  
not, as of late years, confined intirely to the southern ocean.  
While captain Cook was employed in exploring this part of the  
globe, the honourable Constantine Phipps, now lord Mul-  
grave, was sent to examine how far navigation was practicable  
towards the north pole. This was done in consequence of an  
application to lord Sandwich, first lord of the admiralty, from  
the Royal Society. His lordship laid the request of the Society  
before the king, who ordered the *Racehorse*, and *Carcass*,  
bombs, to be fitted out for the expedition. The command of  
the former was given to captain Phipps, and of the latter to  
captain Lutwidge. The idea of a passage to the East Indies by  
the.

A. D. the north pole, was suggested as early as the year 1527, by 1773. Robert Thorne, a merchant of Bristol, who addressed a paper to Henry the Eighth on that subject; but Henry, as usual, was involved in a multiplicity of affairs, which prevented him from giving any attention to this application. In the reign of Queen Elizabeth Sir Hugh Willoughby made the attempt with three ships, *anno* 1553. He proceeded to the latitude of 75 degrees north, but being obliged to winter in Lapland, he and all his company perished miserably. Three years afterwards captain Burroughs sailed on the same design, and advanced to 78 degrees north. To him succeeded captains Jackman and Pell in 1580, in two ships; the latter of whom, with his ship, was lost. The Dutch began to pursue the same discovery in 1595, and successive voyages were made, which tended rather to prove the impracticability of sailing to high northern latitudes, than the probability of finding the passage, which was the object of these daring enterprizes. In 1607 Henry Hudson was equipped by a company of London merchants, to discover a passage by the north pole to Japan and China. He penetrated to 80 degrees 23 minutes north, and was then stopped by the ice. Two years after another ship was sent out by the Russia Company of merchants in London; the ship was commanded by Jonas Poole, who could not with his utmost endeavours advance farther than 79 degrees 5 minutes north. In the year 1614 another voyage was undertaken, in which Baffin and Fotherby were employed, but without success; and next year Fotherby, in a pinnace of 20 tons, with ten men, was equally unsuccessful. John Wood, with a frigate and a pink, sailed in 1676, but returned without effecting any thing. Most of these voyages having been fitted out by private adventurers, for the double purpose of discovery and present advantage, it was natural to suppose that the attention of the navigators had been diverted from the more remote and less profitable object of the two, and that they had not prosecuted the chief purpose of discovery with all the care that could have been wished. "But," says captain Phipps, "I am happy in an opportunity of doing justice to the memory of these men, which, without having traced their steps, and experienced their difficulties, it would have been impossible to have done. They appear

"pear to have encountered dangers, which at that period must A. D.  
 "have been particularly alarming from their novelty, with the 1773.  
 "greatest fortitude and perseverance, as well as to have shewn  
 "a degree of diligence and skill, not only in the ordinary and  
 "practical, but in the more scientific parts of their profession;  
 "which might have done honour to modern seamen, with all  
 "their advantages of later improvements. This, when com-  
 "pared with the state of navigation, even within these forty  
 "years, by the most eminent foreign authors, affords the most  
 "flattering and satisfactory proof of the very early existence of  
 "that decided superiority in naval affairs, which has carried the  
 "power of this country to the height it has now attained."

The captain sailed in February 1773, and after passing the  
 Islands of Shetland, the first land he made was Spitzbergen, in  
 latitude 77 degrees, 59 minutes, 11 seconds north, and lon-  
 gitude 9 degrees, 13 minutes east. The coast appeared to be  
 neither habitable nor accessible, but formed of high black rocks,  
 without the least marks of vegetation, mostly bare and pointed,  
 in some places covered with snow, and towering above the  
 clouds. The vallies between the high cliffs were filled with snow  
 or ice. "This prospect," says captain Phipps, "would have  
 "suggested the idea of perpetual winter, had not the mildness  
 "of the weather, the smooth water, bright sun-shine, and con-  
 "stant day-light, given a cheerfulness and a novelty to the  
 "whole of this striking and romantic scene. The height of one  
 "mountain seen here was found to be 1503 yards. The har-  
 "bour of Smeerenberg, lying in latitude 79 degrees, 44 mi-  
 "nutes north, longitude 9 degrees, 50 minutes, 45 seconds east,  
 "has good anchorage in fifteen fathoms. Close to this harbour  
 "is an island, called Amsterdam Island, where the Dutch used  
 "formerly to boil their whale-blubber, and the remains of some  
 "conveniencies erected by them for that purpose are still visible.  
 "They attempted once to form an establishment here, and left  
 "some people, who all perished in the winter. The Dutch  
 "ships still resort to this place for the latter season of the whale-  
 "fishery. The most remarkable views which these dreary re-  
 "gions present, are what are called the ice-bergs. These are  
 "large bodies of ice, filling the vallies between the high moun-  
 "tains.

VOL. IV. X x

A. D. " tains. Their face towards the sea is nearly perpendicular, and  
1773. " of a very lively green colour. One was about 300 feet high,  
" with a cascade of water issuing out of it. Large pieces fre-  
" quently break off from the ice-bergs, and fall with great noise  
" into the water."

Captain Phipps has been very accurate in describing the few animals which these inhospitable regions produce, and was at pains to examine the vegetable and mineral productions. He proceeded afterwards to Moffen Island in latitude 80 degrees north, longitude 12 degrees, 20 minutes east, which is of a round form, about two miles in diameter, with a lake in the middle, frozen with eternal ice. At the Seven Islands which lie in latitude 81 degrees, 21 minutes north, the two ships became suddenly fast in the ice on the 31st of July. These islands and north-east land, with the frozen sea formed almost a basin, having but about four points open for the ice to drift out in case of a change of wind. The passage by which the ships had come in to the westward became close, and a strong current set in to the east, by which they were carried still farther from their course. The labour of the whole ship's company to cut away the ice proved ineffectual; their utmost efforts for a whole day could not move the ships above 300 yards to the westward through the ice, whilst the current had at the same time driven them far to the north-east and eastward. Appearances remained thus threatening for four or five days, the safety of the crew seemed all that could possibly be effected. As it had been foreseen that one or both of the ships might be sacrificed in the prosecution of the voyage, the boats for each ship were calculated, in number and size, to be fit in any emergency to transport the whole crew. Driven to this state of danger and suspense, on the 6th of August the boats were hoisted out; and every possible method taken to render them secure and comfortable; but the next day the wind blew eastwardly, and the ships were moved about a mile to the westward. But still they run not so far west by a great way as when they were first beset with the ice; however, on the 9th of August, the current had visibly changed, and run to the westward, by which both the ships had been carried considerably in that direction. On the 10th a brisk wind



at north-north-east accomplished their deliverance, and freed A. D. them from the dreadful prospect of perishing, as many for- 1773-  
mer adventurers had done in those polar regions. Having found it impracticable to penetrate any farther towards the north, they returned to the harbour of Smecrenberg; having, in the prosecution of this voyage, reached 81 degrees, 36 minutes north latitude, and between the latitudes of 79 degrees, 50 minutes, and 81 degrees, traversed 17 degrees and a half of longitude, that is, from 2 degrees east to 19 degrees, 30 minutes east.

While lord Mulgrave was employed in ascertaining the limits of navigation towards the north, captain Cook was indefatigable in examining the respective dominions of land and ocean in the southern hemisphere. Notwithstanding the various voyages, in which this part of the globe had been traversed in the many different directions, all tending to render the existence of a southern continent more improbable, the fact was not yet brought to a clear and demonstrative evidence. To determine this point was the main object of the present voyage, on which captain Cook sailed in the *Resolution*, accompanied by captain Furneaux in the *Adventure*, the 2d of April, 1772. The ships in which they embarked were the most proper that could be contrived for such a dangerous undertaking; captain Cook in the clear, simple, and manly narrative which he has published of his proceedings, having proved beyond the possibility of doubt, that north-country vessels, or such as are built for the coal trade, are the fittest for pursuing with success the discovery of remote countries. To the nature of his ships, which were of this safe and commodious construction, rather than to his own nautical skill and abilities, he modestly ascribes the singular felicity of his voyage, which was far beyond the experience or hopes of former navigators.

Besides the advantages arising from the form of the vessels, and the skill of the commander, the provision of every fort exceeded all that had been known on any former occasion. Every circumstance and situation that could be foreseen or apprehended was provided for with unexampled liberality. A considerable sum of money was allotted by parliament to encourage

A. D. two gentlemen, eminent in natural history, to sacrifice their 1773- time, and encounter the toils and dangers of such a voyage.

With the same generous spirit for the improvement of knowledge, a landscape-painter of merit, and two able astronomers, were also engaged. Nor was any attention omitted which could be deemed necessary for the subsistence, security, health, or comfort of all the voyagers.

Having failed with so many circumstances in their favour, they reached the Cape of Good Hope without meeting with any remarkable occurrence, and departed from thence the 22d of November, 1772. They returned to the same place the 22d of March, 1775, having sailed no less than 20,000 leagues in two years and four months; an extent of voyage nearly equal to three times the equatorial circumference of the earth, and which, it is highly probable, never was traversed by any other ship in an equal period of time. When we take into computation the voyage to and from the Cape to England, the whole time consumed is above three years, during which they experienced every variety of climate from 52 degrees north latitude to 71 degrees south, and were continually exposed to all the hardships and fatigue inseparable from a seafaring life; and yet what is most extraordinary, the numerous ship's company on board the *Resolution* preserved a more uninterrupted state of good health, than perhaps they could have enjoyed on shore in the most temperate climate of the earth. In that long and various course, of 118 persons only four were lost; and of that four only one fell a victim to sickness: a fact unparalleled in the history of navigation.

In the most healthy climates no bills of mortality have produced such an instance amongst an equal number of men during a like period. When, therefore, we consider the numbers of brave seamen who perished by marine diseases under Anson and other navigators, the greatest praise is due to captain Cook for his judicious management in preserving the health of the men under his command. The chief preservative against the scurvy, used by this judicious commander, was sweet wort, which was given not only to those who were afflicted with that distemper, but likewise to those who were thought likely to take it. Portable  
soup

soup and four krout were also used with success in preserving the A. D. health of the seamen. The ship's company were kept in constant 1773. exercise, and their cleanliness contributed not a little to their health. The ship was frequently purified by fires, a practice much recommended by captain Cook. Fresh water was also an object of particular attention. Not satisfied with having plenty of that necessary article, he would always have the purest, and therefore, whenever an opportunity offered, he emptied what he had taken in a few days before, and filled his casks anew. As a testimony of regard for these important improvements for preserving the health of seamen, the Royal Society was pleased to bestow Sir Godfrey Copley's medal upon captain Cook.

The first cruize from the Cape of Good Hope, November 22d, 1772, was employed in ascertaining the great question concerning the *Terra Australis incognita*. The two ships sailed in company, and the 10th of December following, being in latitude 50 degrees, 40 minutes south, saw the first ice. The mass was about 50 feet high, and half a mile in circuit, flat at top, and its sides rose in a perpendicular direction, against which the sea broke exceedingly high. From this time the icy mountains began to be very frequent, exhibiting a view as pleasing to the eye as terrible to reflection; "for," says the captain, "were a ship to get against the weather-side of one of these masses of ice, when the sea runs high, she would be dashed to pieces in a moment." On the 14th, being in latitude 54 degrees, 50 minutes south, 21 degrees, 34 minutes east, they were stopped, in their route to the southward, by an immense field of low ice, to which no end could be seen to the south east or west. In different parts were hills of ice, like those that had been before found floating in the sea; and the ship's company were often amused with the flattering prospect of land, which turned out to be fog-banks. A boat was here hoisted out to try the direction of the current, and Mr. Wales the astronomer, accompanied by Mr. Foster the naturalist, took the opportunity of going in her to make experiments on the temperature of the sea at different depths. A thick fog came on, which blackened into such a degree of obscurity, that they intirely lost sight of both the ships.

In

A. D. In a four-oared boat, in an immense ocean, far from any hospitable shore, surrounded with ice, and destitute of provisions, their situation was as frightful as any that can well be imagined. In this dreadful suspense, they determined to lie still, hoping that, provided they preserved their place, the sloops would not abandon them. The most delightful music they ever heard was the jingling of the bell of the *Adventure*, which took them on board. The ships then changed their course to the eastward, where the large islands of ice were hourly seen in all directions; so that they became as familiar to those on board as the clouds and the sea. A strong reflection of white on the skirts of the sky was a certain indication of these islands; although the ice itself is not entirely white, but often tinged, especially near the surface of the sea, with a beautiful beryl line blue. This colour sometimes appeared 20 or 30 feet above the surface, and was most probably produced by some particles of sea-water dashed against the mass in tempestuous weather. Different shades of white were frequently observed in the larger islands, lying above each other in strata of a foot high, which confirms captain Cook's opinion concerning the formation and increase of these masses by heavy falls of snow at different intervals. The 26th the islands still surrounded them, behind one of which, in the evening, the setting sun tinged its edges with gold, and brought upon the whole mass a beautiful suffusion of purple. "Although," says captain Cook, "this was the middle of summer with us, I much question if the day was colder in any part of England. The mercury in Fahrenheit's thermometer constantly kept below the freezing point. The shooting at penguins afforded great sport but little profit, the birds diving so frequently in the water, and continuing so long under it, that the fowlers were generally obliged to give over the pursuit. Their thick glossy plumage turned off the small shot, and it was necessary to attack them with ball."

Having hitherto met with no land, captain Cook determined, January 2d, 1773, to go in search of Cape Circumcision, which is laid down by Bouvet in 58 degrees, 53 minutes south, 10 degrees 6 minutes east; but as he saw no appearance of it in that situation, although the weather was very clear, he supposed it

to have been nothing but fields and mountains of ice. January A. D. 9th, three boats were hoisted out, and in a few hours took up as much ice as yielded fifteen tons of good fresh water. The salt which adhered to the ice was so trifling as not to be tasted, and intirely drained off by lying a short time on the deck. Cranzt some years ago advanced in his history of Greenland, that those great masses of ice in the northern seas dissolved into fresh water, from which he inferred, that they owed their origin to the vast rivers of those hyperborean regions; but it was reserved to captain Cook to establish the doctrine, that the freezing of sea-water into ice, not only deprives it of all its salt particles, but that it will thaw into soft, potable, and most wholesome water. He has also proved by experience that the bad qualities which for so many ages have been attributed to melted snow and ice-water are destitute of all foundation. This happy discovery of deriving the greatest advantage from the ice mountains, which seem to threaten our navigators with nothing less than destruction, enabled them to persevere in their voyage for a length of time that would have been otherwise impossible, and contributed to that unparalleled degree of health, which they so fortunately enjoyed.

January 17th, they crossed the Antarctic circle in longitude 39 degrees, 35 minutes east, which had till then remained impenetrable to all former navigators. The ice-islands became more and more numerous; and in longitude 67 degrees, 15 minutes south, an immense field of congelation extended to the southward as far as the eye could reach, which obliged captain Cook to put about, and stand north-east by north. Here were seen many whales playing about the ice, and various flocks of brown and white pintadoes, which were named Antarctic peterels, because they seemed to be natives of that region. January 31st, two islands of ice were seen in latitude 50 degrees, 50 minutes south, one of which appeared to be falling to pieces by the crackling noise it made; and this was the last ice seen, until they returned again to the southward. In the neighbourhood of this latitude they fell in with the islands discovered by Messrs. Thirguelen, St. Allouard and Marion, French navigators, all of which were islands of inconsiderable extent, high, rocky, destitute of trees,  
and

A. D. and almost intirely barren. It was supposed that the French 1773. had discovered the north cape of a great southern continent; but though that land was not found by captain Cook, his long navigation proves, that their discovery, if not an ice field, could only be a small island.

The Resolution lost sight of the Adventure the 8th of February, and the two sloops continued separate for the rest of the cruize, but afterwards met in Queen Charlotte's sound in New Zealand. They proceeded together to Otaheite, and other islands within the tropics, and again separated near to Cook's streights, and never more joined during the voyage. Captain Furneaux returned a second time to the place of rendezvous at Queen Charlotte's sound, but his consort having left that place a considerable time before his arrival, he, after refreshing his crew, set sail for England, which he reached in July 1774.

The Resolution continuing her voyage, in 58 degrees south, captain Cook observed for the first time, on February 17th, the Aurora Australis, a phenomenon which had never before been taken notice of by any navigator in the southern hemisphere. It consisted of long columns of a clear white light, shooting up from the horizon to the eastward, almost to the zenith, and spreading gradually over the whole southern part of the sky. These columns differed from the southern lights in being always of a whitish colour. The sky was generally clear when they appeared and the air sharp and cold, the thermometer standing at the freezing point. In March 26th, captain Cook made the coast of New Zealand, and anchored in Dusky bay, after having been one hundred and seventeen days at sea, without having once seen any land, in which time they had sailed three thousand six hundred and sixty leagues.

The captain continued during the following months, which are the winter season in that climate, to visit his old friends at Otaheite, the Society and Friendly Islands; and after examining a space of more than 40 degrees of longitude between the tropics, he returned to Queen Charlotte's sound. There he changed the fair-weather rigging of his ship for such as might resist the storms and rigours of the high southern latitudes, and  
set

set sail the 27th November to explore the unknown parts of the A. D. Pacific Ocean. On December 6th he reached the 51st degree, 32 1773 minutes south latitude, and the 180th degree east longitude, consequently the point of the antipodes of London. December 15th, in 66 degrees south, and 159 degrees west, the farther course to the southward was interrupted by the ice-islands, among which they were almost embayed, which obliged them to tack to the north, and soon after they got clear of all the ice, but not without receiving several knocks from the larger pieces, which would have destroyed any vessel less carefully prepared to resist those repeated shocks. They crossed the Antarctic circle a second time on December the 20th, in the longitude of 147 degrees, 46 minutes west. The next morning they saw innumerable ice-islands, high and rugged, their tops formed into various peaks, which distinguished them from those hitherto observed, which were commonly flat at the top. Many of those now seen were between two and three hundred feet in height, and between two and three miles in circuit, with perpendicular cliffs or sides, astonishing to behold. Most of their winged companions had now left them, except the grey albatrosses, and instead of the other birds, they were visited by a few Antarctic peterels, two of which were shot. From the appearance of the former, captain Cook says, "we may with reason conjecture that there is land to the south." December the 22d, they had penetrated to 67 degrees, 31 minutes south, being the highest latitude they had yet reached. The longitude was 142 degrees, 54 minutes west. They celebrated Christmas day the 25th with great festivity, the sailors feasting on a double portion of pudding, and regaling themselves with the brandy which they had saved from their allowance several months before, being solicitous to get very drunk. The sight of an immense number of ice-islands, among which the ship drifted at the mercy of the current, every moment in danger of being dashed in pieces, could not deter them from indulging in their favourite amusement; as long as they had brandy left, they would persist to keep Christmas, though the elements had conspired together for their destruction.

A. D. January 3d, 1774, being in latitude 56 degrees south, and longitude 140 degrees 31 minutes west, the wind obliged them to steer more to the north-east than they would have chosen, by which they left unexamined a space of 40 degrees of longitude, and 20 degrees of latitude; which, however, was afterwards explored on the return of the Resolution next year, and likewise by captain Furneaux in the Adventure much about this time. The wind increased so much on January the 15th, that it was very doubtful whether our navigators would return to give an account of their voyage. At nine at night a huge mountainous wave struck the ship on the beam and filled the deck with a deluge of water, which poured into the cabin, extinguished the lights, and left the gentlemen there in doubt whether they were not entirely overwhelmed, and sinking into the abyss. They passed for a third time the Antarctic circle on January 26th, in longitude 109 degrees west, when they found the mildest sun-shine that had been experienced in the frigid zone. This led them to entertain hopes of penetrating as far towards the south pole as other navigators had done towards the north; but the next day they discovered a solid ice field before them of immense extent, bearing from east to west. A bed of fragments floated all round this field, which seemed to be raised several feet high above the level of the water. Whilst in this situation, they observed the southern part of the horizon illuminated by the rays of light reflected from the ice to an amazing height. Ninety-seven ice-islands were counted within the field, beside these on the outside; many of them were large, and looked like a ridge of mountains, rising one above another till they were lost in the clouds. The outer or northern edge of this immense field was composed of loose or broken ice close packed together; so that it was not possible for any thing to enter it. Captain Cook, however, is of opinion, that there must be land to the south behind this ice; but adds, "It can afford no better retreat for birds, or any other animals, than the ice itself, with which it must be entirely covered. I who was ambitious not only of going farther than any body had gone before, but as far as it was possible for man to go, was not sorry at meeting with this interruption; as it in some measure relieved us, and shortened  
" the



the dangers and hardships inseparable from the navigation A. D.  
 “ of the southern polar regions. Since then we could not 1774.  
 “ proceed farther to the south, no other reason need be assigned  
 “ for my tacking and standing back to the north, being at this  
 “ time in the latitude of 71 degrees, 10 minutes south, and  
 “ longitude 106 degrees, 54 minutes west.”

Captain Cook then went in search of the land, said to have been discovered by Juan Fernandez about a century ago, in latitude 38 degrees, and laid down by Mr. Dalrymple in 90 degrees west, but no such land was found in this situation: if there is any land in the neighbourhood, it can be nothing but a small island. The captain then proceeded to the Marquesas islands discovered by Mendana in 1595, and visited a second time during this voyage the queen of tropical islands, Otaheite; where, having refreshed, he sailed for the new Hebrides, which though discovered as early as 1606 by that great navigator Quiros, had never been sufficiently explored. Captain Cook, besides ascertaining the extent and situation of the islands of this Archipelago, which had been barely seen by others, added the knowledge of several before unknown, which intitled him to give the whole the appellation which they now bear. They are situated in the direction of north-north west and south-south east, between the latitudes of 14 degrees, 29 minutes, and 20 degrees, 4 minutes south, and between the longitudes of 166 degrees, 41 minutes, and 170 degrees, 21 minutes east, extending 125 leagues. Of all these islands Tierra del Espiritu Santo is the most westerly and the largest, being twenty-two leagues in length, and twelve in breadth. The lands, especially on the west side, are exceedingly high and mountainous, generally covered with wood, and the vallies uncommonly luxuriant, watered by streams and chequered with plantations. On the west side is a large and safe bay, the two points which form its entrance lying at the distance of ten leagues from each other. The inhabitants are of a stout make, dark colour, with woolly hair; though almost naked, their persons are adorned with shells and feathers; round their middle they wear a narrow belt, from which is hung a matted belt which covers them behind and before as low as the knees. They had no other arms but spears with two or three

A. D. prongs, which seemed rather intended for attacking fish than  
 1774: men. The second day after the ship arrived on their coast they  
 were with much difficulty prevailed on to approach near enough  
 to receive some presents, of which nails were accepted with  
 the greatest pleasure. They fastened a branch of the pepper  
 plant to the rope by which the nails were let down, which was  
 the only return they made for the generosity of the strangers.  
 Their language bears some resemblance to that of the Friendly  
 Islands.

Mallicollo is the most considerable island next to *Espiritu Santo*, being 18 leagues in length, and 8 at its greatest breadth. It is not only fertile, but appears to have been very anciently inhabited, as the natives called it by nearly the same name which *Quiros* had received 160 years ago. The people here are described as the most ugly and ill-proportioned that can well be imagined, and differing in almost every respect from the other islanders in the South Sea. They are of a dark colour, and diminutive size, long heads, monkey faces, their hair black and curly, but not so soft or woolly as that of a negro. The men go quite naked; and what increases their natural deformity is a rope as thick as a man's finger tied round the belly, cutting a deep notch across the body, which seems divided into two parts by this tight and unnatural ligature. Most other nations invent some kind of covering from motives of shame, but here a roll of cloth, continually fastened to the belt, rather displays than conceals, and is the opposite of modesty. They are armed with spears, bows and arrows; but are of a more pacific disposition than most other savages, having ventured to the ship without much invitation, and received with much complacence the presents offered them, for which they made a suitable return. When they returned on shore the sound of singing and beating their drums was heard all night. Mr. Foster supposes there may be 50,000 inhabitants on this extensive island, which contains more than 60 square miles, covered for the most part with a continued forest, of which a few insulated spots only are cleared, which are lost in the extensive wild like small islands in the Pacific Ocean.

Very

Very few women were seen, but those few were no less ugly A. D. 1774. than the men; of a small stature, their heads, faces, and shoulders painted red. Their food consists principally of vegetables, which they cultivate with much care; hogs and fowls abound, and by means of their canoes they draw a considerable supply of fish from the ocean. When the Resolution was about to depart, captain Cook says, “ the natives came off in canoes, “ making exchanges with still greater confidence than before, “ and giving such extraordinary proofs of their honesty, as surprised us. As the ship at first had fresh way through the “ water, several of the canoes dropped astern after they had “ received goods, and before they had time to deliver theirs “ in return; instead of taking advantage of this, as our friends “ at the Society Islands would have done, they used their utmost “ efforts to get up with us, and deliver what they had already “ been paid for; one man in particular followed us a considerable time, and did not reach us till it was calm, and the “ thing was forgotten; as soon as he came along-side he held “ up the article, which several on board were ready to buy, “ but he refused to part with it till he saw the person to whom “ he had before sold it; this person not knowing the man again, “ offered him something in return, which he constantly refused, “ and showing him what had been given before, at length “ made him sensible of the nice point of honour by which he “ was actuated.” Besides excelling all their neighbours in probity, they appeared the most intelligent of any nation that had been seen in the South Sea. They readily understood the meaning conveyed by signs and gestures, and in a few minutes taught the gentlemen of the ship several words in their language, which is wholly distinct from that general tongue of which so many dialects are spoken at the Society Islands, the Marquesas, Friendly Isles, Easter Island and New Zealand. They were not only assiduous in teaching, but had great curiosity to learn the language of the strangers, which they pronounced with such accuracy, and retained with such force of recollection, as led their instructors to admire their extensive faculties and quick apprehension; so that what they wanted in person or beauty

A. D. was amply compensated to them in acuteness of understanding, 1774. and probity of heart.

Captain Cook continued sixteen days at another island called Tanna, distinguished by a furious volcano, which was seen burning at a great distance at sea. The soil of this island is composed of decayed vegetables intermixed with the ashes of the volcano, and the country is in general so covered with trees, shrubs, and plants, as to choak up the bread-fruit and cocoa nuts. The natives are not numerous, but stronger and better proportioned than the Mallicollese. Not one single corpulent man was seen here; all are active and full of spirit. Their features are large, the nose broad, but the eyes full and generally agreeable. They seem to excel in the use of arms, yet they are not fond of labour; they never would put a hand to assist in any work the ship's company was carrying on, which the Indians of other islands used to delight in: here they throw all the laborious drudgery on the women, many of whom were seen carrying a child on their backs, and a bundle under their arm, and a fellow strutting before them with only a club or a spear. The plantations consist of yams, bunanas, eddoes and sugar canes, all which being very low, permit the eye to take in a great extent of country. There are plenty of hogs, but very few domestic fowls. Rats of the same species common in the other islands were seen running about in great numbers. They particularly frequent the fields of sugar canes, where they make destructive depredations.

Captain Cook continued surveying these islands during the month of August, 1774; from which he set sail the 1st September, and having stood to south-west all night, next day no more land was to be seen. On the 4th of September, being in the latitude of 19 degrees 14 minutes south, and the longitude of 165 degrees east, land was discovered bearing south-south-west, for which he continued to steer till five in the evening. The ship had hardly got to an anchor on the 5th before it was surrounded by a great number of canoes, carrying the natives, most of whom were unarmed. They were prevailed on to receive some presents, lowered down to them by a rope, in return for which they tied two fish that stunk intolerably. These  
mutual

mutual exchanges brought on a degree of confidence; several A.D. came on board, and stayed dinner, but could not be persuaded 1774 to eat any thing but yams. They were curious in examining every part of the ship, which they viewed with uncommon attention. They were fond of spike nails, and pieces of coloured cloth, especially red. After dinner the captain went on shore with two armed boats, carrying with him one of the natives, who had conceived an attachment for him. They landed on a sandy beach before a vast number of people, who had assembled merely from curiosity. The captain made presents to all those his friend pointed out, who were either old men, or such as seemed to be persons of some note: he offered to make presents to some women who stood behind the crowd, but his friend restrained him from this act of complaisance. A chief, named Teabooma, then made a speech consisting of short sentences, to each of which two or three old men answered by nodding their heads, and giving a kind of grunt, significant of approbation. The speech was made on account of the strangers, to whom it seemed to be very favourable. The captain having then inquired by signs for fresh water, some pointed to the east, and others to the west. His friend undertook to conduct him to it in the boats; and having rowed about two miles up the coast to the east, where the shore was mostly covered with mangrove trees, they entered by a narrow creek, which led to a little straggling village, near which was abundance of fresh water. The ground near this village was finely cultivated, being laid out in plantations of sugar cane, plantains, yams, and other roots, and watered by little rills, artfully conducted from the main stream which flowed from the hills. Here were some cocoa-nut trees, which did not seem burdened with fruit: the crowing of cocks was heard, but none of them were seen. In proceeding up the creek, Mr. Foster shot a duck, which was the first use these people saw of fire-arms. The captain's friend was at much pains to explain to his countrymen how it had been killed. "The day being far spent," says the captain, "and the tide not permitting us to stay longer in the creek, we took leave of the people, and got on board a little after sun-set. From this little excursion I found we were to expect nothing from

A. D. "from these people but the privilege of visiting their country  
1774. "undisturbed. For it was easy to see they had little more than  
"good nature to bestow. In this they exceeded all the nations  
"we had yet met; and although it did not satisfy the demands  
"of nature, it at once pleased, and left our minds at ease."

The captain continued the greatest part of the month in examining this island, to which he gave the name of New Caledonia. It is the largest of all the tropical islands in those parts, and, excepting New Holland and New Zealand, is the largest that has been discovered in the south Pacific Ocean. It extends from 19 degrees, 37 minutes, to 22 degrees, 30 minutes south latitude, and from 163 degrees, 37 minutes, to 167 degrees, 14 minutes east longitude; being twelve degrees distant from New Holland; and the country bearing a strong resemblance to those parts of New South Wales that lie under the same parallel of latitude. The whole coast seems to be surrounded by reefs and shoals which render the access to it very dangerous; but at the same time guard the coasts against the violence of the wind and sea, cause them to abound with fish, and secure an easy and safe navigation for canoes. These Indians are stout, tall, and in general well proportioned; their beards and hair black and strongly frizzled, so as to be almost woolly in some individuals. They are remarkably courteous and friendly; but their appearance is very indecent, every Caledonian being, like the natives of Tanna and Mallicollo, an ambulant statue of the Roman garden-god. Yet there was not a single instance of the women permitting any improper familiarities. They sometimes indeed mixed in the crowd, and amused themselves with encouraging the proposals of the seamen, beckoning them to come along the bushes; but as soon as the sailors followed, they gave them the slip, running away with great agility, and laughing very heartily at their ridiculous disappointment.

Their houses or huts are circular as a bee-hive, and full as close and warm. The entrance is by a square hole, big enough to admit a man bent double; the side-walls four feet and a half high, the roof more lofty, peaked at the top, and supporting a post of wood ornamented with carving or shells. They commonly erect several huts in the neighbourhood of each other,  
under

under a cluster of thick fig-trees, whose foliage is impervious to A. D. the rays of the sun. The ship did not continue long enough on 1774- this coast for the captain to acquire any certain knowledge concerning the language, government, and religion of the natives. They are governed by chiefs, like the inhabitants of the New Hebrides, and pay a great degree of deference to old age. No circumstance was observed in their behaviour which denoted the smallest superstition of any kind.

After leaving New Caledonia, the *Resolution*, steering southward, fell in with an uninhabited island the 10th October, 1774, which the captain named *Norfolk Isle*, in honour of the noble family of Howard. It lies in latitude 29 degrees 2 minutes south, longitude 168 degrees 16 minutes east. It is about three miles long, very steep, covered with cypress trees, abounding in a red porous lava, which indicates that this island had been a volcano. The productions of New Zealand are here combined with those of the New Hebrides and Caledonia, for the cypress of the one, as well as the cabbage palm of the other, flourish in great perfection; the former yielding timber for the carpenter, and the latter affording a most palatable and wholesome refreshment. The fish caught here, together with the birds and vegetables, enabled the ship's company to fare sumptuously every day during their stay. Here is likewise the valuable flax plant of New Zealand; all which circumstances, if the island were a little larger, would render it an unexceptionable place for an European settlement.

The greatest defect of *Norfolk island*, as well as of all those lately visited, is the scarcity of animal food, with which, however, they might easily be stored in great abundance. But this circumstance obliged the captain to sail again for New Zealand, where he came to an anchor in *Queen Charlotte's Sound* the 19th October, 1774. Here he continued till the 10th of November, when, having already satisfied himself of the non-existence of an undiscovered continent in the Pacific Ocean, he proceeded to examine the Magellanic regions, and by exploring the unknown parts of the Atlantic and Indian oceans, to complete the survey of the southern hemisphere. The first object of this cruise was to discover an extensive coast laid down by Mr. Dalrymple,

A. D. between 40 and 53 degrees west longitude, and in the latitude of 1774- 54 and 58 degrees south, in which he places the bay of St. Sebastian. But no such coast was to be found; and as captain Furneaux in the *Adventure* passed across that part where the eastern and western shores are laid down, it appears that no such land exists in the situation assigned to it in the English or French charts. On January 14th, 1775, land was discovered in latitude 53 degrees 56 minutes south, longitude 39 degrees 24 minutes west; the mountains appeared of an immense height, covered with snow and ice to the water's edge. Towards the south several low lands were seen, which appeared to have some verdure upon them, and were therefore called the Green Islands. This land, which was at first supposed to be part of a great continent, was found at length to be an island of 70 leagues in circuit, between the latitudes of 53 degrees 57 minutes and 54 degrees 57 minutes south, and the longitudes of 38 degrees 13 minutes and 35 degrees 34 minutes west. It is not easy to conceive any thing more dismal than the face of nature in this island. Though it was in the midst of the summer of that climate, the island seemed in a manner walled round with ice, and must have been nearly inaccessible in any other season. Captain Cook landed in a bay on the northern side, which he called Possession Bay, because here he took possession for his majesty of this dreary mansion of sterility under the name of Southern Georgia. The head of the bay, as well as two places on each side, were terminated by perpendicular cliffs of great height, such as are found in the harbour of Spitzbergen in the northern hemisphere. Pieces were continually breaking off, and floating out to sea; and a great fall happened while the ship was in the bay, which made a noise like cannon. The other parts of the country were not less savage and horrible. The wild rocks raised their lofty summits till they were lost in the clouds, and the vallies lay involved in snow, affording no trees nor shrubs, nor the least signs of vegetation. Captain Cook examined also the southern parts of this island, which afforded nothing but a strong-bladed grass growing in tufts, wild burnet, and a plant of the mossy kind springing from the rocks. Seals, sea-lions, and penguins were the only appearances of animated nature in  
this



This land of desolation, which the captain left on the 26th of As D. January, intending to steer east-south-east until he arrived in 60° 1774- degrees latitude, beyond which he meant not to proceed, unless he discovered certain signs of falling in with land. In the prosecution of this design he met with nothing but thick fogs and continual islands of ice, the unintermitting aspect of which at length tired even this persevering adventurer. Many on board were at this time afflicted with severe rheumatic pains and colds, and some were suddenly taken with fainting fits, since their unwholesome, juiceless food could not supply the waste of animal spirits. When the hope of reaching a milder climate diffused a general satisfaction another frozen country rose to their view the 31st January. Captain Cook gave the name of Sandwich Land to this discovery, which may possibly be the northern point of a continent; for he is of opinion, that there is a tract of land near the pole, which is the source of most of the ice that is spread over this vast southern ocean. He likewise thinks that it extends farthest to the north, opposite the Southern Atlantic and Indian oceans, because ice was always found more to the north in those seas than in the southern Pacific, which he imagines would not happen unless there was land of considerable extent to the south. But the danger of exploring these unknown regions of winter is so great that he concludes, seemingly on good grounds, that no man will ever venture farther than he has done. The most southern extremity that was seen lies in latitude 59 degrees 30 minutes south, longitude 27 degrees 30 minutes west. To this he gave the name of Southern Thule, beyond which nothing, perhaps, will ever be discovered. It is impossible to conceive any prospect more inexpressibly horrid than the appearance of this country; a country doomed by nature never to feel the genial warmth of the sun's rays, and where all life and vegetation are for ever shut up in eternal frost. This forbidden coast admitted of no anchorage; every place that looked like a harbour being blocked up with ice. Captain Cook having thus fully accomplished the design of his voyage, proceeded northward, and arrived at the Cape of Good Hope as above mentioned.

A. D. Before we conclude the history of this voyage, it must not be  
 1774 omitted that captain Cook, when he returned to Otaheite, April  
 1774, had an opportunity of examining with more accuracy  
 than had been hitherto done, the naval force of this island.  
 Having gone by appointment to the district called Opparee, to  
 pay a visit to Otoo the king, he observed a number of large  
 canoes in motion; all of which, to the number of three hun-  
 dred and thirty, drew up in regular order, completely manned  
 and equipped. The vessels were decorated with flags and  
 streamers, so that the whole made a more splendid appearance  
 than could have been expected in those seas. Their instruments  
 of war were clubs, spears, and stones; the canoes were ranged  
 close along-side of each other with their heads ashore, and the  
 stem to the sea; the admiral's vessel being nearly in the centre.  
 Besides the vessels of war, there were an hundred and seventy  
 sail of smaller double canoes, all with a little house upon them,  
 and rigged with mast and sail, which the war canoes had not.  
 The former must have been intended for transports and victual-  
 lers, for in the war canoes there was no sort of provisions  
 whatever. In all the three hundred and thirty vessels the cap-  
 tain guessed there might be seven thousand seven hundred and  
 sixty men, a number which, he says, appears incredible, especial-  
 ly as he was told the whole belonged to two districts, the island  
 being divided into more than forty. In this computation, how-  
 ever, he allowed but forty men, troops and rowers, to each of  
 the larger canoes, and eight to each of the smaller; an estimate  
 which all his officers agreed rather to fall short of, than to ex-  
 ceed the truth. The fleet was going out to attack the inhabi-  
 tants of Eimeo, who had ventured to provoke the Otaheiteans to  
 a naval engagement. The captain was obliged to depart before  
 he saw the conclusion of this affair; but the marine strength  
 which he witnessed led him to important reflections concerning  
 the populousness of Otaheite. "It had been observed," he says,  
 "that the number of war canoes belonging to the districts of  
 Attahourou and Ahopata was an hundred and sixty; to Tet-  
 taha forty, and to Matavai ten; and that this district did  
 not equip one fourth part of that number. If we suppose  
 every district in the island, of which there are forty-three, to  
 raise

" raise and equip the same number of war canoes as Tettaba, we A. D.  
 " shall find, by this estimate, that the whole island can raise and 1774  
 " equip 1720 war canoes, and 68,000 able seamen; allowing  
 " forty men to each canoe. And, as these cannot amount to  
 " above one third part of the number of both sexes, children  
 " included, the whole island cannot contain less than 204,000  
 " inhabitants; a number which at first sight exceeded my be-  
 " lief. But, when I came to reflect on the vast swarms which  
 " appeared wherever we came, I was convinced that this estimate  
 " was not much, if at all, too great. There cannot be a greater  
 " proof of the richness and fertility of Otaheite, (not forty  
 " leagues in circuit), than its supporting such a number of in-  
 " habitants." We now return from describing the discoveries  
 of this enterprising and judicious commander, to relate the se-  
 quel of our domestic misfortunes.

It has been already observed, that although the ministry had  
 given way to the refractory spirit of the colonies in many other  
 instances, yet the odious and ill-judged tax on tea imported into  
 America was still supported by the force of an act of parlia-  
 ment. This regulation, which had been much objected to at  
 home, was universally obnoxious on the other side of the Atlan-  
 tic. The Americans foresaw, that if the tea was once landed,  
 and in the hands of consignees appointed by the East India Com-  
 pany, which had lately fallen under the direction of govern-  
 ment, it would be impossible to prevent its sale and consumption:  
 and they therefore considered the duty on this commodity as a  
 measure calculated to deceive them into a general compliance  
 with the revenue laws, and thereby to open a door to unlimited  
 taxation. Besides, all the dealers both legal and clandestine,  
 who, as tea is an article of such general consumption in Ameri-  
 ca, were extremely powerful, saw their trade at once taken out  
 of their hands. Views of private interest thus conspiring with  
 motives of public zeal, the spirit of opposition universally diffu-  
 sed itself throughout the colonies, who determined to prevent  
 the landing of the tea by every means in their power.

Meanwhile the tea ships had sailed from England, October,  
 1773, with the following destinations: For Boston, New York,  
 and Philadelphia, three ships, each loaded with 600 chests of

tea;

A. D. tea; for Charlestown and Rhode-Island, two ships, loaded with 1774 200 chests each; the whole amounting to 2200 chests. As the time of this arrival approached, the people assembled in different places in great bodies in order to concert measures for preventing this dangerous importation. The consignees appointed for vending the tea by the East India Company, were compelled, in most places, at the risk of their lives and properties, to relinquish their employments. Committees were appointed by the people to propose tests, and to punish those who refused subscribing whatever was proposed, as enemies to their country. In the tumultuary assemblies held on these occasions innumerable resolutions were passed derogatory to the legislative power of Great Britain. Inflammatory hand-bills and other seditious papers were published at New York, Charlestown, and Philadelphia; but Boston, which had so long taken the lead in rebellion, was the scene of the first outrage. The ships laden with tea having arrived in that port, were boarded (18th December, 1773) by a number of armed men, under the disguise of Mohawk Indians, who in a few hours discharged the valuable cargoes into the sea. Charlestown in South Carolina followed this pernicious example. At New York alone the tea was landed under the cannon of a man of war.

When the American dispatches arrived, March 7, 1774, and brought advice of the outrages committed against the tea-ships at Boston, his majesty sent a message to both houses, in which they are informed, that in consequence of the unwarrantable practices carried on in North America, and particularly of the violent proceedings at the town and port of Boston, with a view of obstructing the commerce of this kingdom, and upon grounds and pretences immediately subversive of its constitution, it was thought fit to lay the whole matter before parliament; that they may enable his majesty to take such measures as may be most likely to put an immediate stop to those disorders, and consider what farther regulations may be necessary for securing the execution of the laws, and the just dependence of the colonies upon the crown and parliament of Great Britain. The minister who delivered this message allowed, that the destruction of the tea at Boston might have been prevented by calling in the assistance of the

the naval force which lay in the harbour; but as the leading A. D. men in that city had always made great complaints of the inter-<sup>1774</sup>position of the army and navy, and charged all disturbances of every sort to their account, this assistance had with great prudence been declined; the Bostonians were left to the free exercise of their own judgment, and the result had given the lie to all their former professions.

The message and declaration seemed to be at variance with each other. In the former his majesty desires the parliament to empower him to stop the course of disorders, which the minister allows might have been prevented by the exertion of that force with which he was already intrusted. But it seems that government had not as yet been sufficiently persuaded of the evil intentions of the inhabitants of Boston, and wished to give them a farther opportunity of displaying the most extensive depravity of their political characters. This being now evident to every unprejudiced mind, the minister opened his plan for the restoration of peace, order, justice, and commerce in the Massachusetts Bay. He stated that the opposition to the authority of parliament had always originated in that colony, which had been instigated to a rebellious conduct by the irregular and seditious proceedings of the town of Boston. That therefore, for the purpose of a thorough reformation, it became necessary to begin with that town, which by a late unparalleled outrage had led the way to the destruction of commerce in all parts of America. That, had such an insult been offered to British property in a foreign port, the nation would have been intitled to demand satisfaction. He proposed, therefore, that the town of Boston should be obliged to pay for the tea which had been destroyed, and to give security in future that trade may be safely carried on, property protected, laws obeyed, and duties regularly paid. For this purpose, he said, it would be necessary to take away from Boston the privilege of a port until his majesty should be satisfied in these particulars. Upon these arguments leave was given to bring in a bill (March 14th) “ for the immediate removal of the officers  
“ concerned in collecting the customs from the town of Boston  
“ in the province of the Massachusetts Bay in North America,  
“ and to discontinue the landing and discharging, lading and  
“ shipping

A.D. " shipping of goods, wares, and merchandise at the said town 1774. " of Boston, or within the harbour thereof." This bill passed in the house of commons the 25th of March; and, after being carried up to the lords, received the royal assent the 31st of March.

This law forms the æra at which has been dated the decisive resolution of parliament to proceed to extremities with the province of Massachusetts Bay. Besides the ships of war already in America, the *Preston*, admiral *Graves*, with the *Royal Oak*, *Worcester*, and *Egmont*, were ordered to repair with all convenient speed to Boston. But at the same time that these resolutions were taken, general *Gage* was appointed governor of the obnoxious colony, a gentleman who had long resided there, and was well acquainted with the inhabitants, with whom he had formed the most intimate connections. This to many afforded a proof that the ministry had fallen back into their former irresolution; and the Bostonians threatened on the one hand with an act which deprived them of their ordinary means of subsistence, and foothed on the other by the appointment of a governor most agreeable to their wishes, maintained their wonted spirit, and continued to defy the equivocal, temporizing timidity of the mother country. They ventured to hold a town-meeting, at which they resolved to invite the other colonies to stop all imports and exports to and from Great Britain, Ireland, and the West Indies, until the Boston port bill should be repealed. They artfully connected the safety of the liberties of North America with the punishment of one rebellious city, and, expatiating on the injustice and cruelty of the odious bill, appealed from it to God and the world. The governor arrived the middle of May, and was received at Boston with the usual honours. He laid nothing before the provincial assembly but what the ordinary business required; but gave them notice of their removal to the town of Salem on the first of June, in pursuance of the late act of parliament.

Meanwhile the Boston port bill, as well as the resolutions taken at the town-meeting, were dispatched to every part of the continent. These, like the Fury's torch, set the countries every where in a flame through which they passed. At New York the populace

populate had copies of the bill printed upon mourning paper, A. D. which they cried about the streets under the title of a barbarous, 1774. cruel, bloody, and inhuman murder. The house of burgesses in Virginia appointed the first of June, the day on which the Boston bill was to have effect, to be set apart for fasting, prayer, and humiliation; an example which was followed by almost every province of North America. Even the inhabitants of Salem who derived evident advantage from the degradation of a neighbouring town, declared that they must be dead to every idea of justice, and lost to all the feelings of humanity, if they could indulge one thought to seize on wealth, and raise their fortunes on the ruins of their suffering neighbours.

Thus the Boston port bill, unassisted by these active exertions of the military or naval power of Great Britain which might have rendered it an object of terror, raised a flame from one end to the other of the continent of America, and united all the old colonies in one common cause. They all agreed in determining not to submit to the payment of any internal taxes that were not imposed by their own assemblies, and to suspend all commerce with the mother country, until the American grievances in general, and those in Massachusetts Bay in particular, were fully redressed. Nor were they less unanimous in entering into a general agreement, which was formed at Boston under the name of a solemn league and covenant for mutually supporting each other, and maintaining what they deemed the rights of freemen, inviolate. They soon after appointed deputies from each province to attend a General Congress, which should contain the united voice and wisdom of America, and which they agreed should be held at Philadelphia the 5th of September, 1774. Among the first acts of this assembly was a declaration in which they acknowledge their dependence, but insist on their privileges. They cheerfully consent to the operation of such acts of the British legislature as are confined to the regulation of their external commerce, for the purpose of securing the commercial advantages of the whole empire to the mother country: but they insist, that the foundation of the English constitution and of all free government, is a right in the people to participate in their legislative council, and as the colonies are not, and from

A. D. various causes cannot be represented in the British parliament,  
 1774. they are intitled to a free and exclusive legislation in their several provincial assemblies, in all cases of taxation and internal policy. They recommend to the several provinces the continuance of the measures which they had already adopted, for establishing a powerful national militia, and for raising money to pay those brave troops who would at every hazard defend the privileges of America.

The General Congress gave a confidence to the designs of twelve colonies differing in religion, manners and forms of government, and infected with all the local prejudices and aversions incident to neighbouring states. The strength which all derived from this formidable union might have been sufficient to alarm Great Britain; but the ministry, instead of fleets and armies, continued still to fight the Americans with acts of parliament. For this purpose the first lord of the treasury moved,  
 1775. 10th February, 1775, for leave to bring in a bill to restore the trade and commerce of the province of Massachusetts Bay and New Hampshire, as well as of the colonies of Connecticut and Rhode Island; and to prohibit these provinces from carrying on any fishery on the banks of Newfoundland, and other places therein mentioned. Upon the third reading of this bill a motion was made for an amendment, that the colonies of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, and South Carolina, should be included in the same restrictions with the New England provinces. This amendment, however, was over-ruled; although it could hardly be denied that these provinces had rendered themselves equally culpable with those of New England. Nearly about the same time, parliament voted an augmentation of 4383 soldiers, and 2000 seamen; and it was intended that the troops at Boston should amount to full ten thousand, a number deemed more than sufficient for quelling the present disturbance. While the nation seemed in general heartily to concur in those vigorous measures, they were not a little astonished at the famous conciliatory motion made by lord North, containing the following resolution: " That when the governor, council  
 " and assembly of any colony should be willing to contribute  
 " their proportion to the common defence, and for the support  
 " of



“ of the civil government, such proportion to be raised under A. D.  
 “ the authority of the assembly of that province, it will be pro- 1775.  
 “ per to forbear imposing or levying any tax, duty or assessment  
 “ from the said province, excepting only such duties as it may  
 “ be expedient to impose for the regulation of commerce.”

This proposition was considered by many of those who supported the general measures of government, as a dereliction of those rights which they had hitherto contended to be essential to the British legislature; while the opposition asserted, that it would be received with the same indignation by the Americans, as every other measure intended to disunite their interests.

This law which occasioned great discontent in England, met not with the smallest regard in America. While the parliament were employed in enacting it, the ill humour that prevailed among the troops and inhabitants at Boston, broke out into action. It is still undecided which party commenced hostilities; but the skirmishes at Lexington and Concord, proved the bravery of the Provincials far superior to the ideas generally entertained of it. The blood shed on these occasions excited the greatest indignation in the other colonies, and they prepared for war with as much eagerness and dispatch, as if an enemy had already appeared in their own territories. In some places the magazines were seized, in others the treasury, and without waiting for any account or advice, a stop was almost every where put at the same time to the exportation of provisions. The governor and forces at Boston, as well as the inhabitants, continued closely blocked up by land; while they were excluded from all supplies of fresh provisions, which the neighbouring countries could have afforded them by sea. As the military stores began to be exhausted without the possibility of receiving any speedy supply, the governor thought proper to enter into a capitulation with the Bostonians, by which, upon condition of delivering up their arms, they were allowed to depart with all their other effects. Though all the poor and helpless were sent out, and many others obtained passports both then, and at different times afterwards, yet the greater part of the inhabitants were upon different grounds obliged to remain in the city, which breach of faith, as the Americans termed it on the part

A. D. of general Gage, is described with great indignation in all their 1775 subsequent publications.

The Continental Congress, met at Philadelphia May 10th, 1775, and adopted such measures as confirmed the people in their warlike resolutions. They provided for the array and support of an army, named generals, established a paper currency, for the realizing the value of which the "Twelve United Colonies" became securities; soon after Georgia acceded to the Congress, from which time they were distinguished by the name of the "Thirteen United Colonies." It was said, that in the whole extent of North America, from Nova Scotia to Florida, near 200,000 men were training to arms under the auspices of the Congress. This assembly took measures not only for defending themselves, but for distressing their enemies. They strictly prohibited the supplying of the British fisheries with any kind of provision; and to render this order effectual, stopt all exportation to those colonies and islands which still retained their obedience. This prohibition occasioned no small distress to the people at Newfoundland, and to all those employed in the fisheries; insomuch, that, to prevent an absolute famine, several ships were under a necessity of returning light from that station, to carry out cargoes of provisions from Ireland.

In the mean time, several private persons, belonging to the back parts of Connecticut, Massachusetts, and New York, without any public command, or participation that has hitherto been discovered, undertook an expedition of the utmost importance, and which threatened to deprive Great Britain of every single possession which she held in North America. This was the surprize of Ticonderago, Crown-Point and other fortresses, situated upon the lakes, and commanding the passes between the ancient English colonies and Canada. These adventurers, amounting in the whole to about 240 men, seized Ticonderago and Crown-Point, in which they found above 200 pieces of cannon, besides mortars, howitzers, and large quantities of various stores; they also took two vessels, which gave them the command of Lake Champlain, and materials ready prepared at Ticonderago for the equipping of others.

Although the troops at Boston were greatly reinforced by the arrival of the generals Howe, Burgoyne, and Clinton, a considerable

considerable body of marines, and several regiments from Ire- A. D.  
land, they continued patiently to submit to all the inconveni- 1775-  
encies of a blockade; nor did they receive any considerable as-  
sistance from the great number of ships of war which almost  
surrounded the peninsula. The Congress published a resolution,  
June 8th, importing the compact between the crown and the  
people of Massachusetts Bay, to be dissolved. This was fol-  
lowed by a proclamation of general Gage, (June 12th), by  
which a pardon was offered in the king's name, to all those  
who should forthwith lay down their arms, and punishment de-  
nounced against those who obstinately persisted in disobedience.  
They were to be treated as rebels and traitors; and as the reg-  
ular course of justice was stopped, martial law was to take  
place until the rules of civil equity were restored to their due  
efficacy.

The Provincials considering this proclamation as an imme-  
diate prelude to hostility, determined to be before hand with  
their enemies. Having made the necessary preparations for  
seizing the port of Charlestown, they sent a number of men  
with the greatest privacy in the night, to throw up works upon  
Bunker's Hill. This was effected with such extraordinary or-  
der and silence, and such incredible dispatch, that none of the  
ships of war which covered the shore, heard the noise of the  
workmen, who by the morning had made a small but strong  
redoubt, considerable entrenchments, and a breast-work, that  
was in some parts cannon proof. The sight of these works  
was the first thing that alarmed the Lively man of war, and her  
guns called the town, camp, and fleet to behold a sight, which  
seemed little less than a prodigy. A heavy and continual fire  
of cannon, howitzers, and mortars, was from this time carried  
on against the works, from the ship, and floating batteries, as  
well as from the top of Cop's Hill in Boston. About noon,  
general Gage caused a considerable body of troops to be em-  
barked under the command of major-general Howe, and brig-  
adier-general Pigot, to drive the Provincials from their works.  
These troops, consisting of ten companies of grenadiers, as ma-  
ny of light infantry, and the 5th, 38th, 43d, and 52d battalions,  
with a proper train of artillery, were landed and drawn up  
without

A. D. without opposition, under the fire of the ships of war. The 1775. two generals found the enemy so numerous, and in such a posture of defence, that they thought it necessary to send back for a reinforcement before they commenced the attack; they were accordingly joined by two companies of light infantry and grenadiers, by the 47th regiment, and by the first battalion of marines, amounting in the whole to something more than 2000 men.

The attack began by a most severe fire of cannon and howitzers, under which the troops advanced slowly towards the enemy, to afford an opportunity to the artillery to ruin the works, and to throw the Provincials into confusion. These, however, sustained the assault with a firmness that would have done honour to regular troops, and detached a body of men to Charlestown which covered their right flank. General Pigot, who commanded the right wing was thus obliged to engage at the same time with the lines and with those in the houses. During this conflict, Charlestown was set on fire; whether by the troops, or by carcasses thrown from the ships, is uncertain, but that large and beautiful town, which, being the first settlement in the colony, was considered as the mother of Boston, was in one day burnt to the ground. The Provincials did not return a shot until the king's forces had approached almost to the works, where a most dreadful fire took place, by which above a thousand of our bravest men and officers fell. In this action, one of the hottest ever known, (considering the number engaged), our troops were thrown into some disorder; but in this critical moment general Clinton, who arrived from Boston during the engagement, rallied them by a happy manœuvre, and brought them instantaneously to the charge. They attacked the works with fixed bayonets and irresistible bravery, and carried them in every quarter. The Provincials fought desperately, but being, as they affirm, destitute of bayonets, and their powder expended, they were obliged to retreat over Charlestown neck, which was enfiladed by the guns of the Glasgow man of war, and of two floating batteries. The king's troops took five pieces of cannon, but no prisoners except 30, who were so severely wounded that they could not escape.

The

The possession of part of the peninsula of Charlestown, and A. D. of Bunker's Hill, which was immediately fortified, enlarged the quarters of the troops, who had been much incommoded by the streightness in which they were confined in Boston; but this advantage was counterbalanced by the great additional duty which they were now obliged to perform. Besides, the Provincials lost no time in throwing up works upon another hill opposite to Bunker's, on the side of Charlestown neck which was still in their possession. The troops were thus as closely invested in this peninsula as they had been in Boston. Their situation was irksome and degrading, being surrounded and insulted by an enemy whom they had been taught to despise, and cut off from all those refreshments of which they stood in the greatest need.

The resentment occasioned by their sufferings probably engaged them to continue a great cannonade upon the works of the Provincials, which could have little other effect than to inuse them to that sort of service in which they were employed. A regiment of light cavalry which arrived from Ireland, increased the wants of the garrison, without being of the smallest use, as the cavalry were never able to set foot without the fortifications. The hay which grew upon the islands in the bay, as well as the sheep and cattle which they contained, became an object of great attention to the king's troops; but the Provincials having prepared a number of whaling boats, and being masters of the shore and inlets of the bay, were, notwithstanding the number of the ships of war and armed vessels, too successful in burning, destroying, and carrying away those essential articles of supply. These enterprizes brought on several skirmishes, and the enemy grew at length so daring that they burnt the light-house situated on an island at the entrance of the harbour, though a man of war lay within a mile of them at the time; and some carpenters being afterwards sent, under the protection of a small party of marines, to erect a temporary light-house, they killed or carried off the whole detachment. From this time a sort of predatory war commenced between the king's ships and the inhabitants on different parts of the coast. The former, being refused the supplies of provisions and necessaries which they wanted for themselves

A. D. themselves or the army, endeavoured to obtain them by force, 1775. and in these attempts were frequently opposed, and sometimes repulsed with loss by the country people. The seizing of ships, in conformity to the new laws for restraining the commerce of the New England provinces, was also a continual source of animosity and violence, the proprietors hazarding all dangers in defending or recovering their vessels. These contests drew the vengeance of the men of war upon several of the small towns upon the sea-coasts, some of which underwent a severe chastisement.

The parliament, which met in October, 1775, seemed more firmly determined than on any former occasion, to pursue what were called vigorous measures by the majority, and which the opposition distinguished by the epithets of cruel, bloody, and unjust. The American petitions addressed to the crown were rejected with contempt or indignation; and it was determined to carry on the war with a spirit that should astonish all Europe, and to employ such fleets and armies in the ensuing year as had never before entered the new world. A motion was made from the admiralty, in the committee of supply, that 28,000 seamen, including 6665 marines, should be voted for the service of the year 1776. This was accompanied with a general outline of the services to which the navy should be applied; particularly, that the fleet on the North American station should amount to 78 sail. This would, doubtless, employ the greatest part of the seamen proposed; and happily the affairs of Europe did not require any considerable exertion of our naval strength. The professions of the neighbouring courts were pacific and friendly; and what was of more weight than professions, their preparations were nowise alarming. At any rate our guardships were so numerous and so well appointed, that they might on the shortest notice be rendered superior to any force that our rivals could assemble. The motion for the augmentation was passed; though not without severe animadversion from the most distinguished of our naval commanders, who arraigned in the plainest terms the present government and conduct of our naval affairs, and insisted that the establishment now proposed, though too  
great

great for peace, was by no means adequate to the demands of A. D.  
a war. 1775.

On the day following, (8th November), the minister of the war department, having laid the estimates for the land service before the committee of supply, shewed that our whole military force would amount to 55,000 men, of which upwards of 25,000 would be employed in America. On this occasion also many gentlemen affirmed, that the proposed force was totally unequal to the purpose of conquering America by force of arms; the measure upon which the ministry seemed now absolutely determined. This was supported by the opinion of a great general officer who had been long in administration; the other military gentlemen were called upon to declare their dissent if they thought otherwise, but they all continued silent.

A few days afterwards, the first lord of the treasury brought in the famous prohibitory bill, totally interdicting all trade and intercourse with the Thirteen United Colonies. All property of Americans, whether of ships or goods, on the high seas or in harbour, are declared forfeited to the captors, being the officers and crews of his majesty's ships of war; and several clauses were inserted in the bill to facilitate and lessen the expence of the condemning of prizes, and the recovery of prize-money. But, in order to soften these harsh measures, the bill enabled the crown to appoint commissioners, who, besides the power of granting pardons to individuals, were authorised to inquire into general grievances, and empowered to determine whether any part, or the whole of a colony, were returned to that state of obedience which intitled them to be received within the king's peace and protection; in which case the restrictions of the present bill were to cease in their favour.

After all the boasted preparations for hostility, the seeming contradiction in this bill was thought by many to support the consistent character of administration. It was still the same alternative of war and peace; peace offered by Great Britain who had received the injury, and not by her enemies, on whom she pretended to be ready to wreak the whole weight of her vengeance. This mixed system of war and conciliation was represented as highly improper at the present juncture. The measure

A.D. adopted, whether of peace or war, should be clear, simple, 1775. and decided, not involved in doubt, perplexity and darkness. If war is resolved, and it is determined to compel America to submission, let the means of coercion be such as will, to a moral certainty, insure success. Our fleets and armies must command terms, which will in vain be solicited by our commissioners.

While these preparations and debates occupied the British senate, the designs of the Americans gradually became more daring. Their successful expedition to the lakes, with the reduction of Ticonderago and Crown Point, had opened the gates of Canada; and the Congress came to the bold resolution of sending a force to invade and conquer that loyal colony. The generals Schuyler and Montgomery, with two regiments of New York militia, a body of New-England men, amounting in the whole to three thousand, were appointed to this service. A number of batteaux, or flat-boats, were built at Ticonderago and Crown Point, to convey the forces along Lake Champlain to the river Sorel, which forms the entrance into Canada. Having proceeded to the isle Aux Noix, they proposed to attack the fort St. John's, in which they were retarded by a want of ammunition sufficient for carrying on the siege. Their commander Montgomery, who was well qualified for any military service, turned his thoughts to the reduction of the little Fort Chamblée, which lies farther up the country, and was in a very defensible condition. Here he found considerable stores, and 120 barrels of powder, which enabled him to push with vigour the siege of St. John's. General Carleton, the governor of the province, then at Montreal, was equally indefatigable in his endeavours to raise a force sufficient for its relief. With the utmost difficulty he had got together about a thousand men, composed principally of Canadians, with a few regulars and some English officers and volunteers. With these he intended a junction with colonel M<sup>c</sup>Lean, who had raised a regiment under the name of Royal Highland Emigrants, consisting of the native mountaineers of Scotland, who had lately arrived in America, and who, in consequence of the troubles, had not obtained settlements. But the designs of general Carleton were defeated  
by



by a party of Provincials, who encountered him at Longueuil, A. D. and easily repulsed the Canadians. Another party pushed M<sup>c</sup>Lean towards the mouth of the Sorel, where the Canadians, by whom he was attended, hearing of the general's defeat, immediately abandoned him to a man, and he was compelled, at the head of his few Scots emigrants, to take refuge in Quebec. Meanwhile Montgomery obtained possession of St. John's, 3d November, 1775, where he found a considerable quantity of artillery, and many useful stores; the garrison, commanded by major Preston, surrendered prisoners of war, and were sent up the lakes to those interior parts of the colonies, which were best adapted to provide for their reception and security.

Upon M<sup>c</sup>Lean's retreat to Quebec, the party who had reduced him to that necessity immediately erected batteries near the junction of the St. Lawrence and the Sorel, in order to prevent the escape of the armed vessels, which general Carleton had at Montreal, to the defence of Quebec. Montgomery meanwhile laid siege to Montreal, of which he got possession the 13th November; and Carleton's armament being pursued, attacked and driven from their anchors up the river by the Provincials, he himself narrowly escaped in a dark night, in a boat with muffled paddles, and after many dangers arrived at Quebec. His naval force, consisting of eleven armed vessels, fell into the hands of the Provincials.

The city of Quebec was at this time in a state of great weakness, as well as internal discontent and disorder. Besides this, colonel Arnold appeared unexpectedly with a body of New-Englanders at Point Levi, opposite to the town. The river fortunately separated them from the place, otherwise it seems probable that they might have become masters of it in the first surprise and confusion. Several days elapsed before they effected a passage in boats furnished them by the Canadians, notwithstanding the vigilance of the English frigates in the river. The inhabitants of Quebec, however, had by this time leisure to unite for defending their city. When Montgomery, therefore, who with the utmost expedition had pushed forward to join Arnold, attempted on the 31st of December to carry the place by escalade, he met with the most vigorous and unexpected re-

A. D. 1775. sistance. He himself was slain, Arnold wounded, and a considerable body of the Provincials taken prisoners of war. The remainder did not again venture on any similar attack, but were satisfied with converting the siege into a blockade, and found means effectually to prevent any supplies of provisions or necessaries from being carried into Quebec. .

While the Provincials obtained these important advantages in Canada, the Virginians obliged their governor, lord Dunmore, to provide for his safety by embarking on board the *Fowey* man of war. All connection between Great Britain and that colony was dissolved July 18th. The governor in vain emancipated the slaves, a measure which he had so often threatened, that its execution was rendered ineffectual. He determined, however, to do every thing in his power to regain possession of some part of the country which he had governed. Being joined by such persons as were obnoxious on account of their loyalty, and supported by the frigates on the station, he endeavoured to establish such a marine force as might enable him, by means of the noble rivers, which render the most valuable parts of Virginia accessible by water, to be always at hand, and to profit by every favourable occasion that offered. But his spirited endeavours to redeem the colony were attended only with disappointment; and his armament, too feeble for any essential service, was distinguished barely by acts of depredation. The unfortunate town of Norfolk, having refused to supply his majesty's ships with provisions, was attacked by a violent cannonade from the *Liverpool* frigate, three sloops of war, and the governor's armed ship the *Dunmore*; and the first of January was signalized with burning it to the ground. In South Carolina lord William Campbell, the governor, after less vigorous exertions, was obliged to retire from Charlestown, on board a ship of war in the river; and governor Martin of North Carolina saved himself by the same expedient. The fleet of England served as a peaceable asylum to the expelled magistrates of revolting provinces, while its army was ingloriously cooped up in Quebec and Boston.

The Provincials were not less active in the cabinet than in the field. November 13, 1775, the inhabitants of Massachusetts Bay

Bay published letters of marque and reprisal, and established A. D. courts of admiralty for trying and condemning British ships. 1775- The General Congress, (December the 6th), having previously agreed on articles of confederation and perpetual union, answered with much acrimony the royal proclamation of August 23d for suppressing rebellion and sedition, and declared, that whatever punishment should be inflicted upon any persons in the power of their enemies, for defending the cause of America, the same should be retaliated on the British subjects who fell into their hands.

In this state of obstinacy or firmness on the side of the Americans, the distressed army at Boston looked with impatience towards these kingdoms for the arrival of the expected reinforcements. The delays and misfortunes which the transports experienced in their voyage, and the sight of many vessels laden with the necessaries and comforts of life taken in the harbour, heightened the mortification and sufferings of those brave troops, who were kept, by the severity of the season, and the strength of the enemy, in a total inaction during the whole winter. The American cruizers and privateers, though yet poor and contemptible, being for the greater part no better than whale-boats, grew daily more numerous and successful against the victuallers and store-ships; and, among a multitude of other prizes, took an ordnance ship from Woolwich, containing a large mortar upon a new construction, several pieces of fine brass cannon, a great number of small arms, with abundance of ammunition and all manner of tools, utensils, and machines necessary for camps and sieges. This important prize, which gave a new colour to the military operations of the Provincials, was taken by a small privateer, which excited just indignation against the management of our naval affairs, for hazarding a cargo of such value in a defenceless vessel.

When news of the prohibiting act reached the Congress, they sent orders to general Washington to bring affairs at Boston to as speedy a decision as possible, in order to disengage his army, and to give them an opportunity to oppose the new dangers with which they were threatened. Washington, therefore, opened a new battery, at a place called Phipp's Farm, on the night of the

A. D. 2d of March, from whence a severe cannonade and bombardment was carried on against the town. This attack was continued till the 5th, when the army, to their incredible surprize, beheld some considerable works upon the heights of Dorchester-point, from which a 24 pound and a bomb battery were soon after opened. The situation of the king's troops was now extremely critical, it being necessary either to abandon the town which began to blaze on every side, or to dislodge the enemy and destroy the new works. The latter, however, general Howe, who had succeeded general Gage in the command, judged to be impracticable, so that nothing remained but to abandon Boston, and to convey the troops, artillery, and stores on board the ships. The embarkation rather resembled the emigration of a nation, than the breaking up of a camp; 1500 of the inhabitants, whose attachment to the royal cause had rendered them obnoxious to their countrymen, encumbered the transports with their families and effects. This inconvenience, joined to scarcity of provisions and ill success, bred much discontent. The troops considered themselves as abandoned, having received no advices from England since the preceding October. Mutual jealousies prevailed between the army and navy; each attributing to the other, part of this uneasiness which itself felt. The intended voyage to Halifax, at all times dangerous, was dreadfully so at this tempestuous equinoctial season, and the multitude of ships, which amounted to 150 sail, increased the difficulty and apprehension. At the same time the king's forces were under the necessity of leaving a considerable quantity of artillery and stores behind. The cannon upon Bunker's Hill, and at Boston Neck, could not be carried off. Attempts were made to render them unserviceable; but the hurry which then prevailed, prevented them from having any great effect. Some mortars and pieces of cannon which were thrown into the water, were afterwards weighed up by the inhabitants of Boston; who, the 17th of March, received general Washington's army with drums beating, colours flying, and all the splendour of military triumph.

It was above a week after this time before the weather permitted the fleet to get entirely clear of the harbour and road; but this delay was amply compensated by the voyage to Halifax,

which

which was shorter and more successful than could have been expected. Several ships of war were left behind to protect the vessels which should arrive from England; but the great extent of the bay with its numerous islands and creeks allowed such advantages to the provincial armed boats and privateers, that they took a great many of those vessels, which were still in ignorance that the town had changed masters.

On the side of Canada, general Carleton conducted his operations with more success. All the attempts of the Provincials to take Quebec by storm were rendered abortive; nor did they succeed better in endeavouring by fire-ships and otherways to burn the vessels in the harbour. Such was the constancy and vigilance of governor Carleton, brigadier M'Lean, and the activity of the garrison, that the Americans intended to raise the siege, which was prevented from being carried successfully into execution by the spirit and vigour of the officers and crews of the *Isis* man of war and two frigates, which were the first that had sailed from England with succours, and which having forced their way through the ice, arrived at Quebec before the passage was deemed practicable. The unexpected appearance of the ships threw the besiegers into the utmost consternation, and the command which they obtained of the river cut off all communication between the different detachments of the enemy. General Carleton lost no time in seizing the advantages which the present situation afforded. May 6th, he marched out at the head of the garrison, and attacked the rebel camp which he found in the utmost confusion. Upon the appearance of our troops they fled on all sides, abandoning their artillery, military stores, and all their implements for carrying on the siege. During this transaction our smaller ships of war proceeded up the river with great expedition, and took several small vessels belonging to the enemy, as well as the *Gaspee* sloop of war, which had a few months before, unfortunately fallen into their hands.

The success at Quebec tended greatly to facilitate the reconquest of Canada, and the invasion of the back part of the colonies by the way of the lakes, which was the first of the three principal objects proposed in the conduct of the British forces in the ensuing campaign. The second was the making a strong impression

A. D. impresson on the southern colonies, which it was hoped would 1776. at least have been attended with the recovery of one of them.

The third was the grand expedition against the city and province of New York.

It had for some time been the fate of the fleets, transports, and victuallers which sailed from England to meet with such difficulties, delays, and so many untoward circumstances, as in a great degree frustrated the end of their destination. Sir Peter Parker's squadron which sailed from Portsmouth at the close of the year, did not arrive at Cape Fear till the beginning of May, where they were detained by various causes till the end of the month. There they found general Clinton, who had already been at New York, and from thence proceeded to Virginia, where he had seen lord Dunmore, and, finding that no service could be effected at either place with his small force, came thither to wait for them. After this junction, the fleet and army were both sufficiently powerful to attempt some enterprize of importance \*. Charlestown in South Carolina was the place destined for their attack. The fleet anchored off the bar the beginning of June; but the passing this obstacle was a matter of no small difficulty, especially to the two large ships, which notwithstanding the taking out of their guns, and the using every other means to lighten them as much as possible, both struck the ground. When this difficulty was overcome, our fleet attacked a fort lately erected upon the south-west point of Sullivan's island, and commanding the passage to Charlestown. The troops commanded by general Clinton, lord Cornwallis, and brigadier-general Vaughan, were landed on Long-Island which lies to the eastward of Sullivan's. The Carolinians had posted some forces with artillery at the north-eastern extremity of the latter, at the distance of two miles from the fort, where they threw up works to prevent the passage of the royal army over the breach. General Lee was

* Sir Peter Parker's Squadron consisted of the					Syren,	28 guns, capt. Furneaux;
Bristol,	50 guns, Sir Pet. Parker;				Sphinx,	20 — — — Hunt;
Experiment,	50 — captain Scott;				Friendship,	12 — — — Hope;
Solihay,	28 — — — Symonds;				Ranger Sloop;	
Acton,	28 — — — Atkins;				Thunder bomb;	
Active,	28 — — — Williams;				St. Lawrence schooner.	

encamped

encamped with a large body of troops on the continent, at the A. D. back and to the northward of the island, with which he held a 1776. communication open by a bridge of boats, and could by that means at any time march the whole, or any part of his force, to support the post opposed to our passage from Long Island. This island is a naked burning sand, where the troops suffered much from their exposure to the intense heat of the sun; and both fleet and army were much distressed through the badness of the water, and the defect or unwholesomeness of the provisions.

These inconveniencies rendered dispatch of the utmost importance; but it was not till the 28th of June that, every thing being settled between the commanders by sea and land, the Thunder bomb took her station, covered by an armed ship, and began the attack by throwing shells at the fort. The Bristol, Solebay, Experiment, and Active, soon after brought up, and began a most furious and incessant cannonade. The Sphinx, Syren, and Actæon, were ordered to the westward, between the end of the island and Charlestown, partly with a view to enfilade the works of the fort, and, if possible, to cut off all communication between the island and the continent, and partly to interrupt all attempts by means of fire-ships, or otherwise, to prevent the grand attack. But this design was rendered unsuccessful by the strange unskilfulness of the pilot, who entangled the frigates in the shoals called the Middle Grounds, where they all stuck fast; and though two of them were speedily disengaged, it was then too late to execute the intended service. The Actæon could not be got off, and was burnt by the officers and crew the next morning, to prevent her materials and stores from falling into the hands of the enemy. Amidst the dreadful roar of artillery and continued thunder from the ships, the garrison of the fort stuck with the greatest firmness and constancy to their guns, fired deliberately and slowly, and took a cool and effective aim. The ships suffered accordingly; and never did our marine, in an engagement of the same nature with any foreign enemy, experience so rude an encounter. The springs of the Bristol's cable being cut by the shot, she lay for some time so much exposed to the enemy's fire, that she was

A. D. 1776. most dreadfully raked. The brave captain Morris, after receiving such a number of wounds as would have sufficiently justified a gallant man in retiring from his station, still disdained, with a noble intrepidity, to quit his station, until his arm being shot off, he was carried away in a condition which did not afford a possibility of recovery. It is said that the quarter-deck of the Bristol was at one time cleared of every person but the commodore, who stood alone, a spectacle of daring intrepid firmness, which has never been exceeded, seldom equalled. The others on that deck were either killed, or carried down to have their wounds dressed. The fortifications being extremely strong, and their lowness preserving them from the weight of our shot, the fire from the ships produced not all the effect which was hoped or expected. The fort, indeed, seemed for a short time to be silenced, but this proceeded only from a want of powder, which was soon supplied from the continent. The land forces all this while continued inactive; and night at length put an end to the attack of the fleet. Sir Peter Parker finding all hope of success at an end, and the tide of ebb nearly spent, called off his shattered vessels, after an engagement of above ten hours. The Bristol had 111, and the Experiment 79 men killed and wounded; and both ships had received so much damage that the Provincials conceived strong hopes, that they could never be got over the bar. The frigates, though not less diligent in the performance of their duty, being less pointed at than the great ships, did not suffer a proportionable loss.

During these transactions the General Congress took an opportunity of preparing the people for the declaration of independency, by a circular manifesto to the several colonies, stating the causes which rendered it expedient to put an end to all authority under the crown, and to take the powers of government into their own hand. The causes assigned were, the contempt of their petitions for redress of grievances, the prohibitory bill by which they were excluded from the protection of the crown, and the intended exertion of all the force of Great Britain, aided by foreign mercenaries for their destruction. The colonies of Maryland and Pennsylvania at first testified a disinclination to the establishment of a new government. Their deputies, however,



ever, were at length instructed to coincide in this measure, and A. D. on the 4th of July, 1776, the Thirteen United Provinces declared themselves free and independent states, abjuring all allegiance to the British crown, and all political connection with their mother country. A few weeks after this declaration, lord viscount Howe arrived at Halifax, at the head of a powerful Squadron, and such a number of land forces as had never before appeared in the new world. Besides the national troops there were 13,000 Hessians and Waldeckers, commanded by able officers of their own country. The whole, composed of the new reinforcements and the troops formerly in America, amounted to an army of 35,000 men; which was superior in number, discipline, and provisions of every kind, to any force the Americans could bring into the field. General Howe had left Halifax a fortnight before his brother's arrival; the latter being impatient of remaining in a place where nothing essential to the service could be performed, and where provisions began to grow scarce, had embarked his troops on board the fleet commanded by admiral Shuldham, and sailed to Sandy Hook, the first land that is met with in approaching New York from the sea. On his passage he was met by six transports with Highland troops on board, who had been separated from several of their companions in the voyage. It appeared soon after, that most of the missing ships, with above 450 soldiers and several officers, had been taken by the American cruisers. The general found every part of the island of New York strongly fortified, defended by a numerous artillery, and guarded by a considerable army. The extent of Long Island did not admit of its being so strongly fortified or so well guarded; it was, however, in a powerful state of defence, having an encampment of considerable force on the end of the island near New York, and several works thrown up on the most accessible parts of the coast, as well as at the strongest internal passes. Staten Island, which was of less value and importance, was less powerfully defended; and on this the general landed without opposition. Here he was met by governor Tryon, who, like the other gentlemen invested with chief authority in North America, had been obliged to

A.D. escape on ship-board. Some hundreds of well-affected inhabitants from the neighbouring parts also joined the royal standard. 1776.

Lord Howe did not arrive at Staten Island till the 14th of July; when he sent to the continent a circular letter setting forth the powers with which he and his brother were invested by the late act of parliament for granting general or particular pardons to all those who, in the tumult and disaster of the times, might have deviated from their just allegiance, and who were willing, by a speedy return to their duty, to reap the benefits of the royal favour. These letters were treated with as little respect as every other proposition of a similar kind, the Americans contemning the idea of granting pardons to those who were not sensible of any guilt. Meanwhile the British armament was joined by the fleet commanded by Sir Peter Parker, as well as by some regiments from Florida and the West Indies. The greatest part of the forces being now united, an attack against Long Island was determined, as being more easy of execution than against the island of New York, and as the former abounded more with those supplies which so great a body of men as were now assembled by sea and land demanded.

The necessary measures being taken by the fleet for covering the descent, the army was landed without opposition on the south-west end of the island. Soon after this was effected, general Clinton, in the night of the 26th of August, at the head of the van of the army consisting of the light infantry, grenadiers, light horse, reserve under lord Cornwallis, with fourteen field pieces, advanced towards the enemy's encampment, and seized an important pass which they had left unguarded. The way being thus happily open, the whole army passed the hills without noise or impediment, and descended by the town of Bedford into the level country. The engagement was begun early in the morning, while the ships made several motions on the left, and attacked a battery at Red Hook, which distracted the attention of the enemy, and called off their attention from their right and rear where the main attack was intended. Nothing could exceed the spirit and alacrity shewn by all the different corps of which the British army was composed. They made the enemy retreat on every side, pursued them with great slaughter,

slaughter, and such was the ambition between the British and A. D. foreign troops, that it was with difficulty general Howe could 1776. restrain their impetuosity in breaking through the American lines, and cutting to pieces or taking prisoners all those who had escaped the danger of the battle and the pursuit. The victors encamped in the front of the enemy's work on the evening after the engagement, and on the 28th, at night, broke ground in form at 600 yards distance from a redoubt which covered the enemy's left.

During the battle general Washington had passed over from New York, and saw with great mortification the unhappy fate of his bravest troops. The remainder were as much inferior in number and discipline to the British army, as their inconsiderable batteries were unequal to the assault of the royal artillery. No hopes of safety remained but in a retreat, which might well have appeared impracticable in the face of such a commanding force by land, and a fleet at sea which only waited a favourable wind to enter the East River, which would effectually cut off all communication between the islands. This arduous task, however, was undertaken and carried into execution by the singular ability of general Washington. In the night of the 29th, the Provincial troops were withdrawn from the camp and their different works, and with their baggage, stores, and artillery conveyed to the water side, embarked, and passed over a long ferry to New York. This was conducted with such wonderful silence and order, that our army did not perceive the least motion, and were surprised in the morning at finding the lines abandoned, and seeing the last of the rear guard in the boats and out of danger. By this successful manœuvre, general Washington not only saved the troops on Long Island from captivity, but fortified the courage and strength of his army at New York, and enabled the Americans to continue the war with unabating ardour. Yet this measure he could not have effected, had the English general allowed his troops to force the enemy's lines, had the ships of war been stationed in the East River, or had the vigilance of the British soldiers watched and intercepted the movements of the Provincials.

After

A. D. 1776. After the success attending the superior bravery of the English in the engagement, and that attending the superior wisdom of Washington in the retreat, the commissioners renewed their proposals of conciliation, which were still as fruitless as before. Laying aside, therefore, their pacific character, they again had recourse to their military. The British troops were impatient to meet the enemy, who had escaped so unexpectedly from their hands. A river only divided them, along the banks of which they erected batteries, while a fleet of 300 sail, including transports, hovered round the island of New York, and threatened destruction on every side. The small islands between the opposite shores were perpetual objects of contest, until by dint of a well-served artillery, and the aid of the ships, those were secured which were most necessary to their future operations. At length, every thing being prepared for a descent, the men of war made several movements up the North river, in order to draw the attention of the enemy to that quarter of the island. Other parts seemed equally threatened, and increased the uncertainty of the real object of the attack. While the rebels were in this state of perplexity, the first division of the army, under the command of general Clinton, embarked at the head of Newtown Bay, which runs pretty deep into Long Island, and where they were entirely out of view of the enemy. Being covered by five ships of war upon their entrance into East River, they proceeded to Kepp's Bay, where, being less expected than in some other places, the preparation for defence was not so considerable. The works, however, were not weak, nor destitute of troops, but the fire from the ships was so incessant and well directed that they were soon abandoned, and the army landed without farther opposition. The enemy immediately quitted the city of New York, and retired towards the north, where their principal strength lay, particularly at King's Bridge, by which their communication with the continent of New York was kept open. General Howe thought the works here too strong to be attacked with any prospect of success; and therefore determined either to bring the rebels to an engagement on equal terms, or to inclose them in their fortresses. While he made what appeared to be the proper dispositions for this purpose,

pose, with a fleet and army sufficient to cover and surround the whole island, general Washington, by a most judicious manœuvre, formed his troops into a line of small detached encampments, which occupied every high and strong ground on the land opposite to King's Bridge. He left a garrison to defend the lines there, and Fort Washington; which, after a vigorous resistance, fell into the hands of the British forces. But general Howe could not bring Washington to an engagement, who availed himself of his skill and address while he fled before a superior force, retreating from one post to another, but always occupying more advantageous ground than his pursuers.

The British commander thus disappointed in his design of making any vigorous impression on the main body of the enemy, detached, on the 18th of November, lord Cornwallis to take Fort Lee, and to advance farther into the Jerseys. The garrison of 2000 men abandoned the place the night before his lordship's arrival, leaving their artillery, stores, tents, and every thing else behind. Our troops afterwards over-ran the greater part of the two Jerseys, the enemy flying every where before them; and at length extended their winter cantonments from New Brunswick to the Delaware. In the beginning of December general Clinton, with two brigades of British, and two of Hessian troops, with a squadron of ships of war commanded by Sir Peter Parker, were sent to make an attack upon Rhode Island, in which they succeeded beyond expectation. The general took possession of the island without the loss of a man; while the naval commander blocked up the principal marine force of the enemy, commanded by Hopkins, the admiral of the Congress, who then lay in the harbour of Providence.

On the side of Canada we left general Carleton driving the rebels towards the Lakes Champlain and St. George, of which they had formerly obtained possession, as well as of the important fortress of Ticonderago. If the British troops could recover these, and advance as far as Albany, before the severity of the winter set in, they might pour destruction into the heart of the middle or northern colonies, as general Washington could not attempt to hold any post in New York or the Jerseys against such a superior force as already opposed him in front, and ge-  
neral

A. D. 1776. <sup>1776.</sup> ~~general~~ Carleton's army at his back. Notwithstanding the most unremitting industry in preparing this northern expedition, it was not until the month of October, that the English fleet was in a condition to seek the enemy on Lake Champlain. The ship *Inflexible*, which may be considered as admiral, had been reconstructed at St. John's, from which she sailed in twenty-eight days after laying her keel, and mounted 18 twelve pounders. One schooner mounted 14, and another 12 six pounders. A flat-bottomed radeau carried 6 twelve pounders, besides howitzers; and a gondola 7 nine pounders. Twenty smaller vessels, under the denomination of gun-boats, carried brass field-pieces from nine to twenty-four pounders, or were armed with howitzers. Several long-boats were furnished in the same manner, and an equal number of long-boats acted as tenders. All these appertained to war; and there were besides an immense number of transports and victuallers destined for the service and conveyance of the army. The armament was conducted by captain Pringle, and navigated by above 700 prime seamen, of whom 200 were volunteers from the transports, who after having rivalled those belonging to the ships of war in all the toil of preparation, now boldly and freely partook with them in the danger of the expedition. The fleet of the enemy was not of equal force, and amounted to only fifteen vessels of different kinds, consisting of two schooners, one sloop, one cutter, three gallies, and eight gondolas. The principal schooner mounted 12 six and four pounders. They were commanded by Benedict Arnold, who was now to support upon a new element the glory which he had acquired by his achievements as a general.

The British armament proceeding up the lake the 11th of October, 1776, discovered the enemy drawn up with great judgment, in order to defend the passage between the island of Valicour and the western main. A warm action ensued, and was vigorously supported on both sides for several hours. The wind being unfavourable, the ship *Inflexible* and some other vessels of force could not be worked up to the enemy, so that the weight of the action fell on the schooner Carleton and the gun-boats. As the whole could not be engaged, captain Pringle, with the approbation of the general, withdrew his advanced  
vessels

vessels at the approach of night, and brought the whole fleet to A. D. anchor in a line, as near as possible to the enemy, in order to 1776. prevent their retreat.

Arnold being now sensible of his inferiority, took the opportunity which the darkness of the night afforded to set sail, unperceived, hoping to obtain shelter and protection at Crown Point. Fortune seemed at first favourable to his purpose, for he had entirely lost sight of the enemy before next morning. The chase, however, being continued both on that and the succeeding day, the wind, and other circumstances peculiar to the navigation of the lake, which had been at first advantageous to the Americans, became at length otherwise, so that on the 13th at noon they were overtaken, and brought to action a few leagues short of Crown Point. The engagement lasted two hours, during which those vessels of the enemy that were most a-head pushed on with the greatest speed; and, passing Crown Point, escaped to Ticonderago; while two galleys, and five gondolas, which remained with Arnold, made a desperate resistance. But their obstinate valour was at length obliged to yield to the superiority of force, skill, and weight of metal by which it was assailed. The Washington galley with Waterburg, a brigadier-general and the second in command, aboard, struck, and was taken. But Arnold determined that his people should not become prisoners, nor his vessel a prey to the English. With equal resolution and dexterity he run the Congress galley, in which himself was, with the five gondolas, on shore, in such a manner as to land his men safely and blow up the vessels, in spite of every effort that was used to prevent both. Not satisfied with this substantial advantage, which in his situation was more than could have been expected from an experienced commander, he inflexibly persisted in maintaining a dangerous point of honour, by keeping his flag flying, and not quitting his galley till she was in flames, lest the English should have boarded and struck it; an attention which greatly raised his reputation in America.

Thus was Lake Champlain recovered, and the enemy's force nearly destroyed, a galley and three small vessels being all that escaped to Ticonderago. The Provincials, upon the rout of

A. D. their fleet, set fire to the houses at Crown Point, and retired to 1776. their main body. Carleton took possession of the ruins, and being joined by his whole army, pushed on towards the enemy. But the post of Ticonderago was too strongly fortified to be taken without great loss of blood; and the benefit arising from success, could not be considerable, as the season was too far advanced to think of crossing Lake George, and of exposing the army to the perils of a winter campaign, in the inhospitable wilds to the southward. General Carleton, therefore, re embarked the army without making any attack upon this place, and returning to Canada, cantoned his troops there for the winter.

The Americans seem to have been guilty of an unpardonable blunder in not maintaining a more powerful squadron on the lakes, which laid open the heart of their country. But besides the want of timber, artillery, and other materials necessary for such an equipment, the carpenters, and all others concerned in the business of shipping, were fully engaged in the sea-ports in the construction and fitting out of privateers. To this the force of the rebels was principally bent; and the interest of individuals which was more immediately concerned in the success of particular cruizers, than in supporting the marine strength of the nation, gave redoubled vigour to all the operations of the former.

The West Indies, which in the want of food, and of slaves, the article next in necessity to food, experienced the first melancholy effects of the American war, also suffered the most from the Provincial privateers. The fleet which sailed from Jamaica in August, 1776, being scattered by bad weather, fell a prey to the activity of their cruizers, who had seized the proper station for intercepting their passage. Nor was the trade from the other islands more fortunate. So that though the Americans did not begin their depredations till late in the year, the British loss in captures, exclusive of transports and government store-ships, was estimated considerably higher than a million sterling. Some blame was thrown on the convoy, and much indignation felt that the superintendence of our naval affairs, on which the glory and security of the nation depend, should be intrusted to hands unworthy to hold it. Such a sacred deposit required, it was thought, not only pure but steady hands; the duties of the im-  
portant



portant office to which it belongs, calling for unremitting vigilance and activity, and being totally incompatible with a life of A. D. licentious and degrading pleasure. Religious men were not surprized, that under such an inauspicious influence the dignity of the nation should suffer a total eclipse, while the American cruizers swarmed in the European seas, and replenished the ports of France and Spain with prizes taken from the English. These prizes were sold in Europe without any colour of disguise, at the same time that French ships in the West Indies took American commissions, and carried on with impunity a successful war on British trade and navigation.

Meanwhile the time of the meeting of parliament approached, when it was expected that the line of conduct necessary for a total conquest, or happy conciliation with the colonies, would be clearly pointed out and explained. The great armaments which were continually increasing in the French and Spanish ports, and many other suspicious appearances during the recess, rendered it necessary to put into commission sixteen additional ships of the line, and to increase the bounty to seamen for entering the service to five pounds *per* man. The expences of the navy for the year 1777, including the ordinary at 400,005*l.* and the building and repairing of ships, which was voted at 465,500*l.* amounted to no less than 3,205,505*l.* exclusive of 400*l.* which was afterwards voted to Greenwich Hospital. The supplies for the land-service fell little short of three millions, although the extraordinaries of the preceding year, which exceeded 1,200,000*l.* were not yet provided for. In whatever manner administration might employ the force by sea and land, the nation had provided for the support of both, with such liberal magnificence as equalled the supplies during the last war, when the fleets and armies of Britain opposed and defeated the united efforts of the greatest powers in Europe. Soon after the 1777. Christmas recess a bill was passed, enabling the admiralty to grant letters of marque and reprisal to the owners or captains of private merchant ships, to take and make prize of all vessels with their effects, belonging to any of the inhabitants of the Thirteen United Colonies. All the powers of the kingdom

A. D. were thus called forth, affording, as it would seem, a force infinitely more than sufficient, had it been properly directed, to crush this aspiring rebellion.

But unfortunately the star of America still maintained the ascendant. The British troops whom we left in apparent security in their cantonments were assailed on all sides, in the middle of winter, by general Washington, who remedied the deficiency of his force by the manner of applying it, and by attacking unexpectedly and separately those bodies which he could not venture to encounter if united. By some well-concerted and spirited actions this American Fabius, after a retreat which would have done honour to the judgment of the most circumspect of all the Romans, not only saved Philadelphia and delivered Pennsylvania from danger, but recovered the greatest part of the Jerseys, and obliged an army greatly superior in number as well as in discipline to act upon the defensive, and for several months to remain within very narrow and inconvenient limits.

The British nation, how much soever they were afflicted with those misfortunes, still expected that notwithstanding this war of posts, surprizes, and detachments, which had been successfully carried on by the Americans during the winter, the regular forces would prevail in the end. They waited, therefore, with much impatience for the approach of spring, when the mighty armaments which they had raised with so high expectation of victory, might be brought into action. When the time at length arrived, with equal astonishment and indignation, they learned that from some improvidence or inattention, unaccounted for at home, the army was restrained from taking the field for want of tents and field equipage. The months of March and April, therefore, instead of being employed in such decisive enterprizes as might terminate the war, were confined to some subordinate expeditions in which the naval superiority of Britain was crowned with success. The Provincials had erected mills and established magazines in a rough and mountainous tract called the Manour of Courtland, to which a place called Peek's Kill, lying fifty miles up Hudson's river from New York, served as a kind of port. Courtland Manour was too strong to be attacked with any prospect of success; but Peek's Kill lay within the reach of the navy. On the 23d of March,

March, colonel Bird was sent with 300 men under the conduct A. D. of a frigate and other armed vessels, up the North River to de- 1777-  
stroy the works of the enemy at this place. Upon the approach of the British armament, the Americans thinking themselves unequal to the defence of the port, and being convinced that there was not time to remove any thing but their persons and arms, set fire to the barracks and principal store-houses, and then retired to a strong pass about two miles distance, commanding the entrance into the mountains, and covering a road which led to some of the mills and other depôts. The British troops landed and completed the conflagration, which had already gone too far to allow any thing to be saved. All the magazines were thus destroyed, and the troops, having performed this service, returned after taking several small craft laden with provisions. Another expedition of a similar kind was undertaken against the town of Danbury on the borders of Connecticut, and attended with equal success.

These petty advantages were nothing, compared to the infinite benefit which the Americans derived from the delay of the British army in taking the field. The Provincials were greatly augmented by reinforcements from all quarters to the Jerseys. Those who shuddered at a winter's campaign grew bold in summer; and the certainty of a future winter had no greater effect than distant evils usually have. When general Howe passed over from New York to the Jerseys the middle of June, he found Washington's army, which six weeks before had been nothing to his own in point of force, greatly increased, and stationed in such advantageous and inaccessible posts as defied every assault. All his attempts to bring Washington to an engagement, or to make him quit his defensive plan of conducting the war, proved abortive; and it appeared the height of temerity to attempt advancing to the Delaware, through so strong a country entirely hostile, and with such an enemy in his rear. Nothing remained, therefore, for general Howe but to avail himself of the immense naval force which co-operated with the army, and which in a country like America, intersected by great navigable rivers, gave him an opportunity of transporting his forces to the most vulnerable parts of the rebellious provinces. The Americans had no force to resist the navigation, and it was impossible for them to  
know

A. D. know where the storm would fall, or to make provision against it. General Howe accordingly passed over with the army to Staten Island, from which it was intended that the embarkation should take place.

For the success of this grand expedition nothing was more requisite than dispatch; yet, notwithstanding the assistance afforded by the crews of 300 vessels, it was not till the 23d of July that the fleet and army were ready to depart from Sandy Hook. The force embarked consisted of thirty-six British and Hessian battalions, including the light infantry and grenadiers, with a powerful artillery, a New York corps called the Queen's Rangers, and a regiment of light horse. Seventeen battalions with a regiment of light horse, and the remainder of the New York corps were left for the protection of that and the neighbouring islands; and Rhode Island was occupied by seven battalions.

Philadelphia, the original seat of the General Congress, but from which that body had retired to Baltimore, was the object of these mighty preparations. The weather being unfavourable, it cost the fleet a week to gain the Capes of the Delaware. The information which the commanders received there of the measures taken by the enemy for rendering the navigation of that river impracticable, engaged them to alter their design of proceeding by that way, and to undertake the passage by Chesapeak Bay to Maryland, the southern boundary of which is at no great distance from Philadelphia. The middle of August was passed before they entered this bay, after which, with a favourable wind, they gained the river Elk near its extremity through a most intricate and dangerous navigation. Having proceeded up this river as far as it was possible for large vessels, the army were relieved from their tiresome confinement on board the transports, which was rendered doubly disagreeable by the heat of the season, and landed without opposition at Elk Ferry on the 25th of August. Whilst one part of the army advanced to the head of the Elk, the other continued at the landing-place to protect and forward the artillery, stores, and necessary provisions.

Meanwhile general Washington returned with his army from the Jerseys to the defence of Philadelphia. Their force, including the militia, amounted to 13,000 men, which was still considerably

considerably inferior in number to the royal army. General A. D. Howe, after publishing such proclamations as he thought necessary for quieting the minds of the inhabitants, and inducing them to return to the protection of the crown, began on the 3d of September to pursue his course to Philadelphia. Washington lost no opportunity of harassing him in his march, by every possible means which did not involve the necessity of risking a general engagement. But several considerable actions took place between the troops both before and after general Howe had entered Philadelphia, of which the army became possessed the 26th of September. In these actions victory always inclined to the side of the king's troops, who shewed as much ardour in the attack as Washington discovered wisdom in the retreat, and in avoiding a general engagement. The Provincials had great disadvantage in the use of the bayonet, with which instrument they were ill provided, and which they knew little how to manage. And when this circumstance is considered, it will not appear surprising that the disproportion between their number of slain and that of the king's troops should in every action have been considerable.

When the British troops had taken possession of Philadelphia, their first employment was to erect batteries which might command the river, and protect the city from any insult by water. This was so necessary a measure, that the very day of the arrival of the forces, the American frigate Delaware, of 32 guns, anchored within 500 yards of the unfinished batteries, and being seconded by another frigate, with some smaller vessels, commenced a heavy cannonade, which lasted for several hours. Upon the falling of the tide, however, the Delaware grounded, and was taken; and the batteries newly erected were played with such effect against the other vessels, that they were fortunate to be able to retire.

Meanwhile lord Howe being apprized of the determined progress of the army to Philadelphia, took the most speedy and effectual measures to convey the fleet and transports round to the Delaware, in order to supply the army with the necessary stores and provisions, as well as to concur in the active operations of the campaign. After a dangerous and intrisate voyage,  
the

A. D. the fleet arrived in the western or Pennsylvania shore, where  
 1777. they drew up and anchored. The passage to Philadelphia, however, was still impracticable, for the Americans had constructed great and numerous works with wonderful labour and industry to interrupt the navigation of the river. The principal of these were the strong batteries on a low and marshy island, or rather an accumulation of mud and sand at the junction of the Delaware and Schuylkill; a considerable fort or redoubt at a place called Red Bank on the opposite shore of New Jersey; and in the deep navigable channel between these forts there had been sunk several ranges of frames or machines, which from resemblance of construction were called *chevaux de frize*. These were composed of transverse beams, firmly united, and of such weight and strength as rendered it equally difficult to penetrate or remove them. About three miles lower down the river they had sunk other machines of a similar form, and erected new batteries on shore on the Jersey side to co-operate in the defence. Both were farther supported by several galleys mounting heavy cannon, together with two floating batteries, a number of armed vessels and small craft of various kinds, and some fire-ships.

The first thing requisite for opening the channel, was to get the command of the shore. Accordingly, upon the representation of captain Hammond of the *Roebuck*, which, with some other ships of war, had arrived in the Delaware before lord Howe, the general detached two regiments to dislodge the enemy from Billingsfort, the principal place of strength on the Jersey shore. This service was successfully performed; and captain Hammond, after a vigorous contest with the marine force of the enemy, was able with much labour to weigh up as much of the *chevaux de frize* as opened a narrow and difficult passage through this lower barrier.

It was not attempted to remove the upper barrier, which was much the stronger, until the arrival of lord Howe, who concerted measures for this purpose with the general. The latter ordered batteries to be erected on the Pennsylvania shore, to assist in dislodging the enemy from Mud Island. He also detached, (22d October), a strong body of Hessians to attack the  
 redoubt

redoubt at Red Bank; while lord Howe ordered the men of A. D. war and frigates to approach Mud Island, which was the main <sup>1777</sup> object of the assault. The operations by land and sea were equally unsuccessful. The Hessians were repulsed with great slaughter by the garrison at Red Bank, as well as by the floating batteries of the enemy. The ships could not bring their fire to bear with any considerable effect upon the island. The extraordinary obstructions with which the Americans had interrupted the free course of the river, had even affected its bed; and wrought some alteration on its known and natural channel. By this means the Augusta man of war of 64 guns, and Merlin sloop were grounded so fast at some distance from the chevaux de frize, that there was no possibility of getting them off. In this situation, though the skill of the officers, seconded by the activity of the crews, prevented the effect of four fire-ships sent to destroy the Augusta, she unfortunately took fire in the engagement, which obliged the others to retire at a distance from the expected explosion. The Merlin also was destroyed, but few lives were lost.

These untoward events did not prevent a second trial on the 15th November to perform the necessary work of opening the communication of the river. While the enemy left nothing undone to strengthen their defences, the British fleet were incessantly employed in conveying heavy artillery and stores up the river to a small morassy island, where they erected batteries, which greatly incommoded the American works on Mud Island. At length every thing being prepared for an assault, the Isis and Somerset men of war passed up the east channel, in order to attack the enemy's works in front; several frigates drew up against a newly erected fort near Manto Creek; and two armed vessels, mounted with 24 pounders, made their way through a narrow channel on the western side, in order to enfilade the principal works. The fire from the ships was terrible, and returned during the whole day with equal vivacity. Towards the evening the fire of the fort began to abate, and at length was totally silenced. The enemy perceiving that measures were taking for forcing their works on the following morning, set fire to every thing that could be destroyed, and escaped under fa-

A. D 1777. vour of the night. The forts on the main land did not afterwards make much resistance, and, as well as that on the island, afforded a considerable quantity of artillery and military stores to the victors.

The American shipping having now lost all protection on either side of the river, several of their galleys, and other armed vessels, took the advantage of a favourable night to pass the batteries of Philadelphia, and fly to places of security farther up the river. This was no sooner discovered than the Delaware frigate, now lying at Philadelphia, was manned and sent in pursuit of them; and other measures were taken which rendered their escape impossible. Thus environed, the crews abandoned and set fire to their vessels, which were all consumed to the number of seventeen, including the two floating batteries and fire-ships: with all these advantages, the advanced season of the year and other impediments rendered the clearing of the river in any considerable degree impracticable; so that the making such a channel as afforded a passage for transports and vessels of easy burden, with provisions and necessaries for the army, was all that could be effected by the fleet; while the whole success of the army amounted only to their securing good winter-quarters at Philadelphia.

If the consequences of victory were little calculated to remove the uneasiness which began to be felt in England, as to the nature and result of the American war, the effects of defeat in the army of the north, intended to co-operate with the grand expedition, occasioned the most gloomy apprehensions. It had been resolved in the cabinet, where all the future operations of the campaign had been settled with a painful and minute accuracy, that while general Howe made a severe impression on the heart of America, the extremities should also feel the cruel effects of hostility. General Carleton, who had succeeded so well in this attempt in the former campaign, and to whose unremitting activity, directed by experienced wisdom, the nation are indebted for the preservation of Canada, was superseded in the command, which was bestowed by government on general Burgoyne. With an army of above seven thousand regular troops, provided in a manner the most complete, and furnished with.



with the finest train of artillery ever seen in the new world, A. D. that general proceeded to Canada, when being joined by the provincial militia of the country, he took measures according to his instructions for being reinforced by a powerful band of savages. About the middle of June, he met the Indians in Congress on the banks of Lake Champlain, where he said every thing that appeared most effectual for raising the valour, and bridling the ferocity of our new allies. Soon after he published a manifesto to the inhabitants of the northern provinces, setting forth the magnitude of his preparations, and denouncing against the rebellious all the calamities and outrages of war, arrayed in the most terrific forms. Encouragement and employment were assured to those, who, with a disposition and ability suited to the purpose, should cheerfully assist in redeeming their country from slavery, and in re-establishing legal government. Protection and security, clogged with conditions, restricted by our circumstances, and rather obscurely and imperfectly expressed, were held out to the peaceable and industrious, who continued in their habitations.

After these previous steps, which the general judged necessary, it was intended, that the army in concert with the naval force on the lakes, should proceed to the siege of Ticonderago, and after securing that important fortress, advance southward on the frontiers of the provinces, where they would at length join the force conducted by Sir Henry Clinton, and commodore Hotham, which, advancing northward from New York, destroyed the works, towns and country of the enemy on both sides of the river. At first every thing succeeded with general Burgoyne that could gratify the most sanguine hopes of those who employed him. Ticonderago was taken, the remainder of the rebel squadron on Lake-George was pursued and defeated, and the enemy every where fled before the victorious troops, whom they had neither strength nor spirit to withstand. The first impressions of despair produced on the minds of the rebels had time to wear off by the delays of the march, in a country so impracticable, that in some places it was hardly possible to advance a mile in a day. The New England governments, the most immediately threatened, had time to re-

A. D. collect themselves, and to take every measure that seemed most necessary for their defence. Arnold, who alternately acted the part of a general and commodore, with equal skill and bravery, was sent to reinforce the declining courage of the American troops, and carried with him a considerable train of artillery. The terror excited by the savages, who were guilty of various enormities too shocking to be described, produced at length an effect directly contrary to what had been expected. The inhabitants of the open and frontier country were obliged to take up arms to defend themselves against this barbarous race; and when the regular army of the Provincials seemed to be nearly wasted, a new one and more formidable was poured forth from the woods, mountains and marshes, which in this part are thickly sown with plantations and villages. General Gates, an officer of tried ardour, and of a regular military education, took the command of this force, in which he co-operated with Arnold with the most singular unanimity. The consequence is well known, and will be long remembered. Burgoyne had gone too far to retreat to Canada, nor could he proceed to Albany, without forcing his way through the rebel army. After a number of skirmishes, marches, and two bloody engagements, he entered into the convention of Saratoga the 17th October, by which the British troops laid down their arms, and engaged never to assist more in attempting to subdue America.

During the operation of the causes which led to this humiliating transaction, Sir Henry Clinton conducted his expedition up the North River with uncommon success. Having embarked 3000 men for that expedition, accompanied by a suitable naval force, consisting of frigates, armed galleys, and smaller vessels, he attacked the Forts of Montgomery and Clinton. Several necessary motions being made to mask the real design, the troops were landed in two separate divisions, at such a distance as occasioned a considerable and difficult march through the mountains, which was conducted so skilfully, that they arrived at the forts, and began their respective attacks at the same moment of time. The surprise and terror of the garrison was increased by the appearance of the ships of war, and the arrival and near fire of the galleys, which approached so close as to strike

~ Strike the walls with their oars. Both forts were carried by A. D. storm, and the slaughter of the enemy, occasioned by the obsti- 1777- nacy of their resistance, was very considerable. Those who escaped set fire to two fire frigates and several other vessels, which, with their artillery and stores, were consumed or sunk. Another fort, called Constitution, was, in a day or two after, upon the approach of the combined naval and land forces, set on fire and abandoned. The artillery taken in all the three amounted to 67 pieces of different sizes. A few days afterwards Continental Village, containing barracks for 1500 men, and considerable stores, was destroyed. A large boom or chain, the expence of which was estimated at L. 70,000, and which was considered as an extraordinary proof of American industry and skill, was sunk or carried away: and the whole loss was the greatest which the enemy had hitherto sustained. The navy continued to pursue the advantage. Sir James Wallace, with a flying squadron of light frigates, and general Vaughan, with a considerable detachment of troops, made various excursions up the river, carrying terror and destruction wherever they went. At the very time that general Burgoyne was negotiating conditions for his ruined army, the thriving town of Esopus, at no very great distance, was reduced to ashes, and not a house left standing. The troops and vessels, did not retire to New York until they had dismantled the forts, and left the river totally defenceless. Thus it must be confessed that, amidst all our misfortunes, the navy carried on every operation in which they were concerned with their wonted spirit and success.

When news of the various events which had marked and chequered this important year of the American war were brought to England, the nation were agitated by a tumult of passions which it is not easy to describe or analyse. The boasted preparations which were to bring America to our feet, and which seemed capable, instead of subduing the rebels by open force, to look them into unconditional submission, produced none of the great effects which had been so firmly expected. The armament conducted by the Howes, had not been able to gain any decisive advantage over the force of the Provincials; the northern army, whether through the incapacity of the mi-  
nister,

A. D. nifter, or the rashness of the general, had been delivered up or 4777- rather abandoned a miserable prey into the hands of our enemies. Great part of the shipping of the Americans had, indeed, been destroyed; some of their towns were in our possession; their country had felt the calamities of war; their works of defence, raised with great art and industry, had been weakened or demolished; but the spirit of the people was still unsubdued, and their unremitting activity in a cause which they adored, animated by the first gleams of success, would naturally prompt them to more vigorous and daring efforts than they had yet exerted.

Notwithstanding these fatal appearances, the English ministry were so entwined in the American war, that it was impossible for them conveniently to be disengaged from it: their measures, it seemed, could only be justified by success, which, had it depended on the liberality of the supplies, must doubtless have been obtained. On the 27th of November, 1777, 60,000 seamen, with 11,000 marines, were voted for the service of the ensuing year. The maintaining of those, with the building and repairing of ships, the ordinary of the navy and half-pay, and the discharge of a million of debt, made the whole expence of the fleet for the year 1778, amount to above five millions sterling. Yet this immense sum exceeded only by about half a million the expence of the land forces; for besides the national troops, we had taken into pay about 25,000 Hessians, Hanoverians, Brunswickers, and other Germans: and many corporations, as well as individuals, subscribed largely for raising new regiments to reinforce the standing military strength of the country. This measure which, in any other war, would have been universally approved as a mark of the highest public spirit, was loudly condemned by opposition, as furnishing troops to the king without consent of parliament; and the effect produced on the public by the factious clamours against the new levies, clearly showed the prevailing indifference, or rather disinclination to the continuance of a war, in which we had hitherto met with little else but disappointments and disgrace.

Meanwhile the news of the defeat and surrender of general Burgoyne's army were received in France the beginning of December,

ember, and began totally to change the views and behaviour of A. D. that court with regard to the Americans. The agents whom <sup>1777-</sup>the Congress kept at Paris had hitherto been coolly received by the French ministry, though idolized by the levity or interestedness of the nation; but upon so favourable a turn in the affairs of their constituents, they renewed with more success their proposals for negotiating a treaty, while the French king received the compliments of his nobility on the misfortune of the British troops, with as much complacency as if his own had obtained a signal victory. In consequence of these circumstances, so advantageous to the credit of the Americans, Monsieur Girard, royal syndic of Strasbourg, and secretary of his most Christian majesty's council of state, waited on the American agents by order of his Majesty the 16th of December, and acquainted them, that, after long and full consideration of their affairs and propositions in council, his majesty was determined to acknowledge the independence of the Americans, and to make a treaty with them of amity and commerce. That in this treaty no advantage should be taken of their present situation to obtain terms which otherwise could not be convenient for them to agree to, his majesty desiring that the treaty once made should be durable, which could not be expected unless each nation found its interest in the continuance as well as in the commencement of it. It was therefore his intention to enter into such an agreement with them as they could not but approve, had their state been long established, and attained the fulness of strength and power. That his majesty was determined not only to acknowledge, but support their independence, even at the risk of a war; and notwithstanding the expence and danger attending this measure, he expected no compensation on that account, as he pretended not to act wholly for their sakes, since, besides his real good-will to them and their cause, it was manifestly the interest of France that the power of England should be diminished, by separating America from it for ever. The only condition which he required, therefore, on the part of the Americans was, "That in no peace to be made with England they should give up their independence, and return to the obedience of that government." Upon this foundation the  
treaty

A. D. treaty was drawn up and signed, and soon after dispatched to 1778. receive the ratification of Congress.

It appears not from any thing laid before the public, that the British ministry were officially informed of this important transaction. Above two months afterwards the first lord of the treasury, and the minister for the southern department, declared they knew nothing for certain concerning any treaty between France and America. If this was really the case, the ambassador at Paris scarcely deserved those honourable and lucrative marks of royal approbation, which have been since so liberally bestowed on him; but if the fact is otherwise, and if we may give entire credit to the defence of that nobleman when called to account in the house of peers, it will be difficult to save the honour of ministers, whose character and veracity is of less importance to the public, than the humiliating and disgraceful condition in which this once great and respectable nation must appear in the eyes of Europe. In former times we should, instead of dissembling the treaty, have demanded a full communication of all its contents; but, to use the words of an ingenious author, “ when people are dejected by frequent losses, torn by intestine “ factions, or any other way internally distressed, their delibe- “ rations are confused, their resolutions slow, and an apparent “ languor is visible, when they attempt to carry their resolu- “ tions into execution.”

However this question may be decided between the ministry at home, and their ambassador at Paris, (for the tameness of the public has not yet brought this affair to a full explanation), it was generally believed that administration knew of the proposed treaty between France and America, and that the plan of conciliation proposed by lord North the 17th of February, was intended to counterwork the negotiations of our rivals. The proposition of his lordship was for two acts of parliament: the first, a bill for enabling his majesty to appoint commissioners to treat, consent, and agree on the means of quieting the disorders now subsisting in certain of the colonies. The second, a bill declaring the intention of parliament concerning the exercise of the right of imposing taxes on the provinces of North America. Both bills were passed; and, notwithstanding the nice distinctions which

which are made in his lordship's speech, it appeared to common A. D. understandings that we gave up, by the latter bill, not only the 1778. power of taxing America, but all that national pre-eminence and supremacy which had been so pompously described. We thus renounced the original ground of the quarrel, and more than America ever desired us to renounce; but since the declaration of independency, and the conclusion of the treaty with France, it was little to be doubted that our present concessions would be attended with no better success than our former pretensions. In fact, the moderation of government, the unseasonableness of which prevented its having any effect on the resolutions of the rebels, served only to damp the spirits of those who had entered most heartily into all the measures of government and coercion; and had not France, by throwing aside the veil through which our ministers were still fond to view her, roused the indignation and resentment of the British nation, the military ardour which had been so happily excited would have begun to subside, and the people would have again fallen back into a lethargic languor and inactivity. But, on the 13th of March, the marquis of Noailles, ambassador from France, delivered the following declaration, by order of his court, to lord viscount Weymouth: "That the United States of America, who are in full possession of independence, as pronounced by them on the 4th of July, 1776, having proposed to the king to consolidate, by a formal convention, the connection begun to be established between the nations, the respective plenipotentiaries have signed a treaty of friendship and commerce, designed to serve as a foundation for their mutual good correspondence. His majesty being determined to cultivate the good understanding subsisting between France and Great Britain, by every means compatible with his dignity, and the good of his subjects, thinks it necessary to make this proceeding known to the court of London, and to declare at the same time, that the contracting parties have paid great attention not to stipulate any exclusive advantages in favour of the French nation; and that the United States have reserved the liberty of treating with every nation whatever, upon the same footing of equality. In making this communication, his most Christian majesty observes; that the British ministry will find new proofs

A. D. of his constant and sincere disposition for peace, and he there-  
 1778. fore hopes they will take effectual measures to prevent the commerce between France and America from being interrupted, and to cause all the usages received between commercial nations to be in this respect observed. In this just confidence he thinks it superfluous to acquaint them, that he has taken eventual measures, in concert with the United States of America, to maintain the dignity of his flag, and effectually to protect the lawful commerce of his subjects." This declaration was immediately laid before the house of lords, with a message from the king, setting forth the perfidy of France, and contrasting it with his own steady adherence to the faith of treaties. The message was answered by both lords and commons in a high strain of indignation and resentment against the restless ambition of the French court. The British ambassador at Paris was recalled, and the marquis of Noailles left London. The immediate consequences of these steps were an embargo laid on the shipping in the French and English ports; the warmest impress almost ever known; and the embodying and calling forth the militia to the number of thirty thousand men.

A war with France can never be unpopular in this country; and by bringing matters to such a point that the French appeared evidently to be the aggressors, and wantonly to provoke the hostility of Great Britain, the ministry, had this been their own work, would have possessed the merit of using the surest means of rousing the latent resentment and inherent antipathy of the English against their natural enemies. The great body of the people talked of nothing but violation of treaties, treachery, war and vengeance. The new levies were carried on with redoubled vigour, especially in Scotland. A majority of both houses re-echoed the sentiments and language of the vulgar. A few only ventured to think that France had done nothing inconsistent with the universal practice of nations, and must have been deaf to every call of interest, if she had not availed herself of the misfortunes or misconduct of Great Britain to aggrandize her own power. Upon the same principle that Queen Elizabeth assisted with her troops and treasure the United States of the Netherlands to throw off the yoke of a monarch then formidable



formidable to all Europe, the French could not fail, in a more A. D. enlightened age, greedily to seize the occasion of supporting the independence of British America. If ever the French gave us fair play, it was surely on the present occasion; they allowed us to negotiate and to fight; to hesitate between war and peace; and to throw away many precious years in armed truce and pacific hostility; and it astonished all Europe, not that they interposed at length, but that they did not interpose sooner. Besides, as they had long assisted the Americans in an underhand manner, the open avowal of this assistance was the greatest advantage that, in our present circumstances, we could possibly obtain. It revived the decaying ardour of the nation, united every well-wisher to his country in a common cause, and called forth the most vigorous efforts, both public and private, that the hopes of plunder, interest, resentment, and a sense of national honour could inspire.

The effects of this spirit in augmenting our armaments by sea and land were soon visible. If we may credit the words of those who presided over the navy, in a short time we had, besides a vast number of armed vessels and privateers, 228 ships of the line, frigates and sloops in commission\*. Of these, 50 ships of the line were employed for the protection of Great Britain; the whole number of vessels on the coast of America amounted (it was said by men in office) to 130; admiral Barrington was stationed at the Leeward Islands; Sir Peter Parker at Jamaica; the men of war appointed to attend the Senegal fleet, were ordered to remain on that coast for the protection of trade; and admiral

## \* LIST of the SHIPS in commission.

1 ship of	110 guns,	6 frigates of	44 guns,
10 — of	90 —	3 — of	36 —
2 — of	80 —	28 — of	32 —
32 — of	74 —	25 — of	28 —
1 — of	70 —	26 — of	20 or 24 —
22 — of	64 —	<hr/>	
4 — of	60 —	68 frigates — 55 sloops.	
13 — of	50 —	<hr/>	
<hr/>		85 ships of the line;	
85 ships of the line.		88 frigates;	
		55 sloops;	
		<hr/>	
		228 total.	

A. D. Duff's squadron in the Mediterranean was reinforced with several capital ships. Nor were the French slow in their preparations. They had assembled a powerful squadron at Brest, and another at Toulon; and their troops crowded the sea-ports, and covered the northern parts of the kingdom\*.

While these preparations were going forward in Europe, nothing decisive had happened in America. The king's army had remained quiet in their winter quarters tolerably well supplied with provisions; and general Washington's troops continued huddled at Valley Forge, where it is said they suffered intolerable hardships. The greater part of the fleet remained at Rhode Island, from which detachments were sent to cruise before the principal sea-ports of the continent, where, as well as in the West Indies, they were successful in making a great number of captures. As the spring approached, and the navigation of the Delaware became practicable, general Howe sent various detachments to range the country round Philadelphia, in order to open the communication for bringing in provisions, and to collect forage for the army. All these expeditions were successful; and on the 7th May major Maitland was detached with the second battalion of light infantry in flat-boats, protected by three galleys and other armed vessels commanded by captain Henry of the navy, to destroy the American ships lying in the river between Philadelphia and Trenton; which was effected with great success†. On the 25th of the same month was carried on a similar expedition from Rhode Island under the command of lieutenant-colonel Campbell and captain Clayton of the navy. They destroyed 125 boats, collected by the rebels in Hickamanet river, together with a galley under repair, destined for an invasion of that island. Another detachment from the men of war destroyed the rebel vessels in Warren Creek; and a third burnt the saw-mills on a creek near Taunton river, employed in pre-

\* No. XVII. Appendix. List of French fleets.

† List of American ships burnt on the 8th and 9th of May.

2 frigates, one for 32, the other for 28 guns;

5 large ships;

3 privateer sloops for 16 guns each;

3 ditto for 10 guns each;

23 brigs, with a number of sloops and schooners.

paring materials to build boats and other suitable craft for the A. D. purpose of the before-mentioned invasion. 1778.

These operations of the *petite guerre* closed the military career of general Sir William Howe, who resigned the command to Sir Henry Clinton, and returned to England. The first operation of the new commander was to evacuate Philadelphia, pursuant to the instructions which he had received from the minister. This measure, though attended with great danger on account of the neighbourhood of Washington's army of 20,000 men, and though accompanied with a certain degree of disgrace necessarily attached to the abandoning of a town, the possession of which had been acquired at such an expence of blood and treasure, was yet deemed necessary to enable his majesty's forces to resist the united efforts of the Americans and their new and powerful allies. On the 18th of June the army began their march, and proceeded to Gloucester Point, and from thence crossed the Delaware in safety through the excellent disposition made by the admiral to secure their passage. They continued their march towards New York till the 28th, without any interruption from the enemy, excepting what was occasioned by their having destroyed every bridge on the road. Then the rebels began to approach nearer the royal army, not in order to risk a general engagement, but to harass their march, and if possible to seize their baggage, which, as the country admitted of but one route, consisted of a train extending near twelve miles. The judicious dispositions made by general Clinton, and the bravery of his troops, compelled the assailants to retire on every side. The army marched without farther opposition to Navesink, where they waited two days, in hopes that general Washington might be induced to take post near Middletown, where he might have been attacked to advantage. But as he still declined affording an opportunity of coming to a general action, preparations were made for passing to Sandy-Hook Island by a bridge of flat boats, which by the extraordinary efforts of the navy was soon completed, and over which the whole army passed in about two hours time on the 5th of July, the horses and cattle having been previously transported. They were afterwards carried up to New York; while the fleet, the proceedings of which  
had

A. D. had been regulated by the motions of the army, anchored off Staten Island. This station was less disadvantageous than that of the Delaware, in case the French fleet at Toulon should escape to America. This unfortunately had happened; M. D'Estaing having sailed from Toulon the 13th of April with twelve ships of the line besides frigates and store-ships. The fact was known to the ministry the 27th of the same month; but no effectual measure had been taken in consequence of it. It was several days even before a council was called to take this important matter into consideration. The succeeding month was spent in naval reviews, and in parliamentary debates, in the course of which the ministers acknowledged that it was judged improper to detach any part of our fleet, until the internal safety of Great Britain was sufficiently provided for. Meanwhile D'Estaing's squadron rode mistress of the sea, and pursuing their course to America, arrived on the coast of Virginia the 5th of July. On the 8th they anchored at the entrance of the Delaware, and on the 11th arrived on the northern shore of New Jersey.

Lord Howe made no delay in taking the necessary measures to oppose their attempts, until the expected reinforcement under the command of admiral Byron should arrive from England. But nothing could be more blameable than the late departure, or more unfortunate than the tedious voyage of that admiral. He sailed the 5th of June, and worked out of the channel against a fresh wind at south-west. Nothing very material happened till the 3d of July, when the squadron was separated in 49 degrees 4 minutes north latitude, and 26 degrees 48 minutes west longitude from the Lizard, in a most violent gale at north, accompanied with heavy rains. At eight o'clock next evening the storm abated, and of a squadron of 14 vessels shewed only the Princess Royal, Invincible, Culloden, and Guadaloupe. On the 6th the Culloden was ordered to look out to the north-east quarter, and the Guadaloupe to the south-west. The Guadaloupe joined again the next afternoon, and kept company till the 21st, when she and the Invincible separated in a thick fog on the banks of Newfoundland. On the 5th of August the admiral fell in with the Culloden, after being separated a month,

bur

but she parted company again in the night of the 11th. The A. D. Princess Royal being thus left by herself, the admiral continued 1778- his best endeavours to get to Sandy Hook, but the prevailing wind being from the south-west to west, he made very slow progress. On the 18th of August the crew of the Princess Royal perceived 12 sail of ships at anchor to leeward, distant about eight miles. These were soon discovered to be part of D'Estaing's squadron, and as the admiral could neither get into the road of Sandy Hook nor of New York, without passing through the midst of the enemy, he bore away for Halifax, where he arrived the 26th of August, and found the Culloden, which had reached that port before him. The rest of the squadron afterwards dropped in gradually there, or into the harbour of New York, their crews very sickly, and their furniture much impaired.

Meanwhile D'Estaing's squadron had, on the afternoon of the 12th of July, come to anchor off Shrewsbury Inlet, about four miles from Sandy Hook. They consisted of 12 sail of two-decked ships, and three frigates. One of the large ships had 90 guns, one 80, six were of 74, three of 64, one of 50; the least of the frigates mounted 36 guns; and their complement in men was above 11,000. To oppose this formidable squadron lord Howe had only six sail of 64 gun ships, three of 50, two of 40\*, with some frigates and sloops, for the most part poorly manned. In this great disparity of force the spirit of British seamen blazed forth with more than its usual lustre. A thousand volunteers from the transports presented themselves to man the fleet. Such was their ardour, that many who had been detained as necessary for the watch in their respective ships,

\* List of lord Howe's fleet.

Eagle	of 64 guns,	Vice-admiral Howe, captains Duncan and Curtis;
Trident,	64 —	Commodore Elliot, captain Molloy;
Nonfuch,	64 —	Captain Griffiths;
St. Albans,	64 —	Fitzherbert;
Somerfer,	64 —	Ourry;
Ardent,	64 —	Keppel;
Experiment,	50 —	Sir James Wallace;
Jess,	50 —	Raynor;
Preston,	50 —	Commodore Hotham;
Phoenix,	40 —	Captain Parker;
Roebuck,	40 —	Hammond.

were

A. D. were found concealed in the boats which carried their most fortunate companions on board the several men of war. The army were equally forward and impatient to signalize their zeal in a line of service, which, independent of the spirit that animated them, would have been extremely disagreeable to men unaccustomed to a sea life. Though scarcely recruited from the fatigues of a long, toilsome, and dangerous march, they were eager to cast lots to decide which should be appointed to embark as marines. The masters and mates of the merchantmen shewed equal alacrity; several taking their stations at the guns with the common sailors, others putting to sea in their small swift sailing shallops, to alarm such ships as might be bound for the port, and to look out for the long expected arrival of Byron's reinforcement. One, of the name of Duncan, with a spirit of disinterested patriotism, that would have done honour to the first names of Greece or Rome in the most brilliant period of those celebrated republics, wrote for leave to convert his vessel, the whole hopes of his fortune, into a fire-ship, to be conducted by himself; rejecting all idea of any other recompence than the honour of sacrificing his life, services and expectations, to an ardent love of his country.

Lord Howe, encouraged by the noble enthusiasm of every one who bore the name of Britain, and which could never have been executed under a commander who was not universally beloved and respected, lost not a moment in forming the disposition of his fleet, with determined purpose to resist the most vigorous exertions of the enemy. While the French admiral was employed in sounding the bar, his lordship placed his ships in the strongest situation the channel within the Hook would admit. He sounded its several depths in person; he ascertained the different setting of the currents; communicated his discoveries to the officers of the most experience, and after hearing their several opinions, formed such plans of arrangement as seemed best adapted to counteract the enemy's designs. He lengthened his line which was already formed of the *Isis*, *Eagle*, *Somerfet*, *Trident*, *Nonfuch* and *Ardent*, by adding the *Leviathan* store-ship, manned by volunteers for the occasion, and supplied with cannon from the train. One battery of two howitzers, and another of three eighteen pounders, were erected

ed on the point, round which the enemy must have passed, to A.D.  
enter the channel. 1778.

During these vigorous preparations the admiral had the daily mortification to see several of the English traders fall into the hands of the French. The Stanly armed brig, with five prizes, unfortunately anchored in the middle of their fleet, the darkness of the night concealing their ensigns, and was boarded before she discovered her mistake. If some traders and advice-boats had not escaped over the flats, the Hope, with a convoy from Halifax, would likewise have been taken, and added to the general loss and indignation.

The French Squadron had maintained a constant intercourse with the shore by means of boats and small vessels; which was observed to cease on the 21st of July. On the day following they appeared under way. The wind was favourable for crossing the bar, the spring tides were at the highest, and every circumstance concurred for attacking the British fleet to the greatest advantage. The admiral, therefore, had reason to expect one of the hottest actions ever fought between the two nations. Had the English men of war been defeated, the transports and victuallers must have been an easy acquisition; and the army, of course, compelled to surrender on any terms the enemy might impose. But D'Estaing seems not to have possessed sufficient courage to contend for so great a stake; and at three o'clock in the afternoon he bore off to the southward, to the great mortification of our gallant seamen; who, confident of victory, only longed for a battle.

Instructions were immediately dispatched to the advice-boats stationed without on the flats, to follow and observe the motions of the French fleet. It was generally supposed that the enemy's design was to force the port of New York, and that their bearing to the southward was owing to the circumstances of the weather. But advice was received, that they were seen on the morning of the 23d, in the latitude of the Delaware. Soon after this intelligence, the English fleet received an unexpected accession of force by the arrival of the Renown from the West Indies; and so extremely inferior were they in every respect to the enemy, that the addition of a single fifty gun ship was a

A. D. matter of general exultation. Such was the mortifying debility 1778. of the British fleet, while the first lord of the admiralty triumphed in parliament in the superiority of lord Howe's squadron over that of M. D'Estaing.

The Dispatch arrived from Halifax the 26th of July, which brought no intelligence of Byron, but informed the admiral, that the *Raisonable* and *Centurion* were both on their way to New York. These, as well as the *Cornwall*, formed a most seasonable reinforcement.

It was now known for certain, that the French fleet had failed for Rhode Island. On the 29th they had been seen off Newport harbour; the same day two of their frigates had entered the *Secoanet* passage; next morning two line-of-battle ships had run up the *Naraganset* passage; and the remainder of the squadron were at anchor without *Brenton's Lodge*, about five miles from the town. In this divided state of the enemy, lord Howe, notwithstanding the great inferiority of his force even after the reinforcement, determined to save the British garrison at Rhode Island. Two additional fire-ships were constructed by his orders, and all his squadron was ready for sea by the first of August. The weather prevented, however, his arrival at Rhode Island till the evening of the 9th. By this time D'Estaing had entered the harbour under an easy sail, cannonading the town and batteries as he passed. His situation, therefore, was much stronger than that on which the English had depended at *Sandy Hook*. The rebels also were possessed of the left-hand shore, the whole length of the harbour, which gave them an opportunity not only to annoy the British fleet from the heights of *Conanicut*, near to which it must have approached, but, during the attack against D'Estaing, to bring all their guns to bear upon the English ships from the northern extremity of that island.

Next morning the wind blew directly out of the harbour, and in a short time the French squadron appeared standing out to sea with all their sails on board. Lord Howe immediately made the signal to get under way, and endeavoured by several masterly manœuvres to throw the enemy to leeward. The weather-gage was a matter of the utmost importance, as, unless



he could obtain that, the fire-ships, in which were placed the A. D. greatest hopes in contending with such a superior force, could 1778. not be brought into action; and the frigates which had charge of them would likewise have been prevented from engaging. But the attention of the French was as great to preserve this advantage, as the solicitude of the English to acquire it. Night put an end to the manœuvres on both sides, and next morning presented the two fleets in the same situation with regard to the weather, but at somewhat greater distance. The wind still being to the eastward, blowing fresh, and there appearing no prospect of change, lord Howe, therefore, ordered the frigates which had the charge of the fire-ships to be informed, that, should the enemy continue to preserve the weather-gage, he should wait their approach with the squadron formed in a line of battle a-head, from the wind to the starboard. At the same time he took a step upon which no officer could have ventured, whose character for personal bravery was less fully established. It is well known that a commander-in-chief, stationed in the line, cannot, after the action is commenced, observe the general conduct of the battle. His services are then of no more avail than those of any other officer, equally brave and expert in the management of a single ship. But, as lord Howe had on this occasion to engage under so many disadvantages, it was necessary to seek resource in his superior skill and activity, to be ready to profit of every fortuitous occurrence, and to compensate for the inferiority of his force by his address in applying it. He therefore shifted his flag on board the Apollo frigate, leaving the Eagle in the centre, and moved to a convenient distance to take a view of the whole line. Having by this gained a nearer view of the French fleet, and observed that they had placed their strongest ships in the van, he strengthened the rear of the British to receive their attack. About four o'clock the French admiral altered his bearing, and new-formed his line to engage to leeward. Lord Howe crossed through the interstices of the English line with the frigates and fire-ships, and in a few minutes after made a signal for his ships to shorten sail, and close to the centre. The engagement seemed now to be decided on by the commanders of both squadrons; but in a

A. D. short time the French again altered their course, and bearing to 1778. the southward were speedily, from the state of the weather, entirely out of sight.

The wind blew so hard that it was necessary for the British to lie to all night to prevent the separation of their fleet. But the gale increased to such violence, that, notwithstanding this precaution, the blue division was totally separated from the rest; the centre and van with most of the frigates still keeping together. The Apollo, in which the admiral was embarked, having lost her fore-mast in the night, he shifted his flag next day on board the Phoenix, captain Hammond, then in company with the Centurion, Ardent, Richmond, Vigilant and Roebuck. The whole fleet was greatly disabled by the storm, their sails shattered, their masts sprung, and the fire-ships rendered by the wet totally unfit for service. But, though the elements warred against them, they failed not to assail their enemies wherever the opportunity offered. On the evening of the 13th, captain Dawson, in the Renown of fifty guns, fell in with the Langue-doc, carrying M. D'Estaing, totally dismasted. Having run close under her lee, he gave her all his upper-deck guns; then standing off to windward, opened his lower ports, and, at half a cable's length, poured in three broadsides. The darkness obliged him to lie to for the night, in the resolution of renewing the attack next morning; but at the first dawn six French ships hove in sight, three of which remained with the wreck, and the other three gave him chase. The same evening commodore Hotham would have taken the Tonant, had it not been for the intervention of other French ships. A circumstance of another kind prevented the Cæsar, a 74 gun ship, from becoming a prize to the Isis, after an action as brilliant as any on record in the history of the English navy. Captain Rayner of the Isis, discovering the force of his opponent, at first endeavoured to escape her; but she proved to be the fastest sailer. In a short time they were close on board each other, and engaged for an hour and a half within pistol-shot. Notwithstanding the extraordinary disproportion of force, the address and intrepidity of the English captain was so happily seconded by the ardour of his officers and men, that the Frenchman was forced to put before the wind. The Isis

was

was incapable of pursuing him, being so much shattered in her A. D. masts and rigging. Mr. Bougainville, the French captain, lost 1778. his arm, the first lieutenant his leg, and they acknowledged seventy men killed and wounded; whereas the *Isis* had but one man killed, and fourteen wounded. After these honourable but partial engagements, the English ships sailed for the general rendezvous, which the admiral had appointed at the Hook, where they found their consorts almost as much shattered by the storm, as they had been by the storm and the French fleet together.

During the time requisite for repairing the disabled ships, the *Experiment*, being sent to explore the state of affairs at Newport, brought intelligence, the 23d of August, that D'Estaing's squadron had again returned to Rhode Island. Lieutenant Stanhope arrived next day, having with great gallantry passed through the body of the French fleet in a whale-boat, conveying more complete information of the situation of the enemy. He had left them at anchor at the harbour's mouth, which it was not probable they had entered, as the wind had all along continued at east. The rebels, to the number of twenty thousand, had advanced within fifteen hundred yards of our works. From them, however, Sir Robert Pigot, who commanded the English garrison, apprehended little danger; but should the French fleet come in, the governor ordered his messenger to say it would make an alarming change.

Lord Howe lost not a moment, upon this information, to set sail for the relief of the place. But he was met at sea by the *Galatea* with dispatches from general Pigot, acquainting him that D'Estaing had sailed from his anchorage, and steered in a course for Boston. His lordship, therefore, detached the *Nautilus*, *Sphinx*, and *Vigilant* to Rhode Island, and proceeded with the remainder of his squadron in quest of the enemy. As it was not probable that the French would attempt to navigate their large ships in their disabled state through the south channel, within George's Bank, his lordship was in hopes that, by following that course, he might intercept their passage to Boston Bay. But on entering that bay the 30th, he found to his great mortification that the enemy had anticipated his arrival. The  
next

A. D. next day he endeavoured to take advantage of a leading wind to view their position, but was prevented by the *St. Albans* running on shore near the point of Cape Cod. He effected his purpose, however, on the 1st of September, and judging that no attempt could be made against them in their present situation with the smallest prospect of success, he stood off to sea, in order to disengage his ships from the navigation of the coast, which was extremely dangerous, the wind blowing fresh from the east, and the appearance of the weather in other respects unfavourable. When he arrived at Newport, he found that the measures which he had taken, had been effectual in relieving that important garrison; the rebel general Sullivan, on the unexpected retreat of D'Estaing, having retired from before the place after uttering many bitter reproaches against the brittle faith of his new allies. Lord Howe afterwards returned to Sandy Hook, and his health being infirm, surrendered the powers with which he was intrusted to rear-admiral Gambier, and set sail for England, where he arrived the 25th of October.

The naval operations in Europe, though far less complicated, were not more decisive than in America. The French, as early as the month of May, had in the road of Brest nineteen ships of 74 guns, three of 80; and fourteen frigates, commanded by the count D'Orvilliers, lieutenant-general of the marine. The duke of Chartres, eldest son of the first prince of the blood, commanded an eighty-gun ship, and gave the splendour of his name to this formidable equipment. The British fleet\*, destined to act against the main force of the enemy, was committed to admiral Keppel, who sailed from St. Helen's the 8th of June, with unlimited discretionary powers. Nothing particular hap-

\* It consisted of the following ships: The *Victory* of 100 guns, admiral Keppel; the *Queen* of 90 guns, vice-admiral Harland; the *Ocean* of 90 guns, vice-admiral Palliser; the *Sandwich* of 90 guns; the *Prince George* of 90 guns; the *Foudroyant*, *Shrewsbury*, *Egmont*, *Valiant*, *Cu agaux*, *Ramilles*, *Hector*, *Marque*, *Elisabeth*, *Berwick*, and *Cumberland*, of 74 guns each: the *America*, *Buxton*, *Stirling Castle*, *Robuste*, and *Bienfaisant*, of 64 guns each; *Arcton* frigate of 30 guns; *Fox* and *Proserpine* frigates; the *Alert* and *Mercure* armed cutters, and the *Vu can* fire-ship; in all 27 sail; which were afterwards joined by some others.—See Appendix, No. XX. for a complete list of the British and French fleets.

pened until the 17th, when the English fleet being in line of A. D. battle, 25 miles distant from the Lizard, they perceived two 1776 ships and two tenders surveying the fleet, and watching its motions. The situation of the admiral was somewhat embarrassing, for by commencing hostilities without express orders, the whole blame of the war might be laid upon him; but considering that it was necessary to stop these frigates, as well to obtain intelligence, as to prevent its being communicated, he immediately directed the whole fleet to chase; and between five and six in the evening the Milford had got close along-side the leeward ship, which proved to be a large French frigate called the *Licorne*, of 32 guns and 230 men. Her commander could not be persuaded by civil words to bring his vessel to the English fleet, so that it was necessary to fire a gun, which made him prepare to obey the English officer's request. The other French ship was pursued by the *Arethusa* and *Alert* cutter, and, at some distance astern, the *Valiant* and *Monarque*. Meanwhile the French frigate which had been overtaken by the Milford, and was now attended by the *America*, changed her course, and went upon a different tack, with a view to escape. One of the English ships attending her, fired a shot across her, which was immediately followed by the French frigate's discharging a whole broadside into the *America*, at the very moment Lord Longford was upon the gunwale talking to the French captain in the most civil strain. The latter then struck his colours; and though his conduct merited the fire of the *America*, Lord Longford's magnanimity disdained to take vengeance on an enemy whom he had entirely in his power. On the 19th the *Valiant* and *Monarque* who had chased the other French ship, were seen making for the fleet with a disabled ship in tow, which was soon perceived to be the *Arethusa* with her main-mast gone, and much shattered in other respects. The *Arethusa* had, on the night of the 17th, come up with her chase, which proved to be the *Belle Poule*, a large French frigate with heavy metal. The French captain peremptorily refused to bring to, which obliged captain Marshall of the *Arethusa* to fire a shot, which was immediately returned by a whole broadside from the French frigate. This brought on an engagement which lasted upwards of two hours. The action was contested with equal obduracy on both

A. D. both sides. The French frigate was superior in weight of metal, and in the number of men; advantages which she stood in need of: at length the *Arethusa* being much shattered in her masts, sails and rigging, and there being little wind to govern her, she could not prevent the French ship from getting into a small bay, where boats at day-light came out and towed her into safety. The *Arethusa* had eight men killed, and thirty-six wounded. The French acknowledge forty slain, and forty-seven wounded, on board the *Belle Poule*. Captain Fairfax of the *Alert* cutter was more fortunate, having taken, after a gallant engagement, a French schooner of ten carriage-guns, and ten swivels that attended the *Belle Poule*. And on the 18th the *Foudroyant*, *Courageux*, and *Robuste*, had chased and taken the *Pallas*, a French frigate of 32 guns and 220 men.

From papers found on board the *Pallas* and *Licorne* French frigates, the admiral discovered that the enemy's fleet in Brest water consisted of thirty-two sail of the line, and about a dozen frigates; whereas his own consisted only of twenty of the former, and three of the latter. In this perplexing situation he considered the probable consequences of risking an engagement against such odds, also the critical and hazardous situation the nation might be reduced to in case of a defeat; as the dock-yards and whole shipping in the ports of the channel would, in that case, be at the mercy of the enemy; therefore, though he foresaw that to come home without orders might be fatal to his own reputation, yet he resolved to risk that for the safety of his country, and accordingly returned to Spithead the 27th June for a reinforcement.

At this juncture two fleets from the West Indies, with some ships from the Levant, arrived, which afforded a supply of seamen; by this seasonable relief the admiral was enabled to sail again on the 9th July, with twenty-four ships of the line, and was joined on his way down the channel by six more. The French king in the mean time had issued orders for reprisals on the ships of Great Britain; assigning the capture of the frigates, and our engagement with the *Belle Poule*, as the ostensible reasons: thus nothing of war was wanting between the two nations but the ceremony of a proclamation. The French fleet, consisting of thirty-two ships of the line; and a number of frigates,

gates, had sailed from Brest the 8th July; they were divided A. D. into three squadrons, under count D'Orvilliers, (commander 1778. in chief), count Duchaffault, and the duke de Chartres, a prince of the blood, assisted by three other admirals\*. On their departure from Brest, the *Lively* frigate, which had been cruising to watch their motions, was captured, being so much entangled amongst them that she could not escape.

The British fleet † was also divided into three squadrons, commanded by admiral Keppel, the vice-admirals Sir Robert Harland and Sir Hugh Palliser: rear-admiral Campbell, from friendship to admiral Keppel, condescended to act as first captain on board the *Victory*. The two fleets came in sight of each other in the afternoon of the 23d July, in the Bay of Biscay, about 35 leagues to the westward of Brest. At first the French admiral, from his movements, seemed desirous to bring on an engagement, probably supposing the British fleet to be nearly of equal force with what it was about four weeks before; but on coming nearer he discovered his mistake, and from that moment he evidently determined to avoid an action. This plan he adhered to for the three following days, notwithstanding every effort used by the British admiral to bring him to action; which the latter ardently wished for, before the East and West India fleets, which were expected about this time, should arrive, finding it would be difficult to protect them effectually, as the French fleet overspread many leagues of the ocean. All the advantage he could obtain in four days was to separate two of the enemy's line-of-battle ships, which returned to Brest, and could not afterwards rejoin their fleet: this placed both fleets upon an equality as to line-of-battle ships. On the 24th the British admiral threw out the signal to chase to windward, which was continued the two following days, keeping at the same time his ships as much connected as the nature of a pursuit would admit, in order to seize the first opportunity of bringing the enemy to a close engagement; but this proved ineffectual, the French cautiously avoiding coming to action, and in their manœuvres showing great address and nautical

\* For a list of the French fleet see Appendix, No. XXI.

† See Appendix, No. XXI. for a list of the British fleet.

A. D. knowledge. About four o'clock in the morning of the 27th 1778. July, the French were discovered to windward about five miles distance. Admiral Keppel finding some of his fleet too much scattered, made signals to collect them together, still continuing to follow the enemy. About ten o'clock a heavy dark squall came on, which continued near an hour; when it cleared up, the two fleets, by a shift of wind, had neared each other, but on different tacks. About half past eleven the signal was hoisted out for a general engagement, at which time the ships as they came up began firing. The French attacked at some distance the headmost of Sir Robert Harland's division, which led the van. Their fire was warmly returned by almost every ship in the fleet, as they ranged along the line; and notwithstanding it had been extended by the chase, they were soon engaged, as the two fleets passed each other. The cannonade was very heavy, and did considerable execution on both sides. The enemy, as usual, fired chiefly at the rigging, which crippled many of the British ships, while Mr. Keppel continued the old way of fighting, by firing principally at the hulls of the enemy's ships with good success.

The action, for the short space it lasted, (about three hours), was very warm. The loss on the side of the British was 133 killed, and 373 wounded; among the latter were four officers, none of whom died. The French concealed their loss as much as possible; they acknowledged, however, 150 killed, and about 600 wounded. From the manner of engaging it is probable they lost more men than the British, perhaps double the number.

After the different ships had repaired their damages, the commander in chief, about three o'clock in the afternoon, made the signal to form the line of battle a-head. The red division, commanded by Sir Robert Harland, immediately obeyed; but the blue division never came into the line during the rest of the day, Sir Hugh Palliser alledging, that his ship the *Formidable* was so much disabled that he could not obey the signal.

Admiral Keppel's letter to the admiralty prior to the engagement mentioned his being for several days in chase of the enemy, from which the public expected that, if an action should happen,



happen, it would prove a decisive one: but, on reading the A.D. Gazette account of this affair when it was over, and finding the 1778. enemy had escaped with their whole fleet, not a ship being captured or destroyed, they were greatly chagrined and disappointed.

Both sides claimed the victory\* in this undecisive action. The French soon after the engagement, drew up in a line of battle to leeward, and continued during the afternoon in that position, with an intention, they assert, to renew the engagement; but it is more probable, with a view to bring off their crippled ships in the night, which must have been abandoned if they had fled sooner.

The French Gazette relates, that the English stole away in the night, without showing any lights; and in the morning, the French having no expectation of being able to renew the action, and finding themselves unexpectedly off Ushant, (the effects of the winds and currents), while they supposed themselves near thirty leagues from any land, they took that opportunity of putting into Brest, in order to land their wounded men.

Although the English, had no great reason to boast of victory, yet the French account is totally false; for it appeared by the evidence of witnesses upon oath, (in the subsequent trials of Keppel and Palliser), that the French, on purpose to deceive, stationed soon after it was dark three of their best sailing ships in a line, at considerable distances from each other, with lights, in order to have the appearance of their whole fleet. This finesse had the intended effect; their fleet stole away in the night, and the three ships followed them at day-light in the morning.

The British fleet was nearly in a line of battle all night, (excepting the Formidable and some other ships of Sir Hugh Palliser's division); both admiral Keppel, and Sir Robert Harland, had distinguishing lights out, and also a light at their bowsprit end. Sir Hugh Palliser, not being in his station, had no lights, neither in that situation would it have been proper, as it might have misled some of the ships of his own and other divisions. The

\* See admiral Keppel's letter to the admiralty, giving an account of the action. Appendix, No. XX.

A. D. men were on deck all night in every ship of the fleet, quarter-  
1778. ed at their guns, ready to renew the action in the morning, expecting the French were also inclined to fight; but in this they found themselves mistaken, their whole fleet being out of sight, excepting the three ships above mentioned, which were also at too great a distance to be overtaken.

Whether the want of success in this engagement was owing to any misconduct in the commander in chief, to a misunderstanding between him and Sir Hugh Palliser, or to some other cause\*, is perhaps not easy to determine†: but whatever reasons may be assigned for this, it is evident that a fair opportunity was lost of striking a blow against the maritime power of France, which might have been decisive.

The commander discovering in the morning that the French had escaped, that many ships of his own fleet had suffered greatly in their masts and rigging, and that there was not the least prospect of overtaking the enemy before they could reach Brest, he had no alternative but to bring the fleet home to be repaired. He arrived off Plymouth on the 31st of July.

Admiral Keppel put to sea again with the same number of ships and commanders, on the 22d of August. The French had left Brest some days before, but instead of looking out for the British fleet, they bore away for Cape Finisterre, leaving their trade at the mercy of our fleet and privateers. Many of their merchantmen accordingly fell into the hands of the English. The British admiral continued cruising in the bay till the 28th of October, when he returned to Portsmouth, and the French got to Brest a few days after.

The commissioners appointed to settle matters amicably with the Americans had so little effect in suspending the military or naval operations across the Atlantic, that it was not necessary to interrupt the thread of our narration by giving an account of their proceedings. But as the proposals which they were em-

\* Some experienced seamen, attribute the miscarriage on the 27th of July, to the British fleet keeping the old way of fighting, by firing chiefly at the hulls of the enemy; whereas if they had fired at the rigging and masts, some of them must have been much crippled, which would have forced the French admiral, either to have submitted to a general engagement, or to have abandoned the line ships.

† A short account of admiral Keppel's trial is subjoined.

powered to make, altered intirely the object of the war, it is A. D. necessary to explain the purport of their commission, the means <sup>1778</sup>. used for giving it effect, and the sentiments with which it was received. They sailed the 21st of April in his majesty's ship the Trident, and their arrival in America was notified the 9th of June, in a letter from Sir Henry Clinton to general Washington, intimating, that the earl of Carlisle, William Eden, and George Johnstone, three of the commissioners for restoring peace between Great Britain and America, were then at Philadelphia, and requesting a passport for their secretary Dr. Ferguson, with a letter from them to Congress. General Washington declined granting this request until the pleasure of Congress should be known; but while that assembly were deliberating on the expediency of the measure referred to them, an express arrived from the general, carrying a letter from the commissioners addressed to his excellency Henry Laurens the president, and other members of the Congress. This letter, after much debate, was read. It contained the powers with which the commissioners were furnished to suspend hostilities, to remove grievances, and to grant the requests which the colonies had frequently made on the subject of acts of parliament passed since the year 1763, and to settle a plan of policy for the future government of America, which should obtain force, when ratified by the parliament of Great Britain; the whole strain of the letter is highly respectful. The commissioners declare, it is their inclination "to establish  
 " the powers of the legislatures in each particular state of Ame-  
 " rica, to settle its revenue, its civil and military establishment,  
 " and to allow it the exercise of a perfect freedom of legisla-  
 " tion and internal government." They also declare themselves ready "to concur in measures towards extending every freedom  
 " to trade that the respective interests of Great Britain and  
 " America can require; to agree that no military force shall be  
 " kept up in the different states of North America without the  
 " consent of the General Congress, or particular assemblies;  
 " and to concur in measures calculated to discharge the debts  
 " of America, and raise the value and credit of the paper cir-  
 " culation." To these advantageous and condescending propo-  
 fals

A. D. 1778. the Congress answered in terms of great haughtiness. The commissioners proceeded on a supposition, that the Americans were subjects of Great Britain, an idea utterly inadmissible. The commissioners mentioned the insidious interposition of France, an expression so disrespectful to his most Christian majesty, the good and great ally of the United States, that nothing but an earnest desire to spare the farther effusion of blood could have persuaded Congress to allow the reading of a paper drawn up with such bold indecency of language. They observe, however, that "they will be contented to enter upon a consideration of a treaty of peace and commerce with Great Britain, not inconsistent with treaties already subsisting, when his Britannic majesty shall demonstrate a sincere disposition for that purpose. The only solid proof of this disposition will be an explicit acknowledgment of the independence of these states, or the withdrawing of his fleets and armies." Such were the fruits of a negotiation, proposed with much triumph by ministers, and accepted with great unanimity by parliament. By the same fatal misconduct, or the same unexampled misfortune, which had marked every step of the proceedings of the British administration with regard to the colonies, the army had orders to evacuate Philadelphia at the time of the arrival of the commissioners. At the moment that we held out terms of peace, we discovered our inability to continue the war with effect. Such a remarkable coincidence naturally damped the hopes of our negotiators as well as of all those who were still attached to the interests of the mother country. The English general had expected to receive a powerful reinforcement of troops; he received commissioners who had powers to negotiate away the principal objects for which he fought. The commissioners expected to add weight and persuasion to their proposals by being seconded by the active operations of the army. They were obliged to retire with that army, which now abandoned its conquests, and, instead of aspiring at advantage, discovered great merit in being able to make a retreat without sustaining any irreparable loss.

Thus it happened by a fatality unknown in any other age or country, that the proposals of the commissioners damped the  
spirits.

spirits and checked the ardour of the troops, while the conduct A. D. of the troops, however necessary and proper in itself, weakened, 1778. disgraced, and vilified the proposals of the commissioners. After this inauspicious beginning, it could scarcely be expected that any future measures should be attended with better success. The commissioners, however, continued in America four months, publishing proclamations of grace and pardon to those who despised their power; offering friendship and union to those who avowed that they were not only divided from us for ever, but leagued with our worst enemies; and endeavouring to treat with assemblies, or correspond with private persons, all which endeavours were rejected with marks of ineffable contempt. At length, after being exposed to such indignities as we do not recollect that the ministers of any independent nation ever submitted to among a civilized people, and after condescending to such degrading language of their constituents, as was never held by the representatives of any kingdom upon earth\*, they determined to return home; previous to which they published a manifesto dated at New York the 3d of October, 1778. This contained a recapitulation of the advantages which they were empowered to confer, with an appeal from the resolutions of the Congress to the inhabitants at large, and a denunciation of a more destructive war than had hitherto been carried on, since, if the British colonies were to become an accession to France, prudence would dictate to Great Britain the necessity of rendering that accession of as little avail as possible to her enemy. Soon after the publication of this paper, which was not more effectual than the rest of their proceedings, they set sail for England.

The military and naval operations, it has been observed, were little interrupted by this extraordinary negociation. The advanced season of the year, however, prevented those active and powerful exertions which alone could produce any decisive effect; the spirits and vigour of the troops and seamen seemed

\* As an example take the following memorable words of one of the commissioners in a letter to the president of the Congress: "If you should follow the example of Great Britain in the hour of her insolvency, and send us back without a hearing, I should hope from private friendship, that I may be permitted to see the country, and the worthy characters she has exhibited."

gradually

A. D. gradually to languish, and their operations naturally degenerated into the *petite guerre*. In those partial hostilities the king's troops were generally successful. They destroyed several magazines belonging to the enemy; laid waste the possessions of some of the most obstinate of the rebels; and demolished, by the assistance of the ships, some villages which were built for the reception of prize goods, and the accommodation of the sailors belonging to the American privateers. But no general engagement took place, nor was any thing decisive performed by the English or French squadrons, both of which suffered greater injury from the weather than from the assaults of the enemy. The surrender of Dominica by the English was in some measure compensated by the taking of the islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, which were the only settlements the French possessed in the northern parts of America. Thus every thing seemed to tend to an equality; and we had the mortification to mourn over our loss in the course of the war, without any prospect of being soon able to repair it. We had already lost two ships of the line, thirteen frigates, and seven sloops of war\*. The

\* List of English men of war taken or destroyed in the present war.

Ships.	guns.	
Augusta,	64	burnt in the Delaware;
Somerset,	64	lost on the coast of New-England;
Repulse,	32	lost off Bermudas;
Orpheus,		} 32 sunk or burnt at Rhode Island;
Flora,		
Juno,		
Lark, each of		
Minerva,	32	taken by the French in the West Indies;
Acton,	28	burnt at Sullivan's Island;
Fox,	28	taken by the French off Brest. This ship had before been taken by the Americans, and retaken by the Flora;
Lively,	20	taken by the French off Brest;
Cerberus,	28	burnt at Rhode Island;
Mermaid,	28	run ashore by the French off Cape Henlopen;
Active,	28	taken by the French in the West Indies;
Syren,	28	destroyed by the Americans;
Drake,	18	taken by an American privateer;
Falcon,		} 18 sunk or burnt at Rhode Island;
King's Fisher,		
Pomona,	18	lost in the West Indies;
Merlin,	14	burnt in the Delaware;
Senegal,	14	} taken by the French off Rhode Island.
Thunder bomb,		

merchant

merchant ships taken by the American privateers, were near a A. D. thousand in number, and valued at nearly two millions sterling. 1778. We had not taken one capital ship from the French, nor, excepting the *Pallas* and *Licorne* frigates, any man of war worth mentioning. After the naval force of the Americans seemed to be totally destroyed, it arose more than once from its ruins, and harassed our trade as much as before. The value of American captures, however, made by English vessels, exceeded, by several hundred thousand pounds, the loss which the British merchants had sustained; and when we take into the account the captures from the French, particularly the *Modeste* and *Carnatic* Indiamen, each of which was worth near half a million, the balance will appear to be considerably in favour of Great Britain. But, in estimating national advantages, we must not compensate the loss of English merchants by the gains of English seamen. The latter, being chiefly the profit of a few individuals, is not to be put in competition with the benefit of the great body of merchants and manufacturers; nor does it even indemnify the public for the damage and diminution which the navy itself has suffered by the misfortunes of the sea, and sustained from the efforts of the enemy.

In taking a general retrospect of the conduct of the war, in as far as the navy is concerned, it appears that the commanders in chief, as well as the captains of particular vessels, have for the most part acted with their usual bravery and wisdom. Whatever aspersions may be thrown on those who superintended the management of our marine, no dishonour has been fixed on the British flag, nor has the ancient glory of our seamen been tarnished. Hitherto, indeed, their spirited ardour and intrepidity have not produced the effects that usually result from them. But we are not to account for this, by supposing any diminution of those eminent qualities for which they have been long distinguished. The inauspicious and fatal influence which prevails in a high department has continued to give us one proof after another, that no people can be great without being virtuous. The iniquities of the ministers have been visited on the nation——

*Quidquid delirant reges, plectuntur Achivi.*

A. D. But that very circumstance which has hitherto occasioned our  
 1778. perplexity and distress, the unhappy superintendence of our naval affairs, is what ought at present to afford us just grounds of consolation. If our boundless supplies and powerful armaments had been managed and directed by the wisdom and virtue of ministers, and if, notwithstanding this most favourable circumstance, the exertion of our forces by sea and land had been unable to maintain with honour the cause in which we were engaged, we should have just reason to despair; because it is plain, that in such a case we could not expect, by any alteration of management, to defeat the malignant purposes of our natural and inveterate enemies. But if our fleets and armies were condemned to reluctant inactivity at the beginning of the war; if while we had the Americans only to contend with, we took no resolutions becoming the dignity of a great nation; if while our enemies prepared for hostility, by augmenting their troops and equipping their squadrons, our own were allowed to rot, languish, and moulder away in a state the most deplorable; if after the message delivered by the French ambassador, which was in effect a declaration of war, had roused the spirit of the nation, our ministers still remained profoundly sunk in lethargic security, totally incapable of those vigorous measures which their situation required, and in every instance behind-hand with our enemies; what could we possibly expect from such a conduct but misfortune, disgrace, and complicated calamity? A French fleet was equipped at Brest, and another at Toulon. The destination of the latter appeared plainly to every body, not concerned in administration, to be for America. But the first lord of the admiralty remained in doubtful suspense. He knew not what part of the empire might be attacked. He continued motionless himself, and received patiently the hostile assault; like an unskilful boxer, intending to cover the part on which he had already received a blow, and then shifting his hand to another part just wounded, but possessing neither spirit nor address sufficient to ward off the impending stroke. Even after D'E-Saings's squadron had sailed, the account of which we obtained by the vigilance of a foreign resident, without any thanks to the court of admiralty, the important pass of the Mediterranean



was left unguarded. It was still pretended, that the destination A. D. of this fleet was uncertain: their sailing in an American direction might be a feint; if a squadron should be detached from our fleet in pursuit of them, they might perhaps return, and form a junction with D'Orvilliers, which would give him a decisive advantage over admiral Keppel. Then the disgrace of the nation burst forth with irresistible evidence. Notwithstanding the boasted declarations that our fleet was superior to the united power of France and Spain, it happened that the fleet of France alone commanded more than our respect. The immense sums voted for the navy supplies, for these three years past, could not furnish us with ships to follow D'Estaing without leaving our own coast defenceless.

The consequence of this was, that while we employed several months in gleaning the old stores, that had lain for years rotting in the different dock-yards, splicing and knotting cordage that had long been condemned as unserviceable, and patching up masts and yards from the remnants of a fleet once the terror of the world, D'Estaing rode the waves in triumph, carrying protection and independence to America. If the fortune of lord Howe had not been equal to his activity, his fatigued vessels, considerable part of which, from the nature of the service in which they were engaged, lay dispersed over the wide-extended coast of North America, must have been attacked in detail, and defeated by piece-meal. The admiral himself, with the main force of his squadron, narrowly escaped destruction in the Delaware; for, had the French fleet arrived a few days sooner, he would have been surprized in that river with two ships of 64 guns, one of 50, two of 40, and a few frigates, encumbered with a fleet of transports, victuallers, and private traders, laden for the most part with the refugees from Philadelphia, who seized this last opportunity of transporting their families and the wreck of their fortunes.

Thus was the main force of Great Britain on that side of the Atlantic left to be the sport of contingencies. It was saved by something that nearly resembles a miracle. Lord Howe resisted until Byron's fleet, which had long been kept waving in the harbour of Portsmouth, to the no small entertainment of the

A. D. populace, at length arrived in America. But this Squadron 1778. had been equipped in such a manner as rendered it fitter for a naval review than for any effective service. It was unable to weather a summer storm, and approached the coast of America, having more need of protection than ability to yield assistance. Among these and all the other multiplied errors which disgraced every part of our naval administration, we find the great source of our present calamities. But if we make a thorough reformation in this important department, we shall soon see that there is no reason to despair, until the whole mass of citizens become as corrupt as those men who have brought disgrace and calamity upon their country.

Before concluding this chapter, we have thought proper to wait for the judgment of the court-martial concerning the conduct of admiral Keppel in the action of the 27th of July. Though the period of this decision extends beyond the limits assigned to the present work, yet as it tends to clear up an important transaction, the principal circumstances of which have been already related, we have thought it essential to the naval history of the year 1778. Soon after the action, the periodical publications were filled, as usual, with encomiums or satires on the admiral, according to the various opinions, inclinations, or humours of the different writers, who chose to celebrate or to arraign his character and conduct. As the admiral had little personal connection with the king's ministers, and belonged to a family which had been distinguished by peculiar marks of friendship from the late duke of Cumberland whom they followed in opposition, it was evident that he owed the high command conferred on him to his professional abilities alone, without the smallest assistance from court favour. Those who approved all the measures of administration were naturally, therefore, the loudest in condemning his behaviour, while the antiministerial party not only justified his proceedings, but held him forth as an object deserving the warmest gratitude and applause of his fellow-citizens. Various anonymous paragraphs were published and answered. The panegyric of Sir Hugh Palliser, vice-admiral of the blue, occasioned a criticism on his conduct; it was said that he disobeyed orders by neglecting

to pay any attention to the admiral's signals, and thereby prevented the destruction of the whole French fleet. These invectives and recriminations might have passed on both sides without any material consequence, and the propriety of admiral Keppel's behaviour being blended with the prejudices of party, would probably have remained a matter of doubt, until the passions of contending factions subsiding, had left time for listening to the impartiality of some future historian. But Sir Hugh Palliser took a decisive step on the 4th of November; and by giving his name to the public in a letter written for his own justification, conveyed an indirect insinuation against his commander. In the beginning of December these imputations were re-echoed in the house of commons, which called up the admiral to vindicate his professional character. "If he was to go over the business of the 27th of July again, he would conduct himself in the same manner. Every thing that could be done had been done; and he was happy to say, the British flag had not been tarnished in his hands. He felt himself perfectly easy on that head, and should never be ashamed of his conduct on the day alluded to. The oldest and most experienced officers in his majesty's navy, in every engagement, saw something which they were before unacquainted with; and that day presented something new. He impeached no man of neglect of duty, because he was satisfied that the officer alluded to had manifested no want of courage, the quality most essential in a British seaman." He said "he was much surprized when an officer under his command, had made an appeal to the public in a common newspaper, signed with his name, before any accusation had been made against him, and which tended to render him odious and despicable in the eyes of his countrymen." Sir Hugh Palliser declared "he was so conscious of not having been any hindrance to a re-action with the British fleet on the 27th of July, that he was equally indifferent with the honourable admiral how soon an inquiry were set on foot. He had discovered from what the admiral had just said, that the principal matter which weighed against him in the admiral's mind was the publication in the newspapers, which he had signed with his name, and by which he would abide. If

" is

A. D. " it was imprudent, if it was wrong, the consequence was to  
 1778. " himself. 'To say any thing against a friend was to a man of  
 " sensibility the most disagreeable thing in nature; but where an  
 " officer's reputation was at stake, the removing an unjust stigma  
 " was certainly the first object. If there was any reason of  
 " accusation, why not make it openly and fairly? If not, why  
 " insinuate that he had been wanting in point of conduct, though  
 " a testimony was given in favour of his courage? This," he said,  
 " was a language extremely different from that of the admiral's  
 " dispatch containing an account of the action, in which he informed  
 " the admiralty-board of the spirited and gallant conduct  
 " of all the officers under his command." Admiral Keppel acknowledged  
 " he had given that approbation, and was ready to  
 " repeat it, and point the testimony particularly as well as generally.  
 " The vice-admiral had alluded to signals, and said that  
 " it was no fault of his that the fleet of France was not re-attacked.  
 " As to that he could only say, that he presumed every  
 " inferior officer was to obey the signals of his commander; and  
 " now when called upon to speak out, he would inform the  
 " house and the public, that the signal for coming into the Victory's  
 " wake was flying from three o'clock in the afternoon till  
 " eight in the evening unobeyed: at the same time he did not  
 " charge the vice-admiral with actual disobedience. He doubted  
 " not but, if an inquiry should be thought necessary, that  
 " he would be able to justify himself, because he was fully persuaded  
 " of his personal bravery."

In consequence of this altercation, Sir Hugh Palliser drew up the following charge against admiral Keppel, which he exhibited at the board of admiralty on the 9th of December.

**CHARGE of MISCONDUCT and NEGLECT of DUTY**  
*against the Honourable ADMIRAL KEPPEL, on the*  
*27th and 28th of July, 1778, in divers instances as under*  
*mentioned.*

" I. THAT on the morning of the 27th of July, 1778, having  
 " a fleet of thirty ships of the line under his command, and being  
 " then in the presence of a French fleet of the like number of  
 " ships

“ ships of the line, the said admiral did not make the necessary A. D.  
 “ preparations for fight, did not put his fleet into a line of bat- 1778-  
 “ tle, or into any order proper either for receiving or attacking  
 “ an enemy of such force; but, on the contrary, although his  
 “ fleet was already dispersed and in disorder, he, by making the  
 “ signal for several ships of the vice-admiral of the blue division  
 “ to chase to windward, increased the disorder of that part of  
 “ his fleet, and the ships were in consequence more scattered  
 “ than they had been before; and, whilst in this disorder, he  
 “ advanced to the enemy, and made the signal for battle.  
 “ That the above conduct was the more unaccountable, as the  
 “ enemy’s fleet was not then in disorder, nor beaten, nor flying,  
 “ but formed in a regular line of battle on that tack which ap-  
 “ proached the British fleet, all their motions plainly indicating  
 “ a design to give battle, and they edged down and attacked it  
 “ whilst in disorder. By this unofficer-like conduct, a general  
 “ engagement was not brought on, but the other flag-officers  
 “ and captains were left to engage without order or regularity,  
 “ from which great confusion ensued: some of his ships were  
 “ prevented from getting into action at all; others were not  
 “ near enough to the enemy; and some, from the confusion,  
 “ fired into others of the king’s ships, and did them consider-  
 “ able damage: and the vice-admiral of the blue was left alone  
 “ to engage single and unsupported. In these instances the  
 “ said admiral Keppel negligently performed the duty imposed  
 “ on him.

“ II. That after the van and centre divisions of the British  
 “ fleet passed the rear of the enemy, the admiral did not imme-  
 “ diately tack and double upon the enemy with these two divi-  
 “ sions, and continue the battle, nor did he collect them toge-  
 “ ther at that time, and keep so near the enemy as to renew  
 “ the battle as soon as it might be proper: on the contrary, he  
 “ stood away beyond the enemy to a great distance before he  
 “ wore to stand towards them again, leaving the vice-admiral  
 “ of the blue engaged with the enemy, and exposed to be cut  
 “ off.

“ III. That after the vice-admiral of the blue had passed the  
 “ last of the enemy’s ships, and immediately wore, and laid his  
 “ own

A. D. 1778. " own ship's head towards the enemy again, being then in their  
 " wake and at a little distance only, and expecting the admiral  
 " to advance with all the ships to renew the fight, the admiral  
 " did not advance for that purpose, but shortened sail, hauled  
 " down the signal for battle; nor did he at that time, nor at  
 " any other time whilst standing towards the enemy, call the  
 " ships together in order to renew the attack, as he might have  
 " done, particularly the vice-admiral of the red and his division,  
 " which had received the least damage, had been the longest  
 " out of action, were ready and fit to renew it, were then to  
 " windward, and could have bore down and fetched any part  
 " of the French fleet, if the signal for battle had not been haul-  
 " ed down, or if the said admiral Keppel had availed himself of  
 " the signal appointed by the 31st article of the fighting instruc-  
 " tions, by which he might have ordered those to lead, who are  
 " to lead with the starboard tacks on board, by a wind; which  
 " signal was applicable to the occasion for renewing the engage-  
 " ment with advantage, after the French fleet had been beaten,  
 " their line broken, and in disorder. In these instances he did  
 " not do the utmost in his power to take, sink, burn, or destroy  
 " the French fleet that had attacked the British fleet.

" IV. That instead of advancing to renew the engagement,  
 " as in the preceding articles is alledged, and as he might and  
 " ought to have done, the admiral wore, and made sail directly  
 " from the enemy, and thus he led the whole British fleet away  
 " from them, which gave them an opportunity to rally unmo-  
 " lested, and to form again into a line of battle, and to stand  
 " after the British fleet. This was disgraceful to the British flag;  
 " for it had the appearance of a flight, and gave the French  
 " admiral a pretence to claim the victory, and to publish to the  
 " world, that the British fleet ran away, and that he pursued  
 " it with the fleet of France, and offered it battle.

" V. That on the morning of the 28th of July, 1778, when  
 " it was perceived that only three of the French fleet remained  
 " near the British in the situation the whole had been in the  
 " night before, and that the rest were to leeward at a greater  
 " distance, not in a line of battle but in a heap, the admiral did  
 " not cause the fleet to pursue the flying enemy, not even to  
 " chace

“ chase the three ships that fled after the rest, but on the con- A. D.  
 “ trary he led the British fleet another way directly from the 1778.  
 “ enemy. By these instances of misconduct and neglect a glo-  
 “ rious opportunity was lost of doing a most essential service to  
 “ the state, and the honour of the British navy was tarnished.  
 H. PALLISER.”

THIS charge was sent to the admiralty on the afternoon of the 9th of December, and intimation thereof was given by that board to admiral Keppel the same evening.

When the contents of the accusation were laid before the public, the opinions of men, warped by a thousand prejudices, and shaded by all the different gradations of knowledge and ignorance, were infinitely various, inconsistent, opposite, and contradictory. Those who only knew that we had neither taken nor destroyed any of the French ships in the late engagement, a circumstance which they could not hesitate in ascribing to the misconduct of our commanders, understood, or fancied they understood, the charges alledged against the admiral. They wished that the man who had tarnished the ancient lustre of the British flag might be brought to condign punishment; for never any crisis was more alarming than the present, or more loudly demanded every exertion of discipline and severity, that so those who, sheltered under great examples, negligently or ignorantly performed the service required of them, might be roused to a sense of their duty or insufficiency, and either acquire such talents as were beneficial to the public, or decline the weight of a command too heavy for their abilities.

This torrent of popular censure, which on another occasion would have burst forth with irresistible fury, was effectually checked by two circumstances, extremely honourable to the admiral. His candid, open, liberal behaviour had endeared him to the great body of British seamen, who loved his manners, and respected his courage. He was known to have little connection with the present ministry, and especially to be no favourite with the first lord of the admiralty. This was sufficient to occasion a suspicion that the ministers in general heartily concurred in the accusation, partly to divert the public from melancholy reflections on our present deplorable condition, and partly to share

A. D. with others the blame which must otherwise have lain entirely  
 1778. on their own shoulders. It was known that almost every officer intrusted with a principal command had fallen under their displeasure; and although errors, doubtless, must have been committed by our commanders in the course of the war, yet a repeated series of calamity could only be occasioned by an error at head-quarters, a defect of preparation, a want of vigour, skill, or integrity in those who fitted out, planned, and directed our naval and military expeditions.

The cause and reputation of admiral Keppel were still further supported by a memorial presented to his majesty the 30th of December, and signed by the first names in the British navy. This paper, drawn up in the form of a petition, contained, in elegant and nervous language, a severe remonstrance against the conduct not only of Sir Hugh Palliser, but of the lords of the admiralty. The subscribing admirals represented to the wisdom and justice of his majesty, that Sir Hugh Palliser had withheld the accusation against his commander in chief, from the twenty-seventh day of July to the ninth of December; that the avowed motive of the accusation was to recriminate against charges conjectured by Sir Hugh Palliser, but which in fact were never made; that the commissioners of the admiralty without considering these circumstances, or giving any previous notice to the party accused, had, on the same day on which the charge was preferred, intimated their intention that a court-martial should be held on him, after forty years of meritorious service, in which the glory of the British flag had been maintained and increased in various parts of the world. The consequences of such measures are represented as dangerous to the honour of his majesty's officers, subversive of the discipline of the navy, and destructive to the public order of society\*.

This memorial occasioned no alteration in the measures adopted by the lords of the admiralty, who issued their orders to Sir Thomas Pye, admiral of the white squadron of his majesty's fleet, to hold a court-martial at Portsmouth, the 7th of January, for the trial of admiral Keppel. The court accord-

\* See Appendix, No. XV:II.



singly was assembled, on the day appointed, with the usual formalities, and continued, by several adjournments, till the 11th of February. In the course of the evidence brought by the prosecutor, no one fact was proved that could give the smallest support to a single article in the charge. Admiral Keppel, before bringing forward his witnesses, made a particular reply to the various accusations of his adversary; and in this reply some circumstances are incidentally mentioned, which place the administration of the marine department in the same light in which it must already have appeared to every one who considers with attention the naval history of the present period. In the month of March 1778, the admiral was told that a fleet lay ready for him to command. Having reached Portsmouth, he saw but six ships ready, and "on viewing even those with a seaman's eye, he was not by any means pleased with their condition." On the 30th of June he sailed with twenty ships of the line. Thirty-two ships of the line lay in Brest water, besides an incredible number of frigates. "Was I to seek an engagement," says the admiral, "with a superior force? I never did, nor shall I ever fear to engage a force superior to the one I then commanded, or that I may hereafter command. But I well know what men and ships can do, and if the fleet I commanded had been destroyed, we must have left the French masters of the sea. To refit a fleet requires time. From the situation of affairs, naval stores are not very soon supplied. Never did I experience so deep a melancholy as when I found myself forced to turn my back on France! I quitted my station, and courage was never put to so severe a trial."

The admiral was permitted to sail a second time, without receiving official praise or blame for the part which he had acted. Having taken two French frigates, he was fearful that a war with France, and all its consequences, might be laid to his charge. "This," he says, "for any thing I can tell, may be treasured up to furnish another matter for future accusation." He was surprised, on his return, to be threatened with the fate of admiral Byng, and still more surprised to be charged with cowardice. "I am exceedingly sorry that the admiralty have refused me the liberty of producing my instructions. In all

A. D. " former courts-martial the instructions and orders have been  
 1779. " sent with the charge to the members of the court. Although  
 " on the 27th of July I fought and beat my enemy, and com-  
 " pelled him to take shelter by returning into port, yet the ef-  
 " fort did by no means answer my wishes. I rushed on to re-  
 " attack the enemy; and why I did not accomplish my de-  
 " sign will be seen in the evidence which I shall produce."

When the admiral's witnesses were examined, it appeared, that if he had waited for forming the line of battle, and had not immediately taken advantage of a change of wind to close with the enemy, there could have been no engagement on the 27th of July. It was proved, that, having passed the French fleet, he wore ship in order to renew the engagement as soon as it was proper; as he could not have done it sooner, had the state of his own ship admitted of it, without throwing the ships astern into the greatest confusion. The English fleet at no time exhibited any signs of flying from the enemy; when the French after the engagement edged away, and made for some of our disabled ships, it was necessary to wear again, in order to prevent those ships from falling into their hands. The three French ships which were seen on the morning of the 28th of July, could not have been pursued with the smallest prospect of success \*. Those facts, which entirely destroyed the charge against admiral Keppel, were established by the witnesses on both sides. The evidence brought by the admiral, and particularly the testimony of admiral Campbell, Sir John Lindsay, and captain Jarvis, proved, that the reason why the British fleet did not re-attack the French, was the disobedience of Sir Hugh Palliser, vice-admiral of the blue, who disregarded the admiral's signal for forming the line, which continued flying from three o'clock in the afternoon till the evening. The court, having heard the prosecutor's evidence, and the prisoner's defence, unanimously proceeded to give sentence on the 11th of February in the following terms: " That it is their opinion the  
 " charge against admiral Keppel is malicious and ill-found-  
 " ed, it having appeared, that the said admiral, so far from

\* See admiral Keppel's defence at large in the Appendix, No. XIX.

" having

“ having by misconduct and neglect of duty, on the days there- A. D.  
 “ in alluded to, lost an opportunity of rendering essential ser- 1779.  
 “ vice to the state, and thereby tarnished the honour of the  
 “ British navy, behaved as became a judicious, brave, and ex-  
 “ perienced officer.” The president then delivered him his  
 sword, congratulating him on its being restored with so much  
 honour, and hoping ere long he would be called forth by his  
 sovereign to draw it again in the service of his country\*.

Thus ended this celebrated trial, from which the public were  
 led to form a very different opinion of the action of the 27th  
 of July, from that which naturally presented itself on reading  
 the admiral's public letter to the commissioners of the marine  
 department. This letter, though it contained nothing directly  
 in opposition to truth, (unless the general panegyric bestowed on  
 the spirited conduct of Sir Robert Harland, Sir Hugh Palliser,  
 and the captains of the fleet, be supposed to imply an acquittal  
 of every individual from the crime of disobedience), yet, by  
 concealing part of the truth, tended to mislead the judgment  
 of the public, and to give them both an inadequate and erro-  
 neous idea of the action. It seemed from the letter †, that the  
 admiral could have attacked the French fleet a second time that  
 afternoon while they were forming the line of battle; but it  
 appeared from the evidence, that this could not have been done,  
 nor the engagement renewed at any time that day, without  
 giving an evident advantage to the enemy, as Sir Hugh Palli-  
 ser's not coming into the admiral's wake agreeably to signal,  
 left the British fleet throughout the whole afternoon greatly in-  
 ferior to that of France.

When the voice of party spirit shall be heard no more, the im-  
 partial voice of history will ask admiral Keppel, why he did not  
 make the particular signal for each ship in the blue division se-  
 parately to come into his wake, when he saw Sir Hugh Palliser  
 refusing to obey his signal? By this means the engagement

\* A few days after admiral Keppel's acquittal both houses of parliament  
 agreed unanimously in a vote of thanks for his gallant behaviour on the 27th of Ju-  
 ly. That of the lords was sent by the lord chancellor, and that of the commons  
 delivered to the admiral in his place by the speaker. The city of London and West  
 India merchants followed this example.

† See Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. XX.

A. D. might have been renewed, though the *Formidable* had continued in disobedience. However delicate a point it might be to criminate an officer who had behaved bravely, yet it will be allowed, that every degree of delicacy ought to have given place to the duty Mr. Keppel owed his country. The letter written after the action, inserted in the *London Gazette*, will be a sufficient warning to future commanders, not to bestow praise if they think censure is due. But if, on the one hand, admiral Keppel was blameable in some particulars, Sir Hugh Palliser seems to have been culpable on the other. If the *Formidable* was so much crippled as was represented, why did not the vice-admiral shift his flag on board some other ship of his division? This, it might have been expected, would have naturally occurred to so brave a man as Sir Hugh Palliser. It is to be hoped, however, that when this officer is brought to a trial\*, he will be able to explain his conduct; and that his not doing what he was ordered to do will appear to have arisen from some unknown circumstances, inferring at most an error in judgment, without any malignant purpose against his commander, or intention of tarnishing the naval honour of this kingdom†.

\* Sir Hugh Palliser, about a fortnight after the trial, resigned his employments of lieutenant-general of the marines, one of the lords of the admiralty, and governor of Scarborough-castle; he also vacated his seat in parliament, and retains nothing but his rank as vice admiral of the blue. Sir Hugh was tried by a court-martial in April 1779, by orders from the board of admiralty, and acquitted.—Next year he was, on the death of Sir Charles Hardy, promoted to the government of Greenwich Hospital.

† The reduction of the French island of St. Lucia in the West Indies took place in the month of December, 1778; no advice was received in England of this event till March following, which was too late for its being inserted in this work. This omission is now supplied in the Appendix, (N<sup>o</sup>. XXII.) by an account of that important event, as transmitted to the admiralty by the honourable rear admiral Barrington, who had the honour of commanding his majesty's ships on that expedition.

# A P P E N D I X.

## No. I. (P. 17.)

**SAILING and FIGHTING INSTRUCTIONS** given to the Fleet on their sailing from Jamaica, by Edward Vernon, Esq; Vice-Admiral of the Blue, and Commander in Chief of all his Majesty's ships and vessels in the West Indies.

### LINE OF BATTLE.

**T**HE *Princess Amelia* to lead with the starboard, and the *Suffolk* with the larboard tacks on board. But if I shall find it necessary, from the different motions of the enemy, to change our order of battle, to have those, who are now appointed to lead on the starboard tack, to continue to lead the fleet on the larboard tack on our going about; or those now to lead on the larboard tack, on the contrary to do the same, as the exigency of the service may require; I will, with my signal for tacking, hoist a Dutch jack on the flag-staff, under the Union-flag, the usual signal for tacking, when they are to continue to lead the fleet on their respective tacks accordingly.

*Rear-Admiral of the Blue, Sir CHALONER OGLE.*

<i>Frigates.</i>	<i>Ships of the Line.</i>	<i>Commanders.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
Experiment.	Princess Amelia,	Capt. Hemington,	80
Sheerness.	Windfor,	Berkley,	60
Vesuvius, fire-ship.	York,	Coates,	60
Terrible, bomb.	Norfolk,	Graves,	80
Phaeton.	Russel, (the admiral,)	Norris,	80
Goodly.	Shrewsbury,	Townsend,	80
	Rippon,	Jolley,	60
	Litchfield,	Cleveland,	50
	Jersey,	Lawrence,	60
	Tilbury,	Long,	60
		<i>Vice-</i>	

*Vice-Admiral of the Blue, VERNON.*

<i>Frigates.</i>	<i>Ships of the Line.</i>	<i>Commanders.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
Squirrel.	Orford,	Capt. L. Aug. Fitzroy,	70
Shoreham.	Princess Louisa,	Stapleton,	60
Eleanor.	Augusta,	Dennison,	60
Seahorse.	Worcester,	Perry Mayne,	60
Stromboli.	Chichester,	Robt. Trevor,	80
Success.	Pr. Caroline, (admiral),	Watson,	80
Vulcan.	Torbay,	Gascoigne,	80
Cumberland.	Strafford,	Thos. Trevor,	60
Alderney Bomb.	Weymouth,	Knowles,	60
Pompey.	Deptford,	Mostyn,	60
Brig Tender.	Burford,	Griffin,	70

*Commodore LESTOCK's Division.*

	Defiance,	Jno. Trevor,	60
	Dunkirk,	Cooper,	60
Astrea.	Lyon,	Cotterel,	60
Wolf Sloop.	Prince Frederick,	L. A. Beauclerc,	70
Ætna.	Boyne, (commodore),	Colby,	80
Firebrand.	Hampton Court,	Dent,	70
Virgin Queen.	Falmouth,	Douglas,	50
	Montague,	Chambers,	60
	Suffolk,	Davers,	70

## SIGNALS.

When the admiral would speak with the captain of any ship under-mentioned, he will raise a pendant, as against the ship's name, and of the colour set above it; if a lieutenant, the same signal with a west of the ensign; and if a boat without an officer, the west will be hoisted but half-staff up.

*Memorandum* : When I would have any of the fire-ships, bombs, or tenders, taken in tow, at the same time that I make the signal for the ship that is to tow, and for the ship that is to be towed, I will hoist up a flag, blue and white, at the flag-staff of the main top-mast head.

*Rd.*

<i>Red.</i>	<i>White.</i>	<i>Blue.</i>	<i>Yellow.</i>		
Boyne	Pris. Amelia	Chichester	Terrible	Main	} Top-mast head.
Norfolk	Suffolk	Shrewsbury	Eleanor	Fore	
Worcester	Lyon	Defiance	Ætna	Mizen	
Tilbury	Squirrel	Torbay	Firebrand	Starb.	} Main topsail yard arm.
Windfor	Pris. Louisa	Falmouth	Vesuvius	Larb.	
Burford	Pr. Frederick	Strafford	Phaeton	Starb.	} Fore topsail yard arm.
Montague	Oxford	Weymouth	Strombolo	Larb.	
Shoreham	Augusta	Pris. Caroline	Success	Starb.	} Mizzen topsail yard arm.
Hampt <sup>a</sup> Court	Dunkirk	Jersey	Vulcan	Larb.	
Litchfield	Lodl. Castle	Deptford	Cumberland	Starb.	} Main yard- arm.
Experiment	Rippon	York	Alderney	Larb.	
Sea Horse	Sheerness	Russel	Brig. Tender	Starb.	} Fore yard- arm.
Astrea	Wolf		Virgin Queen	Larb.	
			Pompey	Starb.	} Cross jack yard arm.
			Goodly	Larb.	

When the ships are in line of battle, the frigates, fire-ships, bombs and tenders are to keep on the opposite side of the enemy. When I make the signal, in line of battle, for the van of the fleet to tack first, in order to gain the windward of the enemy then each ship is to tack in the headmost ship's wake, for losing no ground. For all other signals they are referred to the general printed sailing and fighting instructions, and such other additional instructions as you receive from me.

VERNON.

## No. II. (P. 37.)

SHIPS in COMMISSION in the year 1741.

## FIRST RATES, 100 guns.

Royal George,	Captain Allen.
Royal Sovereign,	Faulkener.
Victory,	Falkland.

## SECOND RATES, 90 guns.

Duke,	Commodore Brown.
St. George,	Captain Dilkes.
Marlborough,	Clinton.
Neptune,	Whorwood.
Sandwich,	Mead.

## THIRD RATES, 80 guns.

Princess Amelia,	Captain Hemmington.
Boyne,	Lestock.
Princess Caroline,	Griffin.
Chichester,	Trevor.
Cumberland,	Steuart.
Lancaster,	Coyley.
Norfolk,	Graves.
Ruffel,	Norris.
Shrewsbury,	Townsend.
Somerset,	Barnesley.
Torbay,	Gascoigne.

## 70 guns.

Burford,	Captain Watfon.
Buckingham,	Young.
Prince Frederick,	Lord A. Beauclerk.
Grafton,	Rycault.
Elizabeth,	Durele.
Effex,	Robinson.
Hampton Court,	Dent.
Ipswich,	Martin.
Kent,	Mitchel.

Lentz,



Lenox,	Commodore Mayne
Nassau,	Captain Medley.
Prince of Orange,	Osborne.
Norwich,	Herbert.
Orford,	Lord Augustus Fitzroy.
Suffolk,	Davies.

## FOURTH RATES, 60 guns.

Augusta,	Captain Dennison.
Centurion,	Anson.
Dragon,	Barnard.
Deptford,	Mostyn.
Dunkirk,	Cooper.
Jersey,	Laurence.
Kingston,	Richard Norris.
Princess Louisa,	Stapleton.
Lion,	Cotterel.
Montague,	Chambers.
Pembroke,	Lee.
Plymouth,	Sir R. Butler.
Rupert,	Ambrose.
Rippon,	Jolly.
Sunderland,	Byng.
Strafford,	Trevor.
Superb,	Hervey.
Tilbury,	Long.
Windfor,	Berkeley.
Warwick,	Toller.
Worcester,	P. Mayne.
York,	Cotes.

## 50 guns.

Assistance,	Captain Cleland.
St. Albans,	Vincent.
Argyle,	Lingen.
Bristol,	Young.
Chatham,	Strange.
Colchester,	Sir W. Hewit.
Chester,	Slaughter.

Falkland,	Oliphant.
Falmouth,	Douglas.
Gloucester,	Michel.
Guernsey,	John Forbes.
Litchfield,	Knowles.
Newcastle,	Fox.
Orford,	Ruffel.
Portland,	Hawes.
Panther,	Cotes.
Ruby,	Frogmore.
Romney,	Smith.
Rochester,	Allen.
Salisbury,	P. Osborne.
Severn,	Legge.
Tiger,	Forbes.
Winchester,	Lloyd.

## FIFTH RATES, 40 guns.

Anglesea,	Captain Reddish.
Dover,	Burris.
Eltham,	Smith.
Hector,	Sir Y. Peyton.
Lark,	Lord G. Graham.
Liverpool,	Lord Banff.
Mary Galley,	John Durell.
Pearl,	Kidd.
Roebuck,	Crawford.
South-Sea Castle,	Cuzack.
Torrington,	Knights.

## SIXTH RATES, 20 guns.

Alborough,	Captain Pocock.
Blandford,	Burris.
Biddesford,	Lord Forrester.
Bridgewater,	Pet.
Deal-Castle,	West.
Durley Galley,	T. Smith.
Dolphin,	Holbourne.
	Experiment.

Experiment,  
 Flamborough,  
 Fox,  
 Gibraltar,  
 Greyhound,  
 Garland,  
 Kennington,  
 Lowestaffe,  
 Lyme,  
 Lively,  
 Phoenix,  
 Portmahon,  
 Rose,  
 Rye,  
 Seahorse,  
 Shoreham,  
 Squirrel,  
 Sheerness,  
 Success,  
 Scarborough,  
 Tartar Pink,  
 Winchelsea,  
 Wager,  
 Royal Caroline,

Renton.  
 Pearce.  
 Masters.  
 W. Purvis.  
 Balchen.  
 Waffon.  
 Peyton.  
 Drummond.  
 Lord Mt. Bertie.  
 Swayfland.  
 Fanshawe.  
 Pawlet.  
 Frankland.  
 Lushington.  
 Limeburner.  
 Boscawen.  
 Warren.  
 R. Maynard.  
 Thompson.  
 Lisle.  
 Townshend.  
  
 Chepe.  
 Sir Charles Hardy.

Fire-ships, 16  
 Bomb sloops, 6  
 Sloops, 15

Store-ships, 3  
 Yachts, 6  
 Smacks and Tenders, 41

## No. III. (P. 48.)

BRITISH FLEET in the Mediterranean, in the year 1743.

## VAN. Rear-admiral ROWLEY.

<i>Frigates, &amp;c.</i>	<i>Ships of the Line.</i>	<i>Commanders.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
	Stirling Castle,	Cap <sup>t</sup> Cooper,	70
	Warwick,	West,	60
Oxford.	Nassau,	Lloyd,	70
Faversham.	Cambridge,	Drummond,	80
Winchelsea.	Barfleur (admiral),	De Langle,	90
	Princess Caroline,	Osborne,	80
	Berwick,	Hawke,	70
	Chichester,	Dilkes,	80
	Kingston,	Lovet,	60

## CENTER. Admiral MATHEWS.

	Dragon,	Cap <sup>t</sup> Watfon,	60
	Bedford,	Townsend,	70
Guernsey.	Princessa,	Pit,	74
Chatham.	Norfolk,	Forbes,	80
Salisbury.	Namure (admiral),	Ruffel,	90
Dursley Galley.	Marlborough,	Cornwall,	90
Ann Galley.	Dorsetshire,	Burriſh,	80
	Essex,	Norris,	70
	Rupert,	Ambrose,	60
	Royal Oak,	Williams,	70

## REAR. Vice-admiral LESTOCK.

	Dunkirk,	Cap <sup>t</sup> Purvis,	60
	Somerset,	Slaughter,	80
Nonſuch.	Torbay,	Gascoigne,	70
Romney.	Neptune (admiral),	Stepney,	90
Diamond.	Ruffel,	Long,	80
Mercury fire-ſhip.	Buckingham,	Towrey,	70
	Boyne,	Frogmore,	80
	Elifabeth,	Lingen,	70
	Revenge,	Berkeley,	70

COM.

## COMBINED FLEET.

## VAN. FRENCH.

*Commodore GABARET.*

<i>Frigatts.</i>	<i>Ships of the Line.</i>	<i>Commanders.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
	Le Diamant,	Monf. de Massie,	50
	Le Toulouse,	d'Astour,	60
	Le Serieux,	de Chylus,	64
L'Attalante.	L'Eole,	de Gravier,	64
Le Flore.	L'Esperance, (comm <sup>re</sup> ),	Gabaret,	74
	Le St. Esprit,	de Piofin,	74
	Le Borcè,	de Marquise,	64
	L'Aguilon,	de Vandreuil,	50

## CENTER. FRENCH.

*Admiral DE COURT.*

	Le Tigre,	Monf. de Saurin,	56
	Le Trident,	de Caylus,	64
	Le Duc d'Orleans,	d'Orvey,	74
Le Zephire.	Le Terrible, (adm <sup>l</sup> ),	de Court,	74
Le Volga.	Le Ferme,	de Sergue,	74
	Le Solide,	de Chateaucneuf,	64
	Le Leopard,	de Galifet,	64
	L'Alcion,	de Lauce,	56

## REAR. SPANISH.

*Admiral NAVARRO.*

	Le Superbe,	Juan Valdez,	60
	Le Poder,	Rodriguez,	60
	Le S. Fernando,	de la Viga,	60
Two Frigates.	Le Constant,	de Tortuga,	79
	L'Isabella,	Peclathoui,	70
	Le R. Infanta,	Adm <sup>l</sup> Navarro,	114
	Le Hercule,	Cosm. d'Alvarez,	70
	L'Amerique,	Fran. Patrouchi,	70
	Le Neptune,	Hen. Olivarez,	60
	L'Orient,	Joach. de Villena,	60
	Le Brillant,	Blaise de la Barrera,	60
	Le Retiro,	Juan Souriane,	54

No.

## No. IV. (P. 77.)

*Admiral BYNG's Instructions from the Lords of the Admiralty.*

WHEREAS the King's pleasure has been signified to us by Mr. Fox, one of his majesty's principal secretaries of state, that, upon consideration of the several advices which have been received relating to the supposed intention of the French to attack the island of Minorca, a squadron of ten ships of the line do forthwith sail for the Mediterranean, under your command: and whereas we have appointed the ships named in the margin for this service, you are hereby required and directed immediately to put to sea with such of them as are ready, (leaving orders for the rest to follow you as soon as possible), and proceed with the utmost expedition to Gibraltar. Upon your arrival there, you are to inquire whether any French squadron is come through the Streights; and if there is, to inform yourself, as well as possible, of their number and force, and if any of them were transports. And as it is probable they may be destined for North America, and as his majesty's ships, named in the margin, are either at, or going to Halifax, and are to cruize off Louisbourg and the mouth of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, you are immediately to take the soldiers out of so many ships of your squadron, as, together with the ships at, and going to Halifax, will make a force superior to the French squadron, (replacing them with landmen or ordinary seamen from your other ships), and then detach them under the command of rear-admiral West, directing him to make the best of his way off Louisbourg; and taking the afore-mentioned ships, which he may expect to find there, under his command, to cruize off the said place, and the entrance of the Gulf of St. Lawrence; and use his utmost endeavours to intercept and seize the aforesaid French ships, or any other ships belonging to the French, that may be bound to, or returning from that part of North America.

If, upon your arrival at Gibraltar, you shall not gain intelligence of a French squadron having passed the Streights; you are then to go on without a moment's loss of time to Minorca:

or,

or, if in consequence of such intelligence you shall detach rear-admiral West, as before directed, you are to use equal expedition in repairing thither with the ships which shall remain with you; and if you find any attack made upon that island by the French, you are to use all possible means in your power for its relief. If you find no such attack made, you are to proceed off Toulon, and station your squadron in the best manner you shall be able for preventing any ship's getting out of that port; or for intercepting and seizing any that may get out; and you are to exert the utmost vigilance therein, and in protecting Minorca and Gibraltar from any hostile attempts.

You are also to be vigilant for protecting the trade of his majesty's subjects from being molested, either by the French or by cruizers from Morocco, or any other of the Barbary states; and for that purpose to appoint proper convoys and cruizers.

You are likewise to be as attentive as possible to the intercepting and seizing as well ships of war and privateers as merchant ships belonging to the French, wherever they may be met with, within the limits of your command. But, in pursuance of the King's order in council, you are not to suffer any of the ships of your squadron to take any French vessels out of any port belonging to the Ottoman empire, upon any pretence; nor to molest, detain, or imprison, the persons of any of the subjects of the Ottoman empire; and also, not to seize and detain any French ship or vessel whatsoever, which they shall meet with in the Levant seas, bound from one port to another in those seas, or to or from any ports of Egypt, having any effects of Turks on board.

Upon your arrival in the Mediterranean, you are to take under your command his majesty's ships and vessels named in the margin, which are at present there.

If any French ship of war should sail from Toulon and escape your squadron, and proceed out of the Mediterranean, you are forthwith to send, or repair yourself to England with a proportionable part of the ships under your command; observing that you are never to keep more ships in the Mediterranean than shall be necessary for executing the service recommended to you.

To enable you to perform the above-mentioned services, you are to take care to keep the ships and vessels under your com-

mand in constant good condition, and to have them cleaned as often as shall be requisite for that purpose.

March 30, (Signed) *Anson, Villiers, Rowley, Boscawen, Bateman, Edgecombe, and J. Cleland.*  
1756.

### No. V. (P. 87.)

*State of the Royal Navy of Great Britain at the declaration of war against France, in the year 1756.*

<i>First rates, 100 guns.</i>		Norfolk,	Monmouth,
Royal Ann,	Russel.		Nassau,
Britannia,			Northumberland,
Royal George,	74 guns.		Royal Oak,
Royal Sovereign,	Culloden,		Orford,
Royal William.	Invincible,		Princessa,
	Monarque,		Revenge,
<i>Second rates, 90 guns.</i>	Terrible,		Stirling Castle,
Blenheim,	Torbay,		Suffolk,
Duke,	Fougueux		Somerset,
St. George			Vanguard,
Namur,	70 guns.		Yarmouth,
Prince,	Bedford,		Swiftsure,
Ramillies,	Berwick,		Magnanime,
Princess Royal,	Buckingham,		
Union	Burford,		66 guns.
	Captain,		
<i>Third rates, 80 guns.</i>	Chichester,		Princess Amelia,
Barfleur,	Dorsetshire,		Cumberland,
Boyne,	Edinburgh,		Devonshire,
Princess Caroline,	Elisabeth,		Lancaster.
Cambridge,	Essex,		
Cornwall,	Prince Frederick,		64 guns.
Prince George,	Grafton,		
Marlborough,	Hampton-Court,		Ipswich,
Neptune,	Kent,		Intrepid,
Newark,	Lenox,		Trident.

*Fourth*



<i>Fourth rates, 60 guns.</i>	<i>Alliance,</i>
St. Alban's,	Antelope,
Anson,	Bristol,
Augusta,	Centurion,
Canterbury,	Chatham,
Defiance,	Colchester,
Dragon,	Chester,
Dreadnought,	Deptford,
Dunkirk,	Falkland,
Eagle,	Falmouth,
Exeter,	Gloucester,
Greenwich,	Guernsey,
Jersey,	Hampshire,
Kingston,	Harwich,
Lion,	Isis,
Medway,	Litchfield,
Princess Louisa,	Leopard,
Princess Mary,	Newcastle,
Prince of Orange,	Nonfuch,
Montague,	Norwich,
Nottingham,	Oxford,
Pembroke,	Portland,
Plymouth,	Preston,
Rupert,	Panther,
Rippon,	Ruby,
Strafford,	Rochester,
Sunderland,	Salisbury,
Superbe,	Severn,
Tilbury,	Sutherland,
Tiger,	Tavistock,
Vigilant,	Winchester.
Windfor,	
Weymouth,	<i>Fifth rates,</i>
Worcester,	Adventure,
York.	America,

Crown,  
Diamond,  
Dover,  
Eltham,  
Prince Edward,  
Expedition,  
Enterprize,  
Gosport,  
Glory,  
Prince Henry,  
Humber,  
Hastings,  
Hector,  
Jafon,  
Kinfaie,  
Launceston,  
Ludlow Castle,  
Lark,  
Liverpool,  
Looe,  
Lynn,  
Mary Galley,  
Pearl,  
Penzance,  
Pool,  
Rainbow,  
Roebuck,  
Romney,  
Saphire,  
South-Sea Castle,  
Thetis,  
Torrington,  
Woolwich.

**Sixth rates, 24 and  
20 guns.  
Amazon,  
Alderney,  
Aldborough,**

Aldborough,	Sea-Horse,	Jamaica,
Arundel,	Shorcham,	King's Fisher,
Bellona,	Squirrel,	Otter,
Biddiford,	Seaford,	Peggy,
Boston,	Sheerness,	Peregrine,
Bridgewater,	Syren,	Porcupine,
Blandford,	Sphinx,	Ranger,
Centaur,	Surprise,	Raven,
Deal Castle,	Success,	Saltash,
Durley Galley,	Scarborough,	Savage,
Dolphin,	Solebay,	Scorpion,
Experiment,	Tartar,	Shark,
Flamborough,	Triton,	Speedwell,
Fowey,	Unicorn,	Swallow,
Fox,	Winchester,	Swan,
Gibraltar,	Wager,	Swift,
Greyhound,	Royal Caroline,	Trial,
Garland,		Viper,
Glasgow,	<i>Bombs.</i>	Vulture,
Grand Turk,	Firedrake,	Wasp,
Hind,	Furnace,	Weazle,
Inverness,	Granado.	Wolf.
Kennington,		
Leostoffe,	<i>Sloops.</i>	<i>Yachts.</i>
Lively,	Albany,	Catherine,
Lys,	Badger,	Charlotte,
Lyme,	Baltimore,	Dorset,
Margate,	Cruizer,	Fubbs,
Mercury,	Dispatch,	Mary,
Mermaid,	Falcon,	William and Mary,
Nightingale,	Ferret,	Bolton,
Phoenix,	Fly,	Chatham,
Port-Mahon,	Fortune,	Drake,
Queenborough,	Grampus,	Portsmouth,
Renown,	Happy,	Queenborough;
Ranger,	Hazard,	
Rose,	Hornet,	Also several fire-ships,
Rye,	Hound,	hoys, &c.

## No. VI. (P. 87.)

*State of the Navy of France at the declaration of war against Great Britain, in the year 1756.*

<i>Perrier de Salvvert's</i>		<i>Guns.</i>		<i>Guns.</i>	
<i>Squadron.</i>					
	<i>Guns.</i>	Fier,	50	Licorne,	30
		Hipopotame,	50	Sauvage,	30
Le Courageux,	74	Junon,	46	Concord,	30
Prothée,	64	Rose,	30	Amarante,	12
Amphion,	50	Pleide,	26		
Aigle,	50	La Gracieuse,	24	<i>At Brest and Rochfort.</i>	
Fleur de Lys,	30	Nymphe,	24	Le Formidable,	80
Emeraude,	28	Topaze,	24	Entreprenant,	74

*Ceasars's Squadron.*

<i>At Brest.</i>				<i>On a cruize.</i>	
Le Comet,	30	Le Soleil,	80	La Thetis,	24
Amethyste,	30	Bourgogne,	80	Mutine,	24
Blonde,	30	Tonnant,	80	Pomone,	24
Brune,	30	Superbe,	74	Cumberland,	24
Zephyr,	30	Defenseur,	74	Galathè,	24
Hermione,	26	Dauphin,	74	Heroine,	24
Valeur,	26	Juste,	70	Anemone,	12
Fidele,	26	Hardi,	66		
Friponne,	26	Bienfaïtant,	64		
		Inflexible,	64	<i>At Cape Breton and</i>	
		Eveille,	64	<i>Martinico.</i>	

<i>Galiffoniere's fleet.</i>					
Le Foudroyant,	80	Capricieux,	64	Le Prudent,	74
Temeraire,	74	Arc-en-Ciel,	50	Aquilon,	60
Couronne,	74	Diana,	50	Attalante,	34
Redoubtable,	74			Palmier,	74
Guerrier,	74	<i>For carrying troops</i>		Bizarre,	64
Content,	64	<i>to America under</i>		Opiniatre,	64
Triton,	64	<i>M. Beaslier.</i>		Active,	64
Sage,	64	Le Hero,	74	St. Michel,	64
Lion,	64	Illustre,	64	Alcion,	54
Orphée,	64	Leopard,	60	Apollo,	50
		Sirene,	30		

As

<i>At Toulon.</i>		<i>Guns.</i>		<i>Guns.</i>	
	<i>Guns.</i>	Florissant,	74	Celebre,	64
Le Hector,	74	Northumberland,	68	Robuste,	64
Vaillant,	64	Dragon,	74	Solitaire,	64
Achille,	64	<i>In different docks.</i>		Terrible,	64
Hercule,	64	L'Ocean,	80	Aigrette,	30
Oriflamme,	50	Centaure,	76	Vestale,	30
<i>Carrening.</i>		Diademe,	74	Minerva,	24
L'Intrepide,	74	Zodiaque,	74	Oiseau,	24
Conquerant,	74	Monature,	74	Protecteur,	74
Magnifique,	74	Souverain,	74	Fantaisie,	64
Sceptre,	74	Glorieux,	74	Modeste,	60
Algonceux,	74	Not yet named,	74	Defiance,	30
Floride,	74	Bellicieux,	64	Surprise,	30
				Warwick,	50

## No. VII. (P. 101.)

*Secret Instructions to Sir John Mordaunt in the year 1757.*

GEORGE, R.

1<sup>st</sup>, You shall immediately, upon the receipt of these instructions, repair to the Isle of Wight, where we have appointed ships to convey you, and the forces under your command, to the coast of France; and, so soon as the said forces shall be embarked, you shall accordingly proceed, without loss of time, under convoy of a squadron of our ships of war, to be commanded by our trusty and well-beloved Sir Edward Hawke, knight of the Bath, admiral of the blue squadron of our fleet; whom we have appointed commander in chief of our ships to be employed in this expedition; the said admiral, or the commander in chief of our said ships for the time being, being instructed to co-operate with you, and be aiding and assisting in all such enterprises, as; by these our instructions, you shall be directed to undertake for our service.

2<sup>d</sup>, Whereas we have determined, with the blessing of God, to prosecute the just war in which we are engaged against the French king, with the utmost vigour; and it being highly expedient,

dient, and of urgent necessity, to make some expedition, that may cause a diversion, and engage the enemy to employ in their own defence, a considerable part of their forces, destined to invade and oppress the liberty of the empire, and to subvert the independency of Europe; and if possible to make some effectual impression on the enemy, which, by disturbing and shaking the credit of their public loans, impairing the strength and resources of their navy, as well as disconcerting, and in part frustrating their dangerous and extensive operations of war, may reflect lustre on our arms, and add life and strength to the common cause; and whereas we are persuaded, that nothing, in the present situation of affairs, can so speedily and effectually annoy and distress France, as a successful enterprize against Rochfort; our will and pleasure is, that you do attempt, as far as it shall be found practicable, a descent, with the forces under your command, on the French coast, at or near Rochfort, in order to attack, if practicable, and by a vigorous impression force that place; and to burn and destroy, to the utmost of your power, all docks, magazines, arsenals, and shipping, that shall be found there, and exert such other efforts, as you shall judge most proper for annoying the enemy.

3<sup>d</sup>, After the attempt on Rochfort shall either have succeeded or failed; and in case the circumstances of our forces and fleet shall, with prospect of success, still admit of further operations, you are next to consider Port L'Orient and Bourdeaux, as the most important objects of our arms, on the coast of France; and our will and pleasure is, that you do proceed successively to an attempt on both, or either of those places, as shall be judged practicable; or on any other place that shall be thought most advisable, from Bourdeaux homeward to Havre, in order to carry and spread, with as much rapidity as may be, a warm alarm along the maritime provinces of France.

4<sup>th</sup>, In case, by the blessing of God upon our arms, you shall make yourself master of any place on the coast of France, our will and pleasure is, that you do not keep possession thereof; but that, after demolishing and destroying, as far as may be, all works, defences, magazines, arsenals, shipping, and naval stores, you do proceed, successively, on the ulterior  
part

part of this expedition, according as any of them shall be judged advisable, and may be performed with such time as shall be consistent with your return with the troops under your command, so as to be in England at, or about, or as near as may be, the latter end of September, unless the circumstances of our forces and fleet shall necessarily require their return sooner; and you are to land the troops at Portsmouth, or such other of our ports as the exigency of the case may suggest.

5th, Whereas it is necessary, that, upon certain occasions, you should have the assistance of a council of war, we have thought fit to appoint such a council, which shall consist of four of our principal land-officers, and of an equal number of our principal sea-commanders, including the commanders in chief of our land and sea forces, (except in cases happening at land, relating to the carrying on any military operations, to be performed by our land forces only, in which cases you may call a council of war, consisting of such officers of our land forces as you shall think proper,) and all such land and sea officers, in the several cases before mentioned, are hereby respectively directed, from time to time, to be aiding and assisting with their advice, so often as they shall be called together by you, or by the commander in chief of our Squadron, for that purpose; and in all such councils of war, when assembled, the majority of voices shall determine the resolutions thereof; and, in case the voices shall happen to be equal, the president shall have the casting vote.

6th, And whereas the success of this expedition will very much depend upon an entire good understanding between our land and sea officers, we do hereby strictly enjoin and require you, on your part, to maintain and cultivate such good understanding and agreement; and to order that the soldiers under your command should man the ships when there shall be occasion for them, and when they can be spared from the land service; as the commander in chief of our Squadron is instructed, on his part, to entertain and cultivate the same good understanding and agreement; and to order the sailors and marines, and also the soldiers serving as a part of the complements of our ships, to assist our land forces, if judged expedient, by taking

king post on shore, manning batteries, covering the boats, securing the safe re-embarkation of the troops, and such other service as may be consistent with the safety of our fleet. And in order to establish the strictest union that may be between you and the commander in chief of our ships, you are hereby required to communicate these instructions to him, and he will be directed to communicate those he shall receive to you.

7th, You shall, from time to time, and as you shall have opportunity, send constant accounts of your proceedings in the execution of these our instructions, to one of our principal secretaries of state, from whom you will receive such further orders and directions as we may think proper to give you.

G. R.

### No. VIII. (P. 175.)

*Translation of an intercepted letter from General Lally to Mr. Raymond, French resident at Pullicat, dated Pondicherry, the 2d January, 1761.*

MR. RAYMOND,

THE English squadron is no more, Sir; out of the twelve ships they had in our road, seven are lost, crews and all; the four others dismasted; and it appears that there is no more than one frigate that has escaped; therefore do not lose an instant to send us chelings upon chelings, loaded with rice: the Dutch have nothing to fear now, besides (according to the law of nations) they are only to send us no provisions themselves, and we are no more blocked up by sea. The saving of Pondicherry hath been in your power once already; if you miss the present opportunity, it will be entirely your fault. Do not forget also some small chelings; offer great rewards. I expect seventeen thousand Marattoes within these four days. In short, risk all, attempt all, force all, and send us some rice, should it be but half a garce at a time.

(Signed) LALLY.

## No. IX. (P. 184.)

*Capitulation for the citadel of Belleisle, made June 7, 1761.*

*Preliminary article.* The Chevalier de St. Croix, brigadier in the king's army, and commandant of the citadel of Belleisle, proposes that the place shall surrender on the 12th of June, in case no succours arrive before that time; and that, in the mean while, no works shall be carried on on either side, nor any act of hostility, nor any communication between the English besieging and the French besieged.—“Refused.”

I. The entire garrison shall march through the breach with the honours of war, drums beating, colours flying, lighted matches, and three pieces of cannon, with twelve rounds each. Each soldier shall have fifteen rounds in his cartouch-box. All the officers, serjeants, soldiers, and inhabitants, are to carry off their baggage: the women to go with their husbands.—“Granted. In favour of the gallant defence which the citadel has made, under the orders of the Chevalier de St. Croix.”

II. Two covered waggons shall be provided, and the effects which they carry shall be deposited in two covered boats, which are not to be visited.—“The covered waggons are refused; but care shall be taken to transport all the baggage to the continent by the shortest way.”

III. Vessels shall be furnished for carrying the French troops by the shortest way into the nearest ports of France, by the first fair wind.—“Granted.”

IV. The French troops that are to embark are to be victualled in the same proportion with the troops of his Britannic majesty; and the same proportion of tunnage is to be allowed to the officers and soldiers which the English troops have.—“Granted.”

V. When the troops shall be embarked, a vessel is to be furnished for the Chevalier de St. Croix, brigadier in the king's army, to M. de la Ville, the king's lieutenant, to M. de la Garique, colonel of foot, with brevet of commandant in the absence of the Chevalier de St. Croix, and to the field-officers, including



including those of the artillery and engineers; as also for the three pieces of cannon, as well as for the soldiers of the Cour-Royale, to be transported to Nantz, with their wives, servants, and the baggage which they have in the citadel, which is not to be visited. They are to be victualled in the same proportion with the English officers of the same rank.—“Care shall be  
 “taken that all those who are mentioned in this article shall be  
 “transported, without loss of time, to Nantz, with their baggage and effects, as well as the three pieces of cannon granted  
 “by the first article.”

VI. After the expiration of the term mentioned in the first article, a gate of the citadel shall be delivered up to the troops of his Britannic majesty, at which there shall be kept a French guard of equal number, until the king's troops shall march out to embark. Those guards shall be ordered to permit no English soldier to enter, nor no French soldier to go out.—“A gate  
 “shall be delivered to the troops of his Britannic majesty the  
 “moment the capitulation is signed; and an equal number of  
 “French troops shall occupy the same gate.”

VII. A vessel shall be furnished to the commissaries of war, and to the treasurer, in which they may carry their baggage, with their secretaries, clerks, and servants, without being molested or visited. They shall be conducted, as well as the other troops, to the nearest port of France.—“Granted.”

VIII. Mess. de Taille, captain-general of the garde coste, Lamp, major, two lieutenants of cannoneers of the garde coste, and ninety bombardiers, cannoneers, serjeants, and fusileers, gardes costes of Belleisle, paid by the king, shall have it in their choice to remain in the island, as well as all the other inhabitants, without being molested either as to their persons or goods. And if they have a mind to sell their goods, furniture, boats, nets, and, in general, any effects which belong to them, within six months, and to pass over to the continent, they shall not be hindered; but, on the contrary, they shall have proper assistance and the necessary passports.—“They  
 “shall remain in the island under protection of the king of  
 “Great Britain, as the other inhabitants; or shall be transported to the continent, if they please, with the garrison.”

IX. M. Sarignon, clerk of the treasury of the French troops, the armourer, the Bourgeois cannoneers, the storekeepers, and all the workmen belonging to the engineers, may remain at Belleisle with their families, or go to the continent with the same privileges as above mentioned.—“ Granted. To remain in the island, upon the same footing with the other inhabitants, or to be transported with the garrison to the continent, as they shall think proper.”

X. The Roman Catholic religion shall be exercised in the island with the same freedom as under a French government. The churches shall be preserved, and the rectors and other priests continued; and, in case of death, they shall be replaced by the bishop of Vannes. They shall be maintained in their functions, privileges, immunities, and revenues.—“ All the inhabitants, without distinction, shall enjoy the free exercise of their religion. The other part of this article must necessarily depend on the pleasure of his Britannic majesty.”

XI. The officers and soldiers, who are in the hospitals of the town and citadel, shall be treated in the same manner as the garrison, and, after their recovery, they shall be furnished with vessels to carry them to France. In the mean while they shall be supplied with subsistence and remedies till their departure, according to the state which the comptroller and surgeons shall give in.—“ Granted.”

XII. After the term mentioned in the preliminary article is expired, orders shall be given that the commissaries of artillery, engineers, and provisions, shall make an inventory of what shall be found in the king's magazines, out of which bread, wine, and meat shall be furnished to subsist the French troops to the moment of their departure.—“ They shall be furnished with necessary subsistence till their departure, on the same footing with the troops of his Britannic majesty.”

XIII. Maj.-Gen. Crawford, as well as all the English officers and soldiers who have been made prisoners since the 8th of April 1761 inclusive, shall be set at liberty after the signing of the capitulation, and shall be disengaged from their parole. The French officers of different ranks, volunteers, serjeants, and soldiers, who have been made prisoners since the 9th of April,

April, shall also be set at liberty.—“ The English officers  
“ and soldiers, prisoners of war in the citadel, are to be free  
“ the moment the capitulation is signed. The French officers  
“ and soldiers, who are prisoners of war, shall be exchanged  
“ according to the cartel of Sluys.”

All the above articles shall be executed faithfully on both  
sides, and such as may be doubtful shall be fairly interpreted.  
——“ Granted.”

After the signature hostages shall be sent on both sides, for  
the security of the articles of the capitulation.—“ Granted.”

“ All the archives, registers, public papers, and writings,  
“ which have any relation to the government of this island,  
“ shall be faithfully given up to his Britannic majesty’s commis-  
“ sary. Two days shall be allowed for the evacuation of the  
“ citadel; and the transports, necessary for the embarkation,  
“ shall be ready to receive the garrison and their effects. A  
“ French officer shall be ordered to deliver up all the warlike  
“ stores and provisions, and, in general, every thing which be-  
“ longs to his most Christian majesty, to an English commis-  
“ sary appointed for that purpose; and an officer shall be or-  
“ dered to shew us all the mines and fountains of the place.”

S. HODGSON.

A. KEPPEL.

Le Chevalier de St. CROIX.

## No. X. (P. 198.)

*A List of the Spanish Fleet as it stood at the breaking out of the war in 1762.*

<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
El Phoenix,	80	El Hercules,	68
El Rayo	80	El Principe,	68
La Rayna,	70	El Victorioso,	68
El Tigre,	70	El Terrible,	68
La Galicia,	70	El Allante,	68
El Infante,	70	Africa,	68
La Princesa,	70	El Firme,	68
El San Philippe,	70	El Aquilos,	68
El Oriente,	68	La Espana,	62
El Levia,	68	Ferdinando,	60
El Acquilon,	68	Asia,	60
El Neptuno,	68	El Septentrion,	60
El Brillante,	68	El America,	60
El Glorioso,	68	El Dragon,	60
El Guerriero,	68	La Europa,	60
El Vencedor,	68	La Castilla,	60
El Soberano,	68	El Campion,	58
El Hector,	68	El Tridente,	58
El Gallardo,	68	El Conquistador,	58
El Magnanimo,	68	El Astuto,	58
El Dichoso,	68	El Fuerte,	50
El Diligente,	68	Adventurero,	30
El Triumphante,	68	Andaluzio,	30
El Monarcho,	68	La Esmeralda,	30
El Serio,	68	La Pallas,	26
El Arrogante,	68	La Juno,	26
El Superbe,	68	La Estrea,	26
El Ponderoso,	68	La Ventura,	26
El Contento,	68	La Venus,	26

L'Industrie,

<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
L'Industrie,	26	La Flora,	20
La Liebre,	26	El Disgente,	20
La Venganza,	24	El Jafon,	20
La Vittoria,	24	La Concepcion,	20
La Hermiona,	24	El Gabilan,	20
Galgo,	22	Gilano Xebeque,	18
La Dorada,	22	El Mercurio,	18
La Peria	22	El Jupiter,	18
La Aquila,	22	El Vofante,	18
La Frecha,	22	El Cafador,	18
La Gazutta,	22	Marte,	16
El Catalan	22	Liebre,	16
El Ibecinea,	22	El Majorquin,	16

## Bomb-ketches.

El Esterope,	16	El Pieramonte,	16
El Bronje,	16	El Bolcano,	16

## Fire-ships.

El Valenciano,	El Botompago,
El Frueno,	El Bayo,

## Addition made to the Spanish navy during the war.

El Monarco,	86	La Nouva Princeffa,	84
El Elephante,	76	El Vigoroso,	74
El Gujon,	70	El St. Geronimo,	60
El Diamante,	64		

## No. XI. (P. 204.)

## PAPERS relating to the conquest of MARTINICO.

*Articles of capitulation of the citadel of Fort Royal, in the island of Martinico, the 4th of February, 1762.*

*Article I.* THE commanding officer of the citadel shall march out at the head of the garrison, composed of troops detached from the marine, the royal grenadiers, cannoneers, bombardiers and Swifs; the different detachments of the militia and freebooters, and the other volunteers, with the honours of war, and three rounds of ammunition each.—Answered, “The troops of his most Christian majesty shall be embarked and sent to France, as soon as possible, at the expence of his Britannic majesty; but the troops belonging to the island shall lay down their arms, and be prisoners of war, until the fate of Martinico is determined.”

II. That the officers and others shall preserve their effects, have time to settle their affairs, and shall take their servants along with them.—“Granted.”

III. That three days shall be granted for the evacuation of the place, at the end of which time the gate shall be given up to the troops of his Britannic majesty, whilst the garrison shall march out at nine to-morrow morning.—Answered, “The gate of the fort shall be given up to the troops of his Britannic majesty this evening at five o'clock, and the French garrison shall march out at nine to-morrow morning.”

DE LIGNERY.

(Signed)

ROBERT MONKTON.  
G. B. RODNEY.

*Capitulation*

*Capitulation demanded by the inhabitants of the island of Martinico, represented by Messrs. D' Aleſſo, knight, Signior Defrag-ny, La Pierre, captain of horſe, and Feryre, captain of infantry, furniſhed with full powers from nine quarters of the iſland.*

*Article I.* The inhabitants ſhall quit their poſts with two field-pieces, drums beating, colours flying, matches lighted, and all the honours of war.—“ The inhabitants ſhall march  
“ out of all their gariſons and poſts with their arms; upon  
“ condition that they afterwards lay them down; and that all  
“ the forts, batteries, and military implements, be delivered to  
“ perſons appointed to receive them.”

II. The inhabitants ſhall have the free exerciſe of their religion, and the prieſts, nuns and friars, ſhall be preſerved in their cures and convents.—“ Granted.”

III. The inhabitants ſhall not be obliged to take arms againſt his moſt Chriſtian majeſty, nor even againſt any other power.—  
“ They become ſubjects of his Britannic majeſty, and muſt  
“ take the oath of allegiance; but ſhall not be obliged to take  
“ arms againſt his moſt Chriſtian majeſty, until a peace may  
“ determine the fate of the iſland.”

IV. The inhabitants ſhall be preſerved in their privileges, rights, honours and exemptions.—“ They are ſubjects of  
“ his Britannic majeſty, and ſhall enjoy their properties, and  
“ the ſame privileges as in the other of his majeſty's Leeward  
“ Iſlands.”

V. The priſoners taken during the ſiege ſhall be reſtored on both ſides; the free mulattoes, as well as the negroes, ſhall be reſtored as priſoners of war.—“ The inhabitants and mul-  
“ lattoes will become Britiſh ſubjects, upon the ſubmiſſion of  
“ the whole iſland. The negroes taken in arms are deemed  
“ ſlaves.”

VI. The ſubjects of Great Britain, who have taken refuge in the iſland for crimes, or condemned to puniſhments, ſhall have liberty of retiring.—“ Refuſed.”

VII. No others than the inhabitants of this island shall, till the peace, possess any estates, either by acquisition, agreement, or otherwise; but in case at the peace the country shall be ceded to the king of Great Britain, then it shall be permitted to the inhabitants, who shall not be willing to become his subjects, to sell their estates, and to retire to any place they think proper. — “All subjects of Great Britain may possess any lands or houses by purchase. The remainder of this article granted, provided they sell to British subjects.”

VIII. The inhabitants and merchants shall enjoy all their privileges of commerce as the subjects of Great Britain. — “Granted; so that it does not affect the privileges of particular companies established in England, or the laws of the kingdom, which prohibit the carrying on trade in other than British bottoms.”

Signed by the above-mentioned deputies, and by *Robert Monkton* and *G. B. Rodney*, commanders of his Britannic Majesty's forces by sea and land, the 7th February, 1762.

On the 13th of February a similar capitulation was demanded for the whole island, and granted with the same restrictions.



## No. XII. (P. 219.)

*Abstract of the articles of capitulation agreed upon between Sir George Pocock, knight of the Bath, and the earl of Albemarle, and the marquis of Real Transporte, commander in chief of the squadron of his Catholic majesty, and Don Juan de Prado, governor of the Havannah, for the surrender of the city, and all its dependencies, with all the Spanish ships in the harbour.*

## PRELIMINARY ARTICLE.

FORT La Punta and the land-gate shall be delivered to his Britannic majesty's troops to-morrow morning, the 13th of August, at twelve o'clock; at which time it is expected the following articles of capitulation shall be signed and ratified.

ARTICLE I. The garrison, consisting of the infantry, artillery-men, and dragoons, the different militia of the towns in the island, shall march out of the land-gate the 20th instant, provided in that time no relief arrives, so as to raise the siege, with all the military honours; arms shouldered, six field pieces of 12 pounders each, and as many rounds to each soldier; the regiments shall take out with them the military chests. And the governor shall have six covered waggons which are not to be examined upon any pretence whatever.—“ The garrison shall  
“ have the honours of war, and shall march out of the Punta  
“ gate with two pieces of cannon, and six rounds for each gun.  
“ The military chest refused. The governor will be allowed as  
“ may boats as necessary to transport his baggage and effects  
“ on board the ships destined for him. The military without  
“ the town, as well as those within, to deliver up their arms  
“ to the British commissary.”

II. The marines, and the ships crews who have served on shore, shall obtain, on their going out, the same honours as the garrison of the city; and shall proceed with those honours on board the said ships, that they may, together with their commander in chief, Don Gulierres de Hevia, marquis del Real Transporte, sail in the said ships as soon as the port is open,

with all their money and effects, in order to proceed to some other port belonging to Spain, in doing which they will oblige themselves, that, during their navigation to their destined port, they shall not attack any vessels belonging to his Britannic majesty, his subjects or allies. Likewise liberty shall be granted to the marines and ships crews, with their officers, to go on board the said ships, and carry with them the effects and money in the city belonging to his Catholic majesty.—“The marquis  
 “of Real Transporte, with his officers, sailors and marines, as  
 “making part of the garrison, shall be treated in every respect,  
 “as the governor and regular troops. All ships in the Haven-  
 “nab, and all money and effects belonging to his Catholic  
 “majesty, shall be delivered up to persons appointed by Sir  
 “George Pocock and the earl of Albemarle.”

III. That the Roman Catholic religion shall be maintained and preserved in the same manner as it has hitherto been in all the dominions belonging to his Catholic majesty; and the different orders, colleges and universities remain in the full enjoyment of all their rights.—“Granted.”

IV. That, in consideration that this port is situated by nature for the relief of those who navigate in those parts of Spanish and British America, that this port shall be allowed to be neutral to the subjects of his Catholic majesty; who are to be admitted in and out freely, to take in such refreshments as they may be in need of, as well as repairing their vessels, paying the current prices for every thing, and that they are not to be insulted nor interrupted in their navigation by any vessels belonging to his Britannic majesty, or his subjects or allies, from the capes Caloche, on the coast of Campeche, and that of St. Antonio to the westward of this island, nor from the Tortuga bank to this port; and from hence till they get into the latitude of 33 degrees north, till both their majesties agree to the contrary.—“Refused.”

V. That the effects detained in this city belonging to the merchants of Cadiz, which have arrived here in the different register ships, and in which are interested all the European nations, a sufficient passport shall be granted to the supercargoes thereof, that they may freely remit the same with the register ships,

ships, without running the risk of being insulted in their passage.—“Refused.”

VI. That those civil or other officers, who have had charge of the management of the administration and distribution of the royal treasure, or any other affair of a peculiar nature from his Catholic majesty, they are to be left with the free use of all those papers which concern the discharge of their duty, with free liberty to carry them to Spain for that purpose; and the same shall be understood with the managers of the royal company in this city.—“All public papers to be delivered to  
“the secretaries of the admiral and general for inspection,  
“which shall be returned to his Catholic majesty’s officers, if  
“not found necessary for the government of the island.”

(Signed) ALBEMARLE.  
G. POCOCK.

EL MARQUES DEL REAL TRANSPORTE.  
JUAN DE PRADO.

## No. XIII. (P. 246.)

*Abstract of the principal articles of the definitive treaty of peace and friendship between his Britannic majesty, the most Christian king, and the king of Spain; concluded at Paris the 10th day of February, 1763. To which the king of Portugal acceded on the same day.*

BE it known to all those to whom it shall or may in any manner belong. It has pleased the Most High to diffuse the spirit of concord and union among the princes, whose divisions had spread troubles in the four quarters of the globe. For this purpose the high contracting parties have named and appointed their respective ambassadors, his sacred majesty the king of Great Britain, John duke of Bedford; his sacred majesty the most Christian king, Gabriel de Choiseul duke of Praslin; his sacred majesty the Catholic king, Don Jerome marquis of Grimaldi; his sacred majesty the most Faithful king, Martin de Mello and Castro; who, having duly communicated to each other their full powers, have agreed upon the articles, the tenor of which is as follows.

*Article I.* There shall be a Christian, universal, and perpetual peace, as well by sea as by land, and a sincere and constant friendship shall be re-established between the before-mentioned sovereigns; and a general oblivion of every thing that may have been done or committed before or since the commencement of the war that is just ended.

II. The former treaties concluded between the respective kingdoms are hereby renewed and confirmed in the best form, and serve as the basis of the present definitive treaty.

III. The prisoners made on all sides, and the hostages carried away or given during the war, shall be restored without ransom, each crown respectively paying the advances made for the subsistence and maintenance of their prisoners, by the sovereign of the country where they shall have been detained.

IV. His most Christian majesty renounces all pretensions which he has heretofore formed, or might form to Nova Scotia,

tia, or Acadia, in all its parts; and guarantees the whole of it, with all its dependencies, to the king of Great Britain: moreover, his most Christian majesty cedes and guarantees to his Britannic majesty, in full right, Canada, with all its dependencies, as well as the island of Cape Breton, and all the other islands and coasts in the Gulf and River of St. Lawrence, and in general every thing that depends on the said countries, lands, islands, and coasts, with the sovereignty, property, and possession, and all rights acquired by treaty or otherwise, which the crown of France has had till now over the said places. His Britannic majesty, on his side, agrees to grant the liberty of the Catholic religion to the inhabitants of Canada.

V. The subjects of France shall have the liberty of fishing and drying on a part of the coasts of the island of Newfoundland, such as it is specified in the 13th article of the treaty of Utrecht; and his Britannic majesty consents to leave to the subjects of the most Christian king the liberty of fishing in the Gulf St. Lawrence, on condition that the subjects of France do not exercise the said fishery, but at the distance of three leagues from all the coasts belonging to Great Britain.

VI. The king of Great Britain cedes the islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, in full right to his most Christian majesty, to serve as shelter to the French fishermen; and his most Christian majesty engages not to fortify the said islands, to erect no buildings upon them but merely for the convenience of the fishery, and to keep upon them a guard of fifty men only for the police.

VII. In order to re-establish peace on solid and durable foundations, and to remove for ever all subject of dispute with regard to the limits of the British and French territories on the continent of America, it is agreed that, for the future, the confines between the dominions of the respective crowns in that part of the world shall be fixed irrevocably by a line drawn along the middle of the Mississippi, from its source to the river Iberville, and from thence by a line drawn along the middle of this river, and the lakes Maurepas and Pontchartrain to the sea; and for this purpose the most Christian king cedes in full right the river and port of the Mobile, and every thing which he possessed on  
the

the left side of the river Mississippi, except the town of New Orleans, and the island in which it is situated.

VIII. The king of Great Britain shall restore to France the islands of Guadaloupe, of Marie-Galante, of Desirade, of Martinico, and Belleisle; and the fortresses of these islands shall be restored in the same condition they were in when they were conquered by the British arms.

IX. The most Christian king cedes and guarantees to his Britannic majesty the islands of Grenada and of the Grenadines; and the partition of the islands called neutral is agreed and fixed, so that those of St. Vincent, Dominica, and Tobago, shall remain in full right to Great Britain, and that of St. Lucia shall be delivered to France to enjoy the same likewise in full right.

X. His Britannic majesty restores to France the island of Goree; and his most Christian majesty cedes to Great Britain the river Senegal, with the forts and factories of St. Lewis, Podor, and Galam.

XI. In the East Indies, Great Britain shall restore to France the different factories which that crown possessed on the coast of Coromandel and Malabar, as also in Bengal, at the beginning of the year 1749. His most Christian majesty shall restore, on his side, all that he may have conquered in the East Indies during the present war.

XII. The island of Minorea shall be restored to his Britannic majesty as well as Fort St. Philippe; and the town and port of Dunkirk shall be put into the state fixed by the last treaty of Aix la Chapelle.

XIII. His Britannic majesty shall cause to be demolished all the fortifications which his subjects shall have erected in the Bay of Honduras; and his Catholic majesty shall not permit, on any pretence whatever, the British subjects to be disturbed in their occupation of cutting, loading, and carrying away logwood.

XIV. The king of Great Britain restores to Spain all the territory which he has conquered in the island of Cuba, with the fortress of the Havannah; and, in consequence of this restitution, his Catholic majesty cedes to Great Britain Florida, with Fort St. Augustine, and the bay of Pensacola, as well as all that

Spain

Spain possessed on the continent of North America, to the east and to the south-east of the river Mississippi.

XV. There is a reciprocal restoration, on all sides, of the conquests made in Germany and Portugal.

XVI. The decision of the prizes, made in time of peace by the subjects of Great Britain on the Spaniards, shall be referred to the courts of justice of the Admiralty of Great Britain, conformable to the rules established among all nations; so that the validity of the said prizes between the British and Spanish nations, shall be decided and judged according to the law of nations, and according to treaties in the courts of justice of the nation who shall have made the capture.

### No. XIV. (P. 338.)

*Abstract of the Declaration signed and delivered by Prince Masserano, ambassador extraordinary from his Catholic majesty, dated the 22d January, 1771; which was the same day accepted by the earl of Rochford, one of his majesty's principal secretaries of state.*

HIS Britannic majesty having complained of the violence which was committed on the 10th of June, 1770, at the island commonly called the Great Malouine, and by the English Falkland's Island, in obliging by force the commander and subjects of his Britannic majesty to evacuate the port by them called Egmont; a step offensive to the honour of his crown;—the prince de Masserano has received orders to declare, that his Catholic majesty considering the desire with which he is animated for peace, and for the maintenance of good harmony with his Britannic majesty, and reflecting that this event might interrupt it, has seen with displeasure this expedition tending to disturb it; and in the persuasion, in which he is, of the reciprocity of sentiments of his Britannic majesty, and of its being far from his sentiments to authorize any thing that might disturb the good understanding between the two courts; his Catholic majesty does disavow the said violent enterprize, and in consequence, the Prince Masserano declares, that his Catholic majesty engages to

give immediate orders that things shall be restored in the Great Malouine, at the port called Egmont, precisely to the state in which they were before the 10th of June, 1770: for which purpose his Catholic majesty will give orders to one of his officers to deliver up, to the officer authorized by his Britannic majesty, the port and fort called Egmont, with all the artillery, stores, and effects of his Britannic majesty and his subjects. The prince de Masserano declares at the same time in the name of the king his master, that the engagement to restore the possession of Port Egmont, cannot nor ought any ways to affect the question of the prior right of sovereignty of the Malouine Islands, otherwise called Falkland's Islands.

### No. XV. (P. 340.)

*The Protest of the Lords against an address to his Majesty to return thanks for his firm and spirited conduct in demanding satisfaction for the violent enterprize against Falkland's Islands.*

**DISSENTIENT, I.** Because it is highly unsuitable to the wisdom and gravity of this house, and to the respect which we owe to his majesty and ourselves, to carry up to the throne an address, approving the acceptance of an imperfect instrument, which has neither been previously authorized by any special full powers produced by the Spanisht minister, nor been as yet ratified by the king of Spain. If the ratification on the part of Spain should be refused, the address of this house will appear no better than an act of precipitate adulation to ministers; which will justly expose the peerage of the kingdom to the indignation of their country, and to the derision of all Europe.

**H.** Because it is a direct insult on the feelings and understanding of the people of Great Britain, to approve this declaration and acceptance, as a means of securing our own and the general tranquillity, whilst the greatest preparations for war are making both by sea and land.

**III.** Because, from the declaration and correspondence laid before us, we are of opinion that the ministers merit the censure  
of



Of this house, rather than any degree of commendation, on account of several improper acts, and equally improper omissions, from the beginning to the close of this transaction: for it is asserted by the Spanish ministers that several discussions had passed which might give the British ministers reason to foresee the attack upon that settlement that was afterwards made by the forces of Spain. Captain Hunt also arriving from them gave them the same intimations; yet so obstinately negligent and supine were his majesty's ministers, that they did not even make a single representation to the court of Spain; which might have prevented the injury, and saved the enormous expence, and manifold hardships, which the nation has suffered in preparing to resent it.

IV. Because the negotiation entered into much too late, was from the commencement conducted on principles as disadvantageous to the wisdom of our public councils, as it was finally concluded in a manner disgraceful to the crown of Great Britain; for it appears that the court of Madrid did disavow the act of hostility, as proceeding from particular instructions, but justified it under her general instructions to her governors; under the oath by them taken, and under the established laws of America.

V. Because nothing has been had or demanded as a reparation in damage for the enormous expence and other inconveniencies, arising from the unprovoked and confessed violence of the Spanish forces in the enterprize against Falkland's Island, and the long subsequent delay of justice.

VI. Because an unparalleled and most audacious insult has been offered to the honour of the British flag, by the detention of a ship of war of his majesty's, for twenty days after the surrender of Port Egmont, and by the indignity of forcibly taking away her rudder. No reparation in honour is demanded for this wanton insult, by which his majesty's reign is rendered the unhappy æra in which the honour of the British flag has suffered the first stain with entire impunity.

VII. Because the declaration by which his majesty is to obtain possession of Port Egmont, contains a reservation or condition of the question of the claim of prior right, being the

first time such a claim has ever authentically appeared in any public instrument concluded on by the two courts.

The above was signed by sixteen peers.

### No. XVI. (P. 342.)

*An account of the Naval Review at Portsmouth, in June 1773.*

EARLY in the morning on Tuesday the 22d instant, the king set out from Kew for Portsmouth, and being arrived at Portsea Bridge, between ten and eleven the same morning, was received by a royal salute of 21 guns. His majesty then proceeded to the first barrier, when major-general Parker, who commanded the garrison during the royal residence at Portsmouth, delivered the keys to the king, who was pleased to return them. On his majesty's entering the Grand-port Gate, he was saluted by a triple discharge of 232 pieces of cannon mounted on the ramparts of Portsmouth, at Blackhouse Fort, and at South-Sea Castle. His majesty proceeded through the town out of the Water-gate to the dock-yard, and arrived at the commissioner's house ten minutes before eleven o'clock, where he was received by the president of the council, and several other of the great officers of state, the commissioners of the admiralty, and the three admirals of the squadron at Spithead. The officers and workmen belonging to the yard, gave three cheers as his majesty entered, and then returned to their several employments. After his majesty had taken some refreshment, he went to the governor's house, where he had a public levee, and then returning to the dock-yard, embarked at half an hour after one in a barge in which the royal standard was immediately hoisted. His majesty then proceeded to Spithead, attended by the barge of the Board of Admiralty, with the flag of their office, the three admirals with their flags, and all the captains of the fleet with their pendants in their barges. As his majesty passed the garrison he was saluted by twenty-one guns from the Blackhouse Fort, Saluting Platform and South-Sea Castle. When the royal standard was seen by the fleet at Spithead, consisting of twenty ships of the line, two frigates, and three sloops, moored in two lines abreast of each other,

other, the whole manned ships, and saluted with twenty-one guns each. The king went on board the *Barfleur* of 90 guns, where he was received by the Board of Admiralty, the captain being at the head of the accommodation ladder, and the side manned by the lieutenants of the ships. As soon as his majesty passed the guard of marines on the quarter-deck, the flag of the lord high admiral, which was then flying, was struck, and the royal standard hoisted at the main-top-mast head, the lord high admiral's flag at the fore-top-mast head, and the union flag at the mizen-top-mast head: on the right of which all the ships, except the *Barfleur*, saluted with twenty one guns each. The ships being cleared as for action, and the officers and men at their respective quarters, his majesty, after the nobility who came off upon this occasion, and the flag officers had paid their duty to him on the quarter deck, walked fore and aft on the lower gun-deck, and took a view of the whole. His majesty then dined on board the *Barfleur*, and after dinner went into the *Augusta* yacht, and after making the circle of the fleet, sailed into the harbour. Similar ceremonies were repeated during the four following days, in which time the king made several naval promotions, knighted many admirals, and distributed money to the sailors and workmen.

## No. XVII. (P. 412.)

## LIST of the FRENCH Fleet in 1778.

*B. signifies Brest, T. Toulon, R. Rochfort, and L'O. L'Orient.*

<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
<i>B.</i> La Bretagne,	110	<i>T.</i> Le Cæsar,	74
La Ville de Paris,	90	La Bourgogne,	74
Le St. Esprit,	80	Le Souverain,	74
La Couronne,	80	Le Destin,	74
Le Duc de Burgogne,	80	L'Altier,	64
L'Orient,	74	Le Lion,	64
Le Magnifique,	74	Le Vaillant,	64
L'Intrepide,	74	<i>B.</i> La Pourvoyeuse,	40
Le Sceptre,	74	La Consolante,	40
Le Palmier,	74	La Belle Poule,	32
Le Défenseur,	74	L'Amphitrite,	32
Le Diadème,	74	La Dédaigneuse,	32
Le Zodiaque,	74	La Tourterelle,	32
Le Minotaure,	74	La Nymphé,	32
Le Robuste,	74	La Malicieuse,	32
Le Citoyen,	74	La Licorne,	32
Le Six Corps,	74	Le Zéphir,	32
Le Diligent,	74	L'Aigrette,	32
Le Glorieux,	74	L'Oiseau,	32
Le Conquerant,	74	La Tolle,	32
<i>T.</i> Le Tonnant,	80	Le Dauphin,	70
Le Languedoc,	80	Le Northumberland,	78
L'Actif,	74	La Protée,	64
Le Bien Aimé,	74	Le Sphinx,	64
Le Guerrier,	74	Le Vengeur,	64
L'Hector,	74	Le Solitaire,	64
Le Fendant,	74	L'Union,	64
Le Zélé,	74	Le Brillant,	64
Le Protecteur,	74	L'Actionnaire,	64
Le Marseillois,	74	<i>B.</i> L'Indien,	

<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
<i>B.</i> L'Indien,	64	<i>B.</i> Le David,	28
Le Roland,	64	L'Elephant,	26
L'Alexandre,	64	La Fortune,	24
Le Bizarre,	64	La Seine,	24
Le Reflexi,	64	La Menagerie,	22
Le Triton,	64	L'Etoile,	20
La Provence,	64	La Tampane,	20
Le Fantafque;	64	La Porteuse,	20
Le Hardi,	64	L'Ecluse,	20
Le Caton,	64	La Bouffole,	20
L'Amphion,	50	Le Compas,	20
Le Fier,	50	L'Esturgeon,	20
<i>R.</i> L'Artesien,	64	La Danae,	26
Le Refolu,	64	La Mouche,	26
Le St. Michel,	64	L'Enjouée,	26
Le Bourdelois,	50	<i>L'O.</i> Le Triton,	26
L'Hippopotame,	50	<i>T.</i> La Cagnelle,	26
<i>L'O.</i> Le Flamand,	60	L'Atalante,	26
<i>T.</i> Le Sagittaire,	50	La Precieuse,	26
L'Imperieux,	32	La Sultane,	26
L'Envieux,	32	La Chimere,	26
La Terpsichore,	32	L'Engageante,	26
La Comete,	30	La Gracieux,	26
La Diligente,	26	La Pleiade,	26
<i>B.</i> Le Renomé,	30	La Fine,	26
La Sibylle,	30	La Topaze,	26
L'Indiscrete,	30	L'Aurore,	26
La Sensible,	28	La Flore,	26
La Legere,	26	La Mignone,	26
L'Infidelle,	26	L'Amelone,	26
La Sincere,	26	L'Aimable,	26
L'Inconstante,	26	<i>R.</i> L'Ecole,	16
La Bondeuse,	26	Le Courrier,	16
La Blanche,	26	La Nourrice,	14
La Thetis,	24	La Barbue,	14
L'Etourdi,	20	La Corifante,	14
La Couliſſe,	28	Le Solomon,	12
		<i>In</i>	

In all 67 capital vessels, 49 frigates, besides a great number of advice-boats, prames, pinks, xebèques and bomb-ketches.

### No. XVIII. (P. 442.)

*On the 30th December, the Duke of Bolton delivered to his Majesty, in his closet, at St. James's, the following Memorial of the Admirals.*

#### TO THE KING.

WE the subscribing admirals of your majesty's royal navy, having hitherto on all occasions served your majesty with zeal and fidelity, and being desirous of devoting every action of our lives, and our lives themselves to your majesty's service, and the defence of our country, think ourselves indispensibly bound by our duty to that service and that country, with all possible humility, to represent to your wisdom and justice,

That Sir Hugh Palliser, vice-admiral of the blue, lately serving under the command of the honourable Augustus Keppel, did prefer certain articles of accusation, containing several matters of heinous offence against his said commander in chief, to the lords commissioners for executing the office of lord high admiral of Great Britain, he the said Sir Hugh Palliser being himself a commissioner in the said commission. This accusation he the said Sir Hugh Palliser with-held from the twenty-seventh day of July last, the time of the supposed offences committed, until the ninth day of this present December, and then brought forward for the purpose of recrimination against charges conjectured by him the said Sir Hugh Palliser, but which in fact were never made.

That the commissioners of the admiralty, near five months after the pretended offences aforesaid, did receive from their said colleague in office, the charge made by him against his said commander, and without taking into consideration the relative situation of the accuser and the party accused, or attending to the avowed motives of the accusation, or the length of time of with-

with-holding, or the occasion of making the same, and without any other deliberation whatever, did, on the very same day on which the charge was preferred, and without previous notice to the party accused of an intention of making a charge against him, give notice of their intending that a court-martial should be held on the said admiral Keppel, after forty years of meritorious service, and a variety of actions in which he had exerted eminent courage and conduct, by which the honour and power of this nation, and the glory of the British flag, had been maintained and increased in various parts of the world.

We beg leave to express to your Majesty our concern at this proceeding, and to represent our apprehensions of the difficulties and discouragements which will inevitably arise to your service therefrom; and that it will not be easy for men, attentive to their honour, to serve your Majesty, particularly in situations of principal command, if the practice now stated to your Majesty be countenanced, or the principles upon which the same has been supported shall prevail with any lord high admiral, or with any commissioner for executing that office.

We are humbly of opinion, that a criminal charge against an officer (rising in importance according to the rank and command of that officer) which suspends his service to your Majesty, perhaps in the most critical exigencies of the public affairs, which calls his reputation into doubt and discussion, which puts him on trial for his life, profession and reputation, and which, in its consequences, may cause a fatal cessation in the naval exertions of the kingdom, to be a matter of the most serious nature, and never to be made by authority but on solid ground, and on mature deliberation. The honour of an officer is his most precious possession and best qualification; the public have an interest in it; and whilst those under whom we serve countenance accusation, it is often impossible perfectly to restore military fame by the mere acquittal of a court-martial. Imputations made by high authority remain long and affect deeply. The sphere of action of commanders in chief is large, and their business intricate, and subject to great variety of opinion; and before they are to be put on the judgment of others for acts done upon their discretion, the greatest discretion ought to be employed.

Whether the Board of Admiralty hath by law any such discretion, we, who are not of the profession of the law, cannot positively assert; but if we had conceived that this Board had no legal use of their reason in a point of such delicacy and importance, we should have known on what terms we served. But we never did imagine it possible, that we were to receive orders from, and be accountable to those who, by law, were seduced to become passive instruments to the possible malice, ignorance, or treason of any individual who might think fit to disarm his Majesty's navy of its best and highest officers. We conceive it disrespectful to the laws of our country to suppose them capable of such manifest injustice and absurdity.

We therefore humbly represent, in behalf of public order, as well as of the discipline of the navy, to your Majesty, the dangers of long concealed, and afterwards precipitately adopted charges, and of all recriminatory accusations of subordinate officers against their commanders in chief; and particularly the mischief and scandal of permitting men, who are at once in high civil office, and in subordinate military command, previous to their making such accusations, to attempt to corrupt the public judgment, by the publication of libels on their officers in a common news-paper, thereby exciting mutiny in your Majesty's navy, as well as prejudicing the minds of those who are to try the merits of the accusation against the said superior officer.

HAWKE,  
JOHN MOORE,  
BOLTON,  
SAMUEL GRAVES,  
HUGH PICOT,  
ROBERT HARLAND.

BRISTOL,  
JAMES YOUNG,  
MATTHEW BARTON,  
FRANCIS GEARY,  
SHULDHAM,  
CLARK GAYTON.



## No. XIX. (P. 444.)

*January 30, 1779.*

*This morning, at half past ten o'clock, the court-martial were resumed, and Admiral Keppel delivered the following speech:*

*THE DEFENCE of Admiral KEPPEL.*

SIR,

AFTER forty years spent in the service of my country, little did I think of being brought to a court-martial to answer to charges of misconduct, negligence in the performance of duty, and tarnishing the honour of the British navy. These charges, Sir, have been advanced by my accuser. Whether he has succeeded in proving them or not the court will determine. Before he brought me to a trial, it would have been candid in him to have given vent to his thoughts, and not by a deceptive shew of kindness to lead me into the mistake of supposing a friend in the man who was my enemy in his heart, and was shortly to be my accuser. Yet, Sir, after all my misconduct; after so much negligence in the performance of duty, and after tarnishing so deeply the honour of the British navy, my accuser made no scruple to sail a second time with the man who had been the betrayer of his country! Nay, during the time we were on shore, he corresponded with me on terms of friendship, and even in his letters he approved of what had been done, of the part which he now condemns, and of the very negligent misconduct, which has since been so offensive in his eyes!

Such behaviour, Sir, on the part of my accuser, gave me little reason to apprehend an accusation from him. Nor had I any reason to suppose that the state would criminate me. When I returned, his majesty received me with the greatest applause. Even the first lord of the admiralty gave his flattering testimony to the rectitude of my conduct, and seemed with vast sincerity to applaud my zeal for the service. Yet in the moment of approbation, it seems as if a scheme was concerting against my

life;

life; for, without any previous notice, five articles of a charge were exhibited against me by Sir Hugh Palliser, who, most unfortunately for his cause, lay himself under an imputation of disobedience of orders, at the very time when he accused me of negligence! This to be sure was a very ingenious mode of getting the start of me. An accusation exhibited against a commander in chief might draw off the public attention from neglect of duty in an inferior officer. I could almost wish, in pity to my accuser, that appearances were not so strong against him. Before the trial commenced, I actually thought that my accuser might have some tolerable reasons for his conduct. But from the evidence, even as adduced to account for the behaviour of the honourable gentleman in the afternoon of the 27th of July, from that evidence, I say, Sir, I find that I was mistaken. The trial has left my accuser without excuse, and he now cuts that sort of figure which, I trust in God, all accusers of innocence will ever exhibit!

I have observed, Sir, that the opinions of officers of different ranks have been taken. I trust that the court will indulge me with the same liberty, in the evidence for my defence. Some have refused to give their opinions. I thought it strange, as plain speaking, and a full declaration, are the best of evidences in a good cause.

I would wish, Sir, the court to consider, that in all great naval, as well as military operations, unless the design be fully known, the several manœuvres may have a strange appearance. Masters have been called to give their opinions on the higher departments of command. Higher authorities should have been taken. Such authorities are not scarce, for I am happy to say, there never was a country served by naval officers of more bravery, skill and gallantry, than England can boast at present. As to this court, I intreat you, gentlemen, who compose it, to recollect, that you sit here as a court of honour, as well as a court of justice, and I now stand before you, not merely to save my life, but for a purpose of infinitely greater moment—to clear my fame.

My accuser, Sir, has not been a little mistaken in his notions of the duty of a commander in chief; or he would never have  
accused

accused me in the manner he has done. During action subordinate officers either are (or they ought to be) too attentive to their own duty to observe the manœuvres of others. In general engagements it is scarcely possible for the same objects to appear in the same point of view to the commanders of two different ships. The point of sight may be different. Clouds of smoke may obstruct the view. Hence will arise the difference in the opinions of officers as to this or that manœuvre, without any intentional partiality. Whether I have conceived objects in exact correspondence with the truth; whether I have viewed them unskilfully, (or, as my accuser has been pleased to term it, unofficer-like), these are matters which remain to be determined. I can only say, that what Sir Hugh Palliser has imputed to me as negligence, was the effect of deliberation and choice. I will add, that I was not confined in my powers when I sailed; I had ample discretion to act as I thought proper for the defence of the kingdom. I manœvred; I fought; I returned; I did my best. If my abilities were not equal to the task, I have the consolation to think, that I did not solicit, nor did I bargain for the command. More than two years ago, in the month of November, 1776, I received a letter from the first lord of the marine department, wherein he observed, "That owing to motions of foreign courts, it might be necessary to prepare a fleet of observation." My reply to this letter was, "That I was ready to receive any command from his majesty, and I begged to have the honour of an audience." This request was complied with. I was closetted, and I told the king, "that I was willing to serve him as long as my health would permit." I heard no more until the month of March, 1778, at which time I had two or three audiences, and I told his majesty, that "I had no acquaintance with his ministers, but I trusted to his protection and zeal for the public good." Here were no sinister views; no paltry gratifications; I had nothing, I felt nothing but an earnest desire to serve my country. I even accepted the command in chief with reluctance. I was apprehensive of not being supported at home. I foresaw that the higher the command, the more liable was I to be ruined in my reputation. Even my misfortunes, if I had any, might be con-

structed.

strued into crimes. During forty years service I have not received any particular mark of favour from the crown. I have only been honoured with the confidence of my sovereign in times of public danger. Neither my deficiencies nor my misconduct were ever before brought forward to the public. And it is now somewhat strange, that so well acquainted as my accuser must have been with my deficient abilities, it is strange, I say, Sir, that he should be the very person who brought me the message to take the command upon me; nay, further, Sir, he brought me that message with great seeming pleasure! There was, or there was not reason at that time to doubt my ability. If there was reason, how could my accuser wish me to accept a command for which I was disqualified? If there was not any reason to doubt my professional abilities sixteen months ago, I have given no reason why they should be since called in question. When I returned from the expedition, I did not complain of any thing. I endeavoured to stop all murmurings. I even trusted the first lord of the admiralty in the same manner as I would have done my most intimate friend. This might be imprudent. It might be dangerous. But, Sir, I am by nature open and unguarded, and little did I expect that traps would artfully be laid to endeavour to catch me on the authority of my own words.

It was in the month of March, 1778, that I was told a fleet lay ready for me to command. When I reached Portsmouth I saw but six ships ready, and, on viewing even those with a seaman's eye, I was not by any means pleased with their condition. Before I quitted Portsmouth, four or five more were ready, and I will do the persons in office the justice to say, that from that time they used the utmost diligence in getting the fleet ready for service. On the 30th of June I sailed with twenty ships of the line, and very fortunately fell in with the *Belle Poule* and other French frigates; and the letters and papers found on board them were of material service to the state. Captain Marshall distinguished himself with the greatest honour. I confess that when I fell in with those frigates I was at a loss how to act. On the one hand I conceived the incident to be favourable to my country, and on the other I was fearful that a war with France

and

and all its consequences might be laid to my charge. For any thing I can tell this may yet be the case. It may be treasured up to furnish another matter for future accusation. To this hour I have neither received official approbation or censure for my conduct. With twenty ships of the line I sailed. Thirty-two ships of the line lay in Brest water, besides an incredible number of frigates. Was I to seek an engagement with a superior force? I never did, nor shall I ever fear to engage a force superior to the one I then commanded, or that I may hereafter command. But I well know what men and ships can do, and if the fleet I commanded had been destroyed, we must have left the French masters of the sea. To refit a fleet requires time. From the situation of affairs, naval stores are not very soon supplied. Never did I experience so deep a melancholy as when I found myself forced to turn my back on France! I quitted my station, and courage was never put to so severe a trial.

I was permitted to sail a second time, without receiving official praise or blame for the part I had acted. These were discouraging circumstances. But they did not disturb my temper. My principal object was to get ready for sea with all possible haste. I was surprised on my return to be threatened with the fate of admiral Byng, and I was still more surprised to be charged with cowardice.

With thirty ships of the line I sailed early in July. The French admiral sailed from Brest with thirty-two ships. I believe that, when the fleets came in sight of each other, the French were not a little surprised to see me so strong. I desire not to throw the slightest imputation on the courage of the French admiral. I believe him to be a brave man, and one who had some particular reasons for the line of conduct he pursued. I was determined, if possible, to bring the French to battle, as I had every reason to think, that their having avoided an engagement, when it was for four days in their power to attack me, was owing to their expecting some capital reinforcements. I therefore thought, that the sooner I could engage them the better, especially as I knew that the principal fleets of our trade were daily expected in the channel, and if the French fleets had been permitted to disperse without an action, our East and West

West India fleets might have been intercepted, the convoys might have been cut off, and the stake of England might have been lost. I beg leave to mention, that, in the reign of king William, the gallant admiral Russel was two months in sight of a French fleet, and he could not possibly bring them to action. My being in sight of the French fleet four days before the engagement, will not therefore appear to be so extraordinary as it has been represented. Had it not been for the favourable change of wind on the morning of the 27th of July, I could not have brought the French to action when I did.

I am exceedingly sorry, Sir, that the admiralty have refused me the liberty of producing my instructions. In all former courts-martial the instructions and orders have been sent with the charge to the members of the court. As it has been denied in this instance, I must, and do submit.

Although on the 27th of July I fought and beat my enemy, and compelled him to take shelter by returning into port; yet the effort did by no means answer my wishes. I rushed on to re-attack the enemy. Why I did not accomplish my design will be seen in the evidence I shall produce. I might, it is true, have chased the three ships which were visible on the morning of the 28th of July, but with very little prospect of success. I therefore chose to return to Plymouth with my shattered fleet, to get ready for sea again, not, however, forgetting to leave two ships of the line to cruise for the protection of our trading fleets, which, thank God, all arrived safe.

On my return, Sir, I most cautiously avoided to utter a syllable of complaint, because it might have suspended our naval operations, which at that time would have been highly dangerous. I could not think of attending to a court-martial, when greater objects were in view.

With respect to the second edition of the *Formidable's* log-book, it appears to have been fabricated rather for the purpose of exculpating the prosecutor than to criminate me. I shall therefore pass it over, and permit the gentleman to make the most of such an exculpation. I cannot, however, be so civil to the alterations and additions in the log-book of the *Robuste*.

Captain

Captain Hood's conduct must have struck the court, as I believe it did every person, except the prosecutor, with astonishment.

A great stress, Sir, has been laid on my letter to the Admiralty. There is a passage in it where I seemed to approve the conduct of every officer in the fleet. The court will observe, that I was not in my letter to inform all Europe, that a vice-admiral under my command had been guilty of neglect, whilst there remained a possibility of excuse for his conduct. As to courts-martial, one very bad consequence will, I am sure, result from this trial: it will terrify a commander in chief from accepting a commission, if he should be liable to be brought to a trial by every subordinate officer.

As I have touched on my letters, I will just observe, Sir, that the most disagreeable task I ever experienced was that of writing my letter of the 30th of July. However, if I writ ill, I am confident that I fought well; and the desertion of the trade of France was evident from the numbers of rich captures which we made: a number far exceeding any thing ever known in so short a period! His majesty noticed this in a speech from the throne.

Mr. President, I now desire that the judge-advocate may be directed to read the charge, and I will answer the several accusations.

*The REPLIES of Admiral KEPPEL to the CHARGES against him.*

*The first of the Charges, contained in the first article, is,*

“ THAT on the morning of the 27th of July, 1778, having  
“ a fleet of thirty ships of the line under my command, and  
“ being then in the presence of a French fleet of the like num-  
“ ber of ships of the line, I did not make the necessary prepa-  
“ rations for fight.”

To this I answer, That I have never understood preparations for fight to have any other meaning in the language and understanding of seamen, than that each particular ship, under the direction and discipline of her own officers, when in pursuit of an enemy, be in every respect cleared and in readiness for action; the contrary of which no admiral of a fleet, without a reasonable

cause, will presume: and as from the morning of the 24th, when the French fleet had got to windward, to the time of the action, the British fleet was in unremitting pursuit of them, it is still more difficult to conceive that any thing more is meant by this charge, than what is immediately after conveyed by the charge that follows it, *viz.* "That on the same morning of the 27th I did not put my fleet into line of battle, or into any order proper either for receiving or attacking an enemy of such force."

By the second part of the charge I feel myself attacked in the exercise of that great and broad line of discretion, which every officer, commanding either fleets or armies, is often obliged, both in duty and conscience, to exercise to the best of his judgment; and which, depending on circumstances and situations infinitely various, cannot be reduced to any positive rule of discipline or practice:—a discretion which, I submit to the court, I was peculiarly called upon, by the strongest and best motives, to exercise, which I therefore did exercise, and which, in my public letter to the Board of Admiralty, I openly avowed to have exercised. I admit, that, on the morning of the 27th of July, I did not put my fleet into a line of battle, because I had it not in my choice to do so, consistently with the certainty, or even the probability, of either giving or being given battle, and because, if I had not scrupulously adhered to that order, in which, if the election had been mine, I should have chosen to have received or attacked a willing enemy, I should have had no enemy either to receive or attack.

I shall therefore, in answer to this charge, submit to the court my reasons for determining to bring the enemy to battle at all events, and shall shew, that any other order than that in which my fleet was conducted, from my first seeing them to the moment of the action, was incompatible with such determination.

In order to this I must call the attention of the court to a retrospective view of the motions of the two fleets from their first coming in sight of each other.

On my first discovering the French fleet at one o'clock in the afternoon of the 23d of July, I made the necessary signals for forming my fleet in the order of battle, which I effected towards the



the evening, and brought to by signal, and lay till the morning, when perceiving that the French fleet had gained the wind during the night, and carried a pressed sail to preserve it, I discontinued the signal for the line, and made the general signal to chase to windward, in hopes that they would join battle with me, rather than suffer two of their capital ships to be entirely separated from them, and give me a chance of cutting off a third, which had carried away a top-mast in the night, and which, but for a shift of wind, I must have taken. In this, however, I was disappointed; for they suffered two of them to go off altogether, and continued to make every use of the advantage of the wind.

This assiduous endeavour of the French admiral to avoid coming to action, which, from his having the wind, was always in his option, led me to believe that he expected a reinforcement. This reflection would alone have been sufficient to determine me to urge my pursuit, in as collected a body as the nature of such a pursuit would admit of, without the delay of the line, and to seize the first opportunity of bringing on an engagement.

But I had other reasons no less urgent.

If by obstinately adhering to the line of battle, I had suffered, as I inevitably must, the French fleet to have been separated from me; and if, by such separation, the English convoys from the East and West Indies, then expected home, had been cut off, or the coast of England had been insulted, what would have been my situation!—Sheltered under the forms of discipline, I might perhaps have escaped punishment, but I could not have escaped censure. I should neither have escaped the contempt of my fellow-citizens, nor the reproaches of my own-conscience.

Moved by these important considerations, supported by the examples of admiral Ruffel, and other great commanders, who, in similar situations, had ever made strict orders give way to reasonable enterprize; and particularly encouraged by the remembrance of having myself served under that truly great officer, lord Hawke, when, rejecting all rules and forms, he grasped at victory by an irregular attack, I determined not to lose sight of the French fleet, by being out-failed from preserving the line of battle, but to keep my fleet as well collected as I could, and near enough to assist and act with each other, in

case a change of wind, or other favourable circumstances, should enable me to force the French fleet to action.

Such were my feelings and reflections when the day broke on the morning of the 27th of July, at which time the fleet under my command was in the following position: Vice-admiral Sir Robert Harland was about four miles distant, on the Victory's weather-quarter, with most of the ships of his own division, and some of those belonging to the centre. Vice-admiral Sir Hugh Palliser at about three miles distant, a point before the lee-beam of the Victory, with his main-sail up, which obliged the ships of his division to continue under an easy sail.

The French fleet was as much to windward, and at as great a distance as it had been the preceding morning, standing with a fresh wind at south-west, close hauled on the larboard tack, to all appearance avoiding me with the same industry it ever had done.

At this time, therefore, I had no greater inducement to form the line, than I had the morning of the former day; and I could not have formed it without greatly increasing my distance from the French fleet, contrary to that plan of operation, which I have already submitted to the judgment of the court.

The vice-admiral of the blue next charges, "That although my fleet was already dispersed and in disorder, I, by making the signal for several ships in his division to chace to windward, increased the disorder of that part of my fleet, and that the ships were in consequence more scattered than they had been the day before; and that, whilst in this disorder, I advanced to the enemy, and made the signal for battle."

In this part of the charge there is a studious design to mislead the understanding, and, by leaving out times and intermediate events, to make the transactions of half a day appear but as one moment. It is, indeed, impossible to read it, without being possessed with the idea, that at half past five in the morning, when I made the signal for six of the ships of the vice-admiral of the blue's division to chace to windward, I was in the immediate prospect of closing with an enemy, approaching me in a regular line, and all their motions plainly indicating a design to give battle—instead of which, both the fleets were on the  
larboard

larboard tack, the enemy's fleet near three leagues, if not more, to windward, going off close by the wind with a pressed sail.— My reason, therefore, for making that signal, at half past five, was to collect as many ships to windward as I could, in order to strengthen the main body of the fleet, in case I should be able to get to action, and to fill up the interval between the Victory and the vice-admiral, which was occasioned by his being far to leeward; and it is plain that the vice-admiral must have himself understood the object of the signal, since it has appeared in the course of the evidence, that on its being made, the Formidable set her main-sail, and let the reefs out of her top-sail; and, indeed, the only reason why it was not originally made for the whole division, was, that they must have then chaced as a division, which would have retarded the best going ships by an attendance on the vice-admiral.

Things were in this situation, when, at half past nine, the French admiral tacked, and wore his whole fleet, and stood to the southward, on the starboard tack, close hauled; but the wind immediately after they wore about, coming more southerly, I continued to stand on till a quarter past ten, at which time I tacked the British fleet together by signal. Soon after we wore about, on the starboard tack, the wind came two points in our favour to the westward, which enabled us to lie up for a part of them; but in a dark squall that soon after came on, I lost sight of the enemy for above half an hour, and when it cleared away at eleven o'clock, I discovered the French fleet had changed their position, and were endeavouring to form the line on the larboard tack, which finding they could not effect without coming within gun-shot of the van of the British fleet, they edged down, and fired on my headmost ships, as they approached them on the contrary tack, at a quarter after eleven, which was instantly returned; and then, and not till then, I made the signal for battle. All this happened in about half an hour, and must have been owing to the enemy's falling to leeward in performing their evolution during the squall, which we could not see, and by that means produced this sudden and unexpected opportunity of engaging them, as they were near three leagues a-head of me when the squall came on.

If,

If, therefore, by making the signal for the line of battle, when the van of my fleet was thus suddenly getting within reach of the enemy, and well connected with the centre, as my accuser himself has admitted, I had called back the vice-admiral of the red, the French fleet might either have formed their line compleat, and have come down upon my fleet while in the confusion of getting into order of battle, or (what I had still greater reason to apprehend) might have gone off to windward out of my reach altogether; for even as it was, the enemy's van, instead of coming close to action, kept their wind, and passed hardly within random shot.

My accuser next asserts, as an aggravation of his former charge,

“ That the French fleet was in a regular line on that tack  
“ which approached the British fleet, all their motions plainly  
“ indicating a design to give battle.”

Both which facts have already been contradicted by the testimony of even his own witnesses: that the enemy's fleet was not in a regular line of battle, appeared by the French admiral being out of his station, far from the centre of his line, and next, or very near, to a ship carrying a vice-admiral's flag, and from some of their ships being a-breast of each other, and in one, as they passed the English fleet, with other apparent marks of irregularity. Indeed every motion of the French fleet, from about nine, when it went upon the starboard tack, till the moment of the action, and even during the action itself, I apprehend to be decisive against the alledged indication of designing battle; for if the French admiral had really designed to come to action, I apprehend he never would have got his fleet on the contrary tack to that on which the British fleet was coming up to him, but would have shortened sail and waited for it, formed in the line on the same tack; and even when he did tack towards the British fleet, the alledged indication is again directly refuted, by the van of the French fleet hauling their wind again, instead of bearing down into action, and by their hoisting no colours when they began to engage.

Notwithstanding these incontrovertible truths my accuser imputes it to me that a general engagement was not brought on;  
but

- but it is evident from the testimony of every witness he has called, that a general engagement was never in my choice; and that so far from its being prevented by my not having formed the line of battle, no engagement, either general or partial, could have been brought on if I had formed it; indeed it is a contradiction in terms to speak of a general engagement, where the fleet that has the wind, tacks to pass the fleet to leeward on the contrary tack.

Such was the manner, in which, after four days pursuit, I was at last enabled by a favourable shift of wind to close with the fleet of France; and if I am justifiable on principle in the exercise of that discretion which I have been submitting to your judgment, of bringing, at all events, an unwilling enemy to battle, I am certainly not called upon to descend to all the minutiae of consequences resulting from such enterprize, even if such had ensued, as my accuser has asserted, but which his own witnesses have not only failed to establish, but absolutely refuted. It would be an insult on the understanding of the court, were I to offer any arguments, to shew that ships which engage without a line of battle, cannot so closely, uniformly and mutually support each other, as when circumstances admit of a line being formed; because it is self-evident, and is the basis of all the discipline and practice of lines of battle. But in the present case, notwithstanding I had no choice in making my disposition for an attack, nor any possibility of getting to battle otherwise than I did, which would be alone sufficient to repel any charge of consequent irregularity, or even confusion, yet it is not necessary for me to claim the protection of the circumstances under which I acted, because no irregularity or confusion either existed or has been proved; all the chasing ships, and the whole fleet, except a ship or two, got into battle, and into as close battle as the French fleet, which had the option by being to windward, chose to give them. The vice-admiral of the blue himself, though in the rear, was out of action, in a short time after the Victory, and so far from being left to engage singly and unsupported, was passed during the action by three ships of his own division, and was obliged to back his mizen-top-sail to keep out of the fire of one of the largest

largest ships in the fleet, which must have continued near him all the rest of the time he was passing the French line, as I shall prove she was within three cables length of the Formidable when the firing ceased.

*Answer to the Second Article.*

The moment the Victory had passed the enemy's rear, my first object was to look round to the position of the fleet which the smoke had till then obscured from observation, in order to determine how a general engagement might best be brought on after the fleet should have passed each other.

I found that the vice-admiral of the red, with part of his division had tacked, and was standing towards the enemy with top gallant sails set, the very thing I am charged with not having directed him to do; but all the rest of the ships that had passed a-head of me were still on the starboard tack, some of them dropping to leeward, and seemingly employed in repairing their damages. The Victory herself was in no condition to tack, and I could not immediately wear and stand back on the ships coming up a-stern of me out of the action (had it been otherwise expedient) without throwing them into the utmost confusion. Sir John Ross, who very gallantly tried the experiment, having informed the court of the momentary necessity he was under of wearing back again to prevent the consequences I have mentioned, makes it unnecessary to enlarge on the probable effect of such a general manœuvre, with all the ships a-head. Indeed I only remark it as a strongly relative circumstance, appearing by the evidence of a very able and experienced officer, and by no means as a justification for having stood away to a great distance beyond the enemy before I wore, because the charge itself is grossly false. In fact, the Victory had very little way while her head was to the southward, and although her damages were considerable, was the first ship of the centre division, that got round towards the enemy again, and some time before the rest were able to follow her, since, even as it was, not above three or four were able to close up with her on the larboard tack; so that, had it even been practicable to have wore sooner than I did, no good purpose could have been answered by it; hence I must have only wore the sooner back again

again to have collected the disabled ships which would have been thereby left still farther a-stern.

The Formidable was no otherwise left engaged with the enemy during this short interval than as being in the rear, which must always necessarily happen to ships in that situation, when fleets engage each other on contrary tacks, and no one witness has attempted to speak to the danger my accuser complains of, except his own captain, who, on being called upon to fix the time when such danger was apprehended, stated it to be before the Formidable opened her fire, which renders the application of it as a consequence of the second charge too absurd to demand a refutation.

*Answer to the third Article.*

As soon as I had wore to stand towards the enemy, I-hauled down the signal for battle, which I judged improper to be kept abroad till the ships could recover their stations, or at least get near enough to support each other in action. In order to call them together for that purpose, I immediately made the signal to form the line of battle a-head of all the centre and red division, I embraced that opportunity of unbending her main-top-sail, which was totally unserviceable, and, in doing which, the utmost expedition was used, the ships a-stern of me doing all they could in the mean time to get into their station; so that no time was lost by this necessary operation.

The Formidable was a-head of the Victory during this period; it was her station in the line on that tack. Yet, at the very moment my accuser dares to charge me with not calling the ships together to renew the attack, he himself, though his ship was in a manageable condition, as appeared by the evidence of his own captain, and though he had wore, expecting, as he says, the battle to be renewed, quitted his station in the front of that line of battle, the signal for which was flying, passed to leeward of me on the starboard tack while I was advancing to the enemy, and never came into the line during the rest of the day.

In this situation I judged it necessary that the vice-admiral of the red, who was to windward, and passing forward on my weather-bow, with six or seven ships of his division, should

lead on the larboard tack, in order to give time to the ships which had come last out of action to repair their damages, and get collected together; and the signal appointed by the 31st article of the fighting instructions not being applicable, as the French fleet was so nearly a-head of us, that by keeping close to the wind we could only have fetched them, I made the *Proserpine's* signal, in order to have dispatched captain Sutton with a message to vice-admiral Sir Robert Harland, to lead the fleet to the larboard tack; but, before he left the *Victory* with the orders he had received, the French fleet wore and stood to the southward, forming their line on the starboard tack, their ships advancing regularly out of a collected body, which they had got into from the operation of wearing, and not from any disorder or confusion which really existed. I could have derived no immediate advantage from it, not having a sufficient force collected to prevent their forming, by an attempt to renew the attack. The *Victory* was at this time the nearest ship to the enemy, with no more than three or four of the centre division, in any situation to have supported her or each other in action. The vice-admiral of the blue was on the starboard tack, standing away from his station, totally regardless of the signal that was flying to form the line, and most of the other ships, except the red division, whose position I have already stated, were far a-stern, and five disabled ships at a great distance on the lee quarter. Most of these facts are already established by the accuser's own evidence. I shall prove and confirm them all by the testimony of that part of the fleet, whose situations will enable them to speak to them with certainty.

I trust they will convince the court, that I had it not in my power to collect the fleet together to renew the fight at that time, and that, from their not being able to follow me, I consequently could not advance with them; that I did not haul down the signal for battle till it ceased to be capable of producing any good effect; that, during the whole time I stood towards the enemy, I endeavoured by the most forcible of all signals, the signal for the line of battle, to call the ships together in order to renew the attack; that I did avail myself of the ships that were with the vice-admiral of the red as far as circumstances admitted; and that



that I therefore did do the utmost in my power to take, sink, burn, and destroy the French fleet, which had attacked the British fleet.

*Answer to the Fourth Article.*

The French fleet having wore and begun to form their line, on the starboard-tack, by the wind, which, if they had kept, would have brought them close up with the centre division, soon afterwards edged away, pointing towards four or five of the disabled ships, which were at a distance to leeward, and with evident intention to have separated them from the rest of the fleet; to prevent which, I made the signal to wear, and stood athwart their van, in a diagonal course, to give protection to those crippled ships, keeping the signal for the line flying to form and collect the fleet on the starboard tack. As I had thus been obliged to alter my disposition, before captain Sutton left the *Victory* with my former message, I dispatched him with orders to the vice-admiral of the red to form with his division at a distance astern of the *Victory*, to cover the rear, and keep the enemy in check, till the vice-admiral of the blue should come into his station with his division, in obedience to the signal. These orders the vice-admiral of the red instantly obeyed, and was formed in my wake before four o'clock, when, finding that while by the course I steered to protect the crippled ships, I was nearer the enemy, the vice-admiral of the blue still continued to ly to windward, and by so doing kept his division from joining me, I made the signal for ships to bear down into my wake, and that it might be the better distinguished, (both being signals at the mizen-peak,) I hauled down the signal for the line for about ten minutes, and then hoisted it again. This signal he repeated, though he had not repeated that for the line of battle; but by not bearing down himself, he led the ships of his division to interpret his repeating it as requiring them to come into his wake instead of mine.

Having now accomplished the protection of the disabled ships, and the French fleet continuing to form their line, ranging up to leeward, parallel to the centre division, my only object was to form mine, in order to bear down upon them to renew the

battle; and therefore, at a quarter before five o'clock, after having repeated the signal for ships to windward to bear down into my wake with no better effect than before, I sent the *Milford* with orders to the vice-admiral of the red to stretch a-head, and take his station in the line, which he instantly obeyed; and the vice-admiral of the blue being still to windward, with his fore-top-sail unbent, and making no visible effort to obey the signal, which had been flying the whole afternoon, I sent out the *Fox*, at five o'clock, with orders to him to bear down into my wake, and to tell him, that I only waited for him, and his division, to renew the battle. While I was dispatching these frigates, having before hauled down the signal to come into my wake, I put aboard the signal for all ships to come into their stations, always keeping the signal for the line flying. All this producing no effect on the vice-admiral of the blue, and wearied out with fruitless expectation, at seven o'clock I made the signal for each particular ship of the vice-admiral of the blue's division to come into her station; but, before they had accomplished it, night put an end to all farther operations.

It may be observed, that, amongst these signals, I did not make the *Formidable's*. If the vice-admiral chuses to consider this as a culpable neglect, I can only say, that it occurred to me to treat him with a delicacy due to his rank, which had some time before induced me to send him the message by captain *Windfor*, the particulars of which he has already faithfully related to the court.

I trust I have little reason to apprehend that the court will be inclined to consider my conduct as I have stated it, in answer to this fourth article of the charge, as disgraceful to the British flag. After I had put upon the same tack with the enemy, to protect the disabled part of my fleet, and to collect the rest together, there would have been little to do to renew the battle, but bearing right down upon the enemy, if my accuser had led his division in obedience to the repeated signals and orders which I have stated. The *Victory* never went more than two knots, was under her double-reefed top-sail, and fore-sail much shattered, which kept the ships that were near her under their top-sail, and suffered the French fleet, which might always have  
brought

brought me to action, if they had inclined to do it, to range up parallel with the centre, under very little sail. It was to protect the five disabled ships above-mentioned, and to give the rest time to form into some order, that I judged it might be expedient to stand as I did under that easy sail, than to bring to with my head to the southward. The court will judge whether it was possible for any officer in the service really to believe that these operations could give the appearance of a flight, or furnish a rational pretence to the French admiral to claim the victory, or publish to the world that the British fleet had run away.

*Answer to the Fifth Article.*

On the morning of the 28th of July, the French fleet, (except three sail which were seen upon the lee quarter) was only visible from the mast-heads of some of the ships of the British fleet, and at a distance from me, which afforded not the smallest prospect of coming up with them, more especially as their ships, though certainly much damaged in their hulls, had not apparently suffered much in their masts and sails. Whereas the fleet under my command was generally and greatly shattered in their masts, yards and rigging, and many of them unable to carry sail. As to the three French ships, I made the signal at five o'clock in the morning for the Duke, Bienfaisant, Prince George, and Elisabeth, to give them chase, judging them to be the properest ships for that purpose, but the two last were not able to carry sufficient sail to give even countenance to the pursuit; and looking round to the general condition of my fleet, I saw it was in vain to attempt either a general or a partial chase. Indeed my accuser does not venture to alledge that there was any probability, or even possibility, of doing it with effect, which destroys the whole imputation of his charge.

Under these circumstances I could not mistake my duty, and I was resolved not to sacrifice it to an empty shew and appearance, which is beneath the dignity of an officer, unconscious of any failure or neglect. To have urged a fruitless pursuit, with a fleet so greatly crippled in its masts and sails, after a distant and flying enemy, within reach of their own ports, and with a  
fresh

fresh wind blowing fair for their port, with a large swell, would have been not only wantonly exposing the British fleet under my command without end or object, but misleading and defeating its operations, by delaying the resitment necessary for carrying on the future service with vigour and effect.

My accuser asserts, by a general conclusion to the five articles exhibited against me, that, from what he states as instances of misconduct and neglect in me, "a glorious opportunity was lost" of doing a most essential service to the state," and that the honour of the British navy was tarnished.

The truth of the assertion, That an opportunity was lost, I am not called upon either to combat or deny. It is sufficient for me, if I shall be successful in proving, that that opportunity was seized by me, and followed up to the full extent of my power; if the court shall be of that opinion, I am satisfied; and it will then rest with the vice-admiral of the blue, to explain to what cause it is to be referred, that the glorious opportunity he speaks of was lost, and to whom it is to be imputed, (if the fact be true), that the honour of the British navy has been tarnished.

Having now, Sir, finished my replies, I shall call witnesses to prove my innocence. I have heard it asserted as matter of right to alter a log-book. I will only say, that there is a wide difference between correcting inaccuracies, and malicious alterations, for the purpose of aiding malicious prosecutions.

As to my prosecutor, I have even his own letters, of as late date as the 5th of October, wherein he thus writes to me, "I know that you would rather meet the French fleet." Yes, Sir, that very French fleet which he afterwards accused me of running away from! I cannot produce these letters in evidence, but I will show them to any gentleman out of court who desires to see them. I will also show to any gentleman a paper which my prosecutor requested me to sign but a very short time ago, and I refused to sign it. In the news-papers my prosecutor denied receiving any message by the Fox frigate. Captain Windfor swore to the delivery of such a message. He proved in evidence that he received the message from me at five o'clock, and  
delivered

delivered it to the vice-admiral himself at half past five o'clock. Captain Bazely endeavoured to refute this evidence : but I shall call witnesses to prove the delivery of the message. My conscience is perfectly clear. I have no secret machinations, no dark contrivances to answer for. My heart does not reproach me. As to my enemies, I would not wish the greatest enemy I have in the world to be afflicted with so heavy a punishment as—— my accuser's conscience.

No. XX.

## No. XX. (P. 445.)

## Admiral KEPPEL's Letter to the Admiralty.

*Victory, at sea, July 30, 1778.*

S I R,

My letters of the 23d and 24th instant, by the *Peggy* and *Union* cutters, acquainted you, for their lordships information, that I was in pursuit, with the king's fleet under my command, of a numerous fleet of French ships of war.

From that time till the 27th, the winds constantly in the S. W. and N. W. quarters, sometimes blowing strong, and the French fleet always to windward going off, I made use of every method to close in with them that was possible, keeping the king's ships at the same time collected, as much as the nature of a pursuit would admit of, and which became necessary from the cautious manner the French proceeded in, and the disinclination that appeared in them to allow of my bringing the king's ships close up to a regular engagement: this left but little other chance of getting in with them, than by seizing the opportunity that offered, the morning of the 27th, by the wind's admitting of the van of the king's fleet under my command, leading up with, and closing with, their centre and rear.

The French began firing upon the headmost of vice-admiral Sir Robert Harland's division, and the ships with him, as they led up; which cannonade the leading ships, and the vice-admiral soon returned, as did every ship as they could close up: the chace had occasioned their being extended; nevertheless they were all soon in battle.

The fleets, being upon different tacks, passed each other very close; the object of the French seemed to be the disabling of the king's ships in their masts and sails, in which they so far succeeded as to prevent many of the ships of my fleet being able to follow me when I wore to stand after the French fleet; this obliged me to wear again to join those ships, and thereby allowed of the French forming their fleet again, and ranging it in a

line

line to leeward of the king's fleet towards the close of the day; which I did not discourage, but allowed of their doing it without firing upon them, thinking they meant handsomely to try their force with us the next morning; but they had been so beaten in the day, that they took the advantage of the night to go off.

The wind and weather being such that they could reach their own shores before there was any chance of the king's fleet getting up with them, in the state the ships were in, in their masts, yards, and sails, left me no choice of what was proper and advisable to do.

The spirited conduct of vice-admiral Sir Robert Harland, vice-admiral Sir Hugh Palliser, and the captains of the fleet, supported by their officers and men, deserves much commendation.

A list of the killed and wounded is herewith inclosed.

I send captain Faulkener, captain of the Victory, with this account to their lordships, and am, Sir,

Your most obedient,

And very humble servant,

A. KEPPEL.

Philip Stephens, Esq; secretary to the Admiralty.

*List of men killed and wounded, in the action with the French fleet, the 27th of July, 1778.*

<i>Ships names.</i>	<i>Killed.</i>	<i>Wounded.</i>	<i>Ships names.</i>	<i>Killed.</i>	<i>Wounded.</i>
Monarch	2	9	Prince George	5	15
Exeter	4	6	Vengeance	4	18
Queen	1	2	Worcester	3	5
Shrewsbury	3	6	Elizabeth	—	7
Berwick	10	11	Defiance	8	17
Stirling Castle	2	11	Robuste	5	17
Courageux	6	13	Formidable	16	49
Thunderer	2	5	Ocean	2	18
Vigilant	2	3	America	1	17
Sandwich	2	20	Terrible	9	21
Valiant	6	26	Egmont	12	19
Victory	11	24	Ramillies	12	16
Foudroyant	5	18			
			Total	133	373

## No. XXI. (P. 425.)

## LIST of the BRITISH FLEET at sailing.

## LINE OF BATTLE.

Monarch to lead on the starboard tack—Ramillies on the larboard tack.

Rates.	Ships.	Guns.	Men.	Commanders.	Frigates.	Guns.	
3	Monarch	74	600	Capt. Rowley			
	Shrewsbury	74	600	Sir John Lockhart Ross			
	Hector	74	600	Sir John Hamilton			
	Exeter	64	500	Captain Nott			
	Centaur	74	600	Cosby			
2	Duke	90	750	Bretton			
	Queen	90	772	Sir Robert Harland, Bart. Vice-admiral of the Red, Commander in ad post. Capt. Prescott	Fox	28	Hon.—Windfor
3	Cumberland	74	600	Peyton			
	Berwick	74	600	Hon. Keith Stewart			
	Stirling Castle	64	500	Sir Charles Douglas, Bart.			
	Thunderer	74	600	Hon. Boyle Walsingham			
	Courageux	74	600	Right Hon. Lord Mulgrave			
1	Sandwich	90	750	Capt. Edwards			
3	Valiant	74	600	Hon. Levison Gower	Proserpine	28	—Sutton
				Hon. Augustus Keppel, Ad- miral of the Blue, Com- mander in chief.	Andromeda	32	
1	Victory	100	894	Rear admiral Campbell	Pluto	32	a fire-ship
				Capt. Faulkner	Arethusa	32	— Marshal
				Jarvis	Vulcan	32	a fire-ship
3	Foudroyant	80	650	Sir John Lindsay, K. B.	Medea	32	—Montagu
2	Prince George	90	750	Capt. M <sup>r</sup> Bride	Rattle-snake	24	cutter
3	Bienfaitant	64	500	Clements			
	Vengeance	74	600	Kingmill			
	Vigilant	64	500				
	Worcester	64	500	Capt. Robinson			
	Elizabeth	74	600	Hon. F. Maitland			
	Defiance	64	500	Capt. Goodal			
	Robuste	74	600	Hood			
2	Formidable	90	772	Sir Hugh Palliser, Bart. Vice-admiral of the Blue, Commander in 3d post. Capt. Bazely	Milford	32	Sir W. Burnaby
	Ocean	90	750	Laforcey			
3	America	64	500	Right Hon. Lord Longford			
	Exmont	74	600	Capt. Allen			
	Terrible	74	600	Sir Richard Bickerton, Bt.			
	Ramillies	74	600	Hon. Robert Digby			

The Resolution and Defence, of 74 guns each, sailed afterwards, and joined the fleet.  
 34 ships of the line, mounting 2428 guns, and carrying 19788 men,—6 frigates, and  
 2 fire-ships.

A. com-



*A complete List of the French fleet under the command of M. d'Orvilliers, admiral, Comte du Chaffault, vice-admiral, and the Duc de Chartres, rear-admiral.*

<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Men.</i>	<i>Ships.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Men.</i>
La Bretagne,	110	1200	La Dauph. Royale,	74	800
Ville de Paris,	90	950	Reflechi,	64	650
St. Esprit,	80	920	Vengeur,	64	650
Couronne,	80	920	Triton,	64	650
D. de Bourgogne,	80	920	Alexandre,	64	650
Diademe,	74	800	Sphinx,	64	650
Glorieux,	74	800	Solitaire,	64	650
Conquerant,	74	800	St. Michel,	64	650
Zodiac,	74	800	Artisien,	64	650
Intrepide,	74	800	Eveillé,	64	650
Palmier,	74	800	Actionnaire,	64	650
L'Actif,	74	800	Rolande,	64	650
Fendent,	74	800	Indien,	64	650
Orient,	74	800	Amphion,	50	500
Magnifique,	74	800	Fier,	50	500
Robuste,	74	800	13 frigates, and 4 store-		
Bien Aimé,	74	800	ships.		

32 ships of the line mounting 2270 guns, carrying 24,110 men.

*N. B.* The above ships were all in the action of the 27th of July, except the Duc de Bourgogne and the Alexandre, who were separated from the fleet in a gale of wind on the 25th.

## No. XXII. (P. 446.)

*Admiralty-Office, March 24, 1779.**Copy of a letter from the Honourable Rear-admiral Barrington to  
Mr. Stephens.**Prince of Wales, in the Grand Cul de Sac, in the  
Island of St. Lucia, December 22, 1778.*

S I R,

IN my letter of the 24th of last month, from Barbadoes, (No. 21.) I informed you of the Venus's arrival there with an account of commodore Hotham's being on his way to join me: and you will now be pleased to acquaint my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, that the commodore arrived there the 10th instant, with his majesty's ships the Nonfuch, St. Alban's, Preston, Centurion, Isis, and Carcase, and fifty-nine transports, having on board 5000 troops, under the command of major-general Grant.

To save time, and prevent the confusion naturally arising from a change of signals among the transports, I adopted those of the commodore; and, directing him to lead with the landing division, put to sea the 12th in the morning, in order to carry into execution their Lordships secret instructions; and, about three o'clock on the day following, anchored here with the whole Squadron, except the Ariadne, Ceres, Snake, Barbadoes, and Pelican, which I had stationed along the coast, to intercept any vessels attempting to escape.

More than half the troops were landed the same evening, under the direction of the commodore, assisted by the captains Griffith, Braithwaite, and Onslow, and the remainder the next morning, (the 14th), when they immediately got possession of the Carenage; and it was my intention to have removed the transports thither as soon as possible. had not that measure been prevented by the appearance of the French fleet under the command

mand of Count d'Estaing, of which I received notice in the evening by signal from the *Ariadne*.

It therefore became necessary to secure the transports as well as we could in the bay; and the whole night was accordingly employed in warping them within the ships of war, and disposing of the latter in a line across the entrance, in the order they stand in the margin \*; the *Isis* to windward, rather inclining into the bay, and the *Prince of Wales*, being the most powerful ship, the outermost, and to leeward, and the *Venus*, *Aurora*, and *Ariadne*, flanking the space between the *Isis* and the shore, to prevent the enemy forcing a passage that way.

Almost all the transports had fortunately got within the line before half past eleven in the morning of the 15th, when the Count thought proper to bear down and attack us with ten sail of the line, happily without doing us any material injury; and at four in the afternoon he made a second attack upon us with twelve sail of the line, with no other success, however, than killing two men, and wounding seven, on board the *Prince of Wales*, and wounding one also on board the *Ariadne*, who is since dead. But I have reason to believe the enemy received considerable damage, as their manœuvres betrayed great confusion; and one of their ships in particular, which fell to leeward, seemed disabled from carrying the necessary sail to get to windward again.

The next day (the 16th) the Count shewed a disposition to attack us a third time; but on the appearance of a frigate standing for his fleet, with several signals flying, he plied to windward, and in the evening anchored off Gros-Îlet, about two leagues from us, where he still continues with ten frigates, besides his twelve sail of the line; and, notwithstanding this superiority of force, he has been accompanied from his first appearance by several American privateers, one of them commanded by the outlaw Cunningham, who last winter infested the coast of Portugal.

* <i>Isis</i> ,	50	<i>Centurion</i> ,	50
<i>St. Alban's</i> ,	64	<i>Preston</i> ,	50
<i>Boyne</i> ,	68	<i>Prince of Wales</i> ,	74
<i>Nonfach</i> ,	64		

That

That night and the next day the enemy landed a large body of troops from a number of sloops and schooners which had anchored in Du Choc bay, and the 18th made a spirited attack, both by land and sea, on our post at the Carenage, but met with a very severe check, having been repulsed, with great carnage, by a small detachment of our troops under brigadier-general Meadows.

They have attempted nothing of consequence since, and what may be their future plan of operations I cannot conjecture: but their continuance at anchor has afforded us an opportunity not only of getting in all the cruizers except the *Ceres*, and all the transports except one (with only the baggage of the officers of three companies on board), which has fallen into the enemy's hands, but also of strengthening ourselves by warping the ships of war farther into the bay, and making the line more compact, removing the *Venus* a-stern of the *Prince of Wales* to flank that passage, and erecting batteries at each point of the bay; that to the northward under the direction of the captains Cumming and Robertson, and that to the southward under captain Ferguson.

This being the situation of the squadron, and the army being in possession of all the strong holds in the neighbourhood of the bay, such a spirit of cheerfulness, unanimity, and resolution, actuates the whole of our little force both by land and sea, (notwithstanding the amazing fatigue they have undergone), that we are under no apprehensions for any attempts the enemy may meditate: and from the accounts which have been transmitted to me from captain Linzee of the *Pearl*, who arrived at Barbadoes the 13th instant, that vice-admiral Byron was to sail from Rhode Island for Barbadoes the 19th of last month, with sixteen sail of the line, and several frigates, there is every reason to hope he will soon be here; in which case affairs in this country must take a very decisive turn in favour of his majesty's arms.

Should any unforeseen accident, however, prevent the vice-admiral's arrival, their lordships will nevertheless be pleased to assure his majesty, that every thing which can possibly be done

done by so small a body of troops, and so few ships, against a force so very superior, will be effected.

I cannot conclude my letter without acquainting you, that, in all probability, our operations here have hitherto saved the islands of St. Vincent and Grenada, which, we understand from some officers who are prisoners, were the object of Count D'Estaing's expedition, when a sloop that had escaped from this island falling in with him, and giving him notice of our being here, directed his attention towards us. I am, &c.

SAM. BARRINGTON.

P. S. I have the satisfaction to add, that this morning the Squadron got possession of an American privateer of eighteen guns, called the Bunker-Hill, which at day-break was discovered within reach of our guns; and having struck, upon finding she could not escape, the boats towed her within the line before any of the French fleet could get to her assistance. She sailed from Salem the 2d instant, and was intended to cruize fifteen leagues to windward of Barbadoes, but had missed that island and fallen to leeward.

24th Dec. 1778.

SAM. BARRINGTON.

*Extract of a letter from the Honourable Rear-admiral Barrington to Mr. Stephens.*

*Prince of Wales, in the Grand Cul de Sac, in the Island of St. Lucia, Jan. 6, 1779.*

S I R,

You will herewith receive the duplicate of a letter I wrote to you the 23d and 24th of last month (No. 23.), and dispatched to Governor Hay of Barbadoes, to be forwarded from thence to England by some fast-sailing vessel, that my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty might have it in their power to refute any misrepresentation, which Count D'Estaing may have transmitted to his court, of the situation of his majesty's forces in those seas.

From the state of inactivity in which the Count continued for several days after, I began to conceive it was his intention to form a blockade with a view of starving us into a surrender ;  
but,

but, to my utter astonishment, on the morning of the 10th (having re-embarked his troops during the preceding night) retired with his whole force towards Martinique, and left us in quiet possession of the island, which capitulated, whilst his fleet was still in sight, upon the terms I have the honour to inclose \*.

I should be very much wanting, were I on the present occasion to omit acknowledging the assistance I received from major-general Grant and the forces under his command, as well as expressing my intire satisfaction with the conduct, not only of commodore Hotham, the several commanders, and the rest of the officers of the squadron, but also of the people in general, who never in the least repined at their precarious situation and the difficulties they hourly encountered, but still performed their duty with alacrity and spirit, and, sensible of the additional fatigue the troops underwent in occupying more extensive posts for the security of the squadron, than there would otherwise have been occasion for, laboured with the utmost chearfulness in conveying provisions, &c. for them, through roads that were almost impassable, and most of them without shoes to their feet.

I likewise beg leave to mention to their lordships the very great assistance I received from captain Barker, the agent of transports, and the services of lieutenant-governor Stuart, of the island of Dominica, who has done me the favour of officiating as an honorary aid-de-camp between the general and myself, having accompanied me upon this expedition, in hopes that his majesty's arms might afterwards be employed in recovering that island; where, from his perfect knowledge of it, he must be particularly useful, and therefore offered himself as a volunteer.

What has become of the enemy's fleet since its departure from hence I have not had it in my power to learn; but I hope vice-admiral Byron, who, I have the pleasure to acquaint you,

\* The articles of capitulation for St Lucia were merely an exchange of sovereigns. The peaceable inhabitants were secured in all their possessions, and nothing was made capture of but forts, magazines, and military stores.

arrived here this morning, with nine sail of the line, will very soon be able to give their lordships that information; and, that rear-admiral Sir Peter Parker and the governor of Jamaica may be upon their guard, in case of its appearance in those seas, I have sent the *Ariadne* to Antigua, with letters to be forwarded to them from thence by some fast-sailing vessel, which I have requested governor Burt to dispatch for that purpose.

I have great satisfaction in hearing, since the capitulation, that, when Count D'Estaing was directed hither by the sloop I mentioned in my letter (No. 23.), he was bound first of all to Barbadoes, in expectation of finding there only the *Prince of Wales*, the *Boyne*, and some frigates; of which he had received intelligence from a French flag of truce I had ordered away immediately on the arrival of the *Venus*.

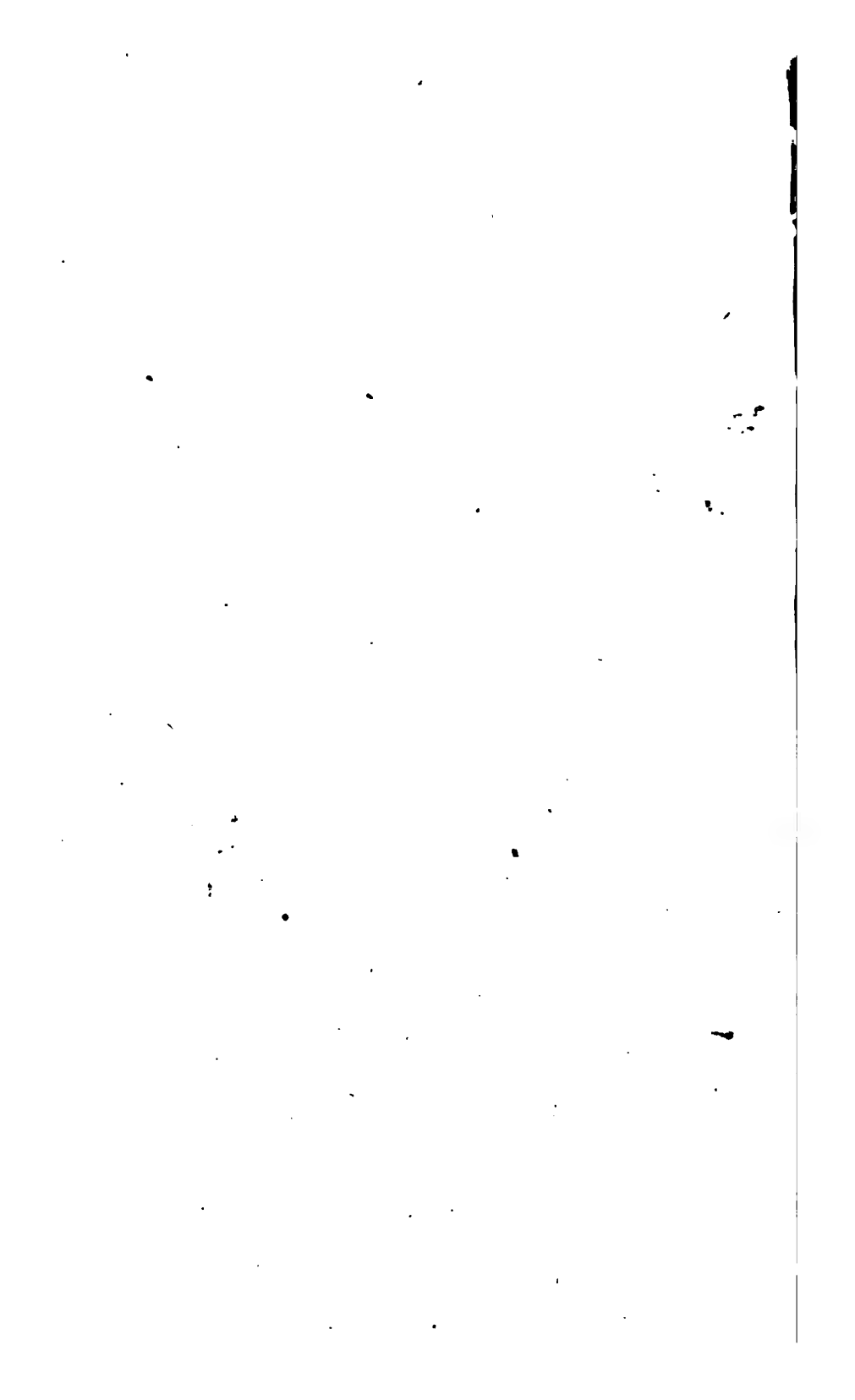
I am sorry to add, that the *Ceres*, which was missing when I sent away that letter, appears, by the *Martinique Gazette*, to have been taken, after a chase of forty-eight hours, by the *Iphigenie*, a French frigate of 36 guns; but I have no account of it from captain Dacres, or any of her officers.

I cannot help regretting the loss of this sloop, not only as she sailed remarkably well, but as captain Dacres is an officer of infinite merit. I have, however, in order to replace the *Ceres*, as the *Bunker-Hill* privateer has the reputation of being a very fast sailer, (which her log-book confirms), commissioned her as a sloop in his majesty's service, by the name of the *Surprize*, (being expressive of the manner in which she came into our possession), and appointed lieutenant James Brine, first lieutenant of the *Prince of Wales*, to be master and commander of her, with a complement of one hundred and twenty-five men. She mounts 18 carriage and 8 swivel guns.

For further particulars, I beg leave to refer their lordships to captain Robertson of the *Weazle*, who will have the honour of delivering these dispatches, and whose conduct as an officer merits their lordships protection, and every favour they can possibly shew him. I am, &c.

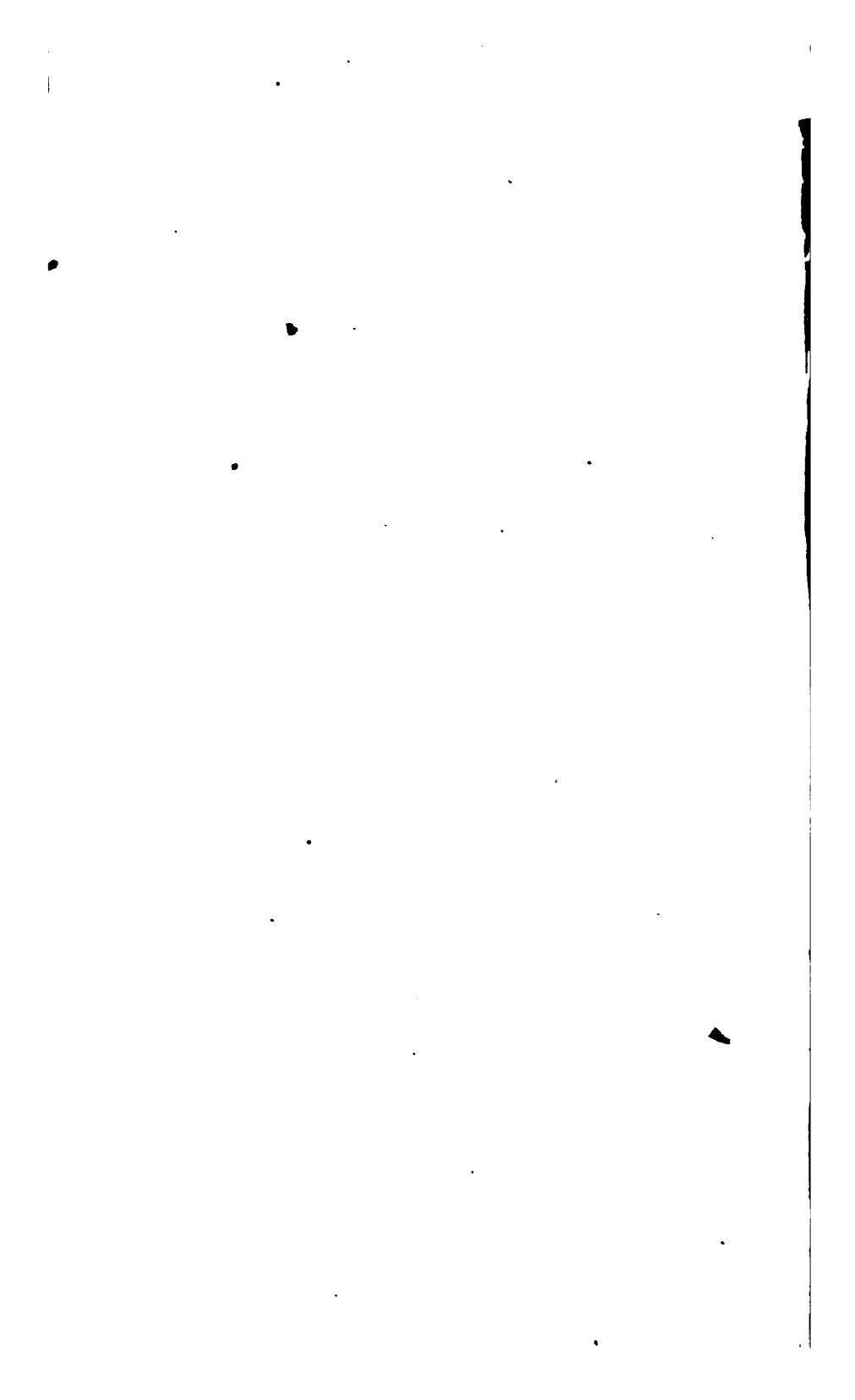
SAM. BARRINGTON.

F I N I S.















1871



HW 343W 8

